



Presented by Dr. Alexander
Ninian Bruce (1882-1968)
via Mrs. Dryerre.



ACCESSION NUMBER

323187

PRESS MARK

Spec. Coll.
Strong Room.



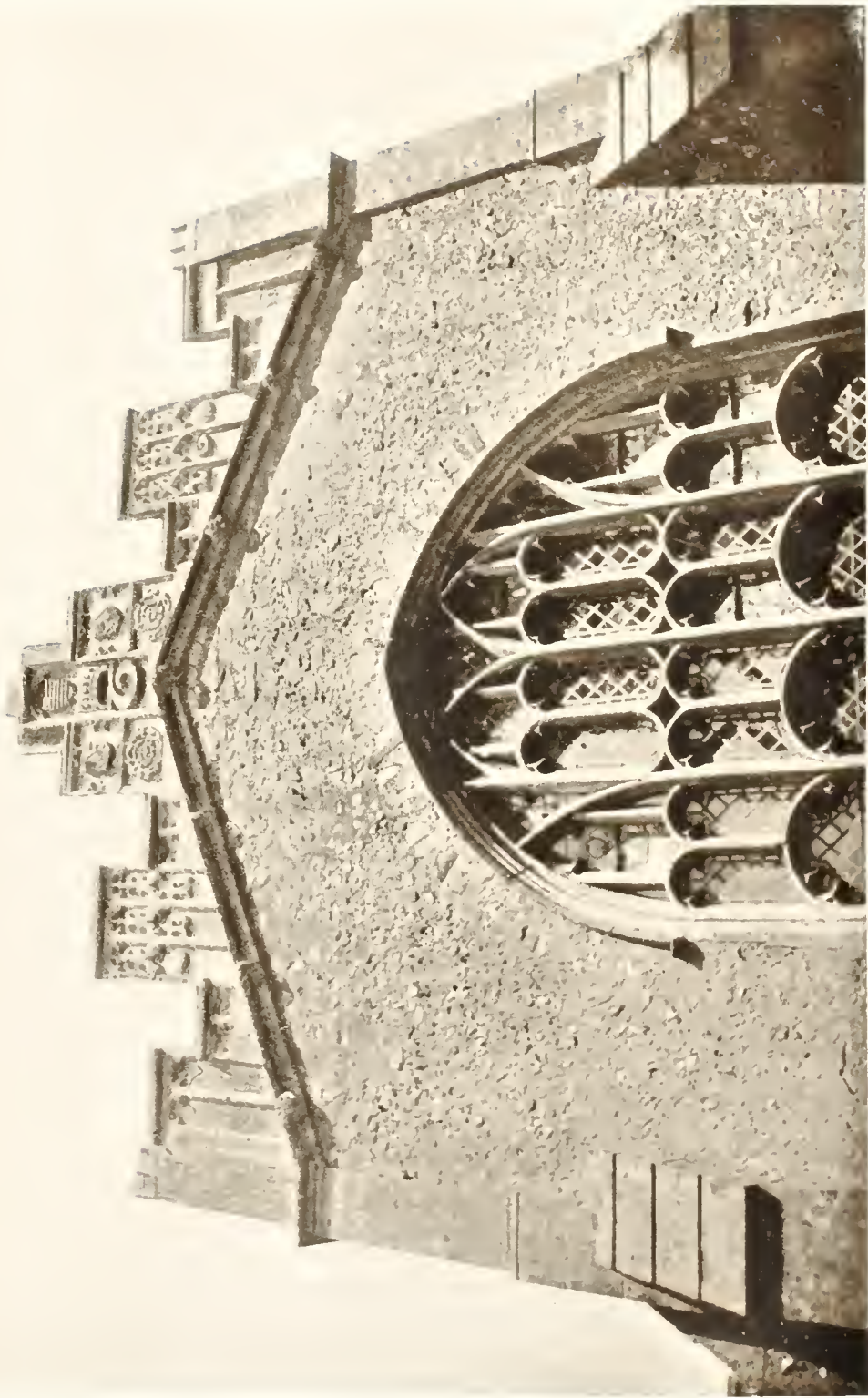
22501270530



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Wellcome Library

https://archive.org/details/b29825362_0001

HISTORY AND GENEALOGY
OF THE
BRIGGS FAMILY
VOLUME I



SOUTH TRANSEPT OF THE NORFOLK PARISH CHURCH AT SALLE, BUILT BY THOMAS BRIGGS, WHO DIED IN 1444

From photograph by L. Vernon Briggs

HISTORY AND GENEALOGY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY 1254-1937

IN THREE VOLUMES
VOLUME I

By
L. VERNON BRIGGS

Honorary Member of the Kansas State Historical Society, Macon Public Library and Historical Society (Georgia), New London County Historical Society (Connecticut), Wyoming Historical and Genealogical Survey, Washington State Historical Society (Tacoma), Theatre of Arts and Letters, and Société Académique d'Histoire Internationale (Paris); Trustee of the Pilgrim Society (Plymouth, Mass.); Mate and Director of the Nautical Historical Society (Scituate, Mass.); Life Member of the Bostonian Society, New England Historic-Genealogical Society and Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities; Member of the Old Colony Historical Society (Taunton, Mass.), Essex Institute (Salem, Mass.), Beverly Historical Society (Massachusetts), Arizona Pioneer Historical Society, Sons of the American Revolution, Scituate Historical Society (Massachusetts), American Folk Lore Society, New Haven Colony Historical Society (Connecticut), New Hampshire Historical Society, Hancock, N. H., Historical Society (Charter Member and President), Missouri Historical Society, Marine Museum of Boston, Military Historical Society of Massachusetts, Maine Historical Society, Stetson Kindred of America, National Geographic Society, Braintree Historical Society (Massachusetts), Norwell Historical Society (Massachusetts), Minnesota Historical Society (St. Paul), American Association for the Advancement of Science, Academy of Political Science (Columbia University), American Academy of Political and Social Science (Philadelphia, Pa.); Chairman of the Committee for the Preservation of the Park Street Church (Boston); Affiliated Member of the Business Historical Society of Harvard University; and Fellow of the Society of Genealogists of Great Britain, the Royal Geographic Society (London), and the Hakluyt Society (British Museum, London). Author of "History of Shipbuilding on the North River, Plymouth County, Mass., with Genealogies of the Shipbuilders," "History and Records of the First Congregational Church of Hanover, Mass.," "History of St. Andrew's Church, Hanover, Mass.," "Kent Genealogies, 1293-1898," "History and Genealogy of the Cabot Family in America, 1474-1927," etc.

PRIVATELY PRINTED

BOSTON
CHARLES E. GOODSPEED & CO.
1938



(2) BZP (Briggs)

TO MY SON
LLOYD CABOT BRIGGS

BRIGGS COAT OF ARMS

The arms which appear on the cover of the book, and on the church of Salle, are the arms belonging to this family.

The Briggs coat of arms, as issued and recorded at the College of Arms, London, to Lloyd Cabot Briggs, are as follows: "Gules, three Bars gemels Or, on a quarter Argent as many Chabots hauriant of the field. And for the Crest, on a Wreath of the Colours, Issuant from a chaplet of Olive a demi Lion proper gorged with a Collar flory counter-flory and holding between the paws an Escallop Or."

The motto, as blazoned below the arms, is:

Virtus est Dei.



COAT OF ARMS OF LLOYD CABOT BRIGGS
(See opposite page)

PREFACE

IN my search for the origin of my emigrant ancestor in England, I had the advantage of his having had an unusual Christian name, for Walter was rather an unusual name in England in the early sixteen hundreds. Before going to England in search of Walter Briggs, I learned all I could about him and his life in America, — his age, occupation, social and financial position, his interests and religion. Once in England I found much valuable matter open to the research student. I began my search in 1890. This led me to the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. In 1932 I investigated practically all the avenues which might lead to my ancestor in England.

The wills were filed in Somerset House, a dingy, historic mansion, built around a great square courtyard to the south of the Strand, and now partly given over to the Prerogative Court. I descended to an underground chamber, and, having presented the usual credentials, I was given a reader's card. The old wills, written on yellowed parchment and bound in ponderous volumes, were brought by an attendant. Those which interested me most were of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. The clerks who inscribed them were of the clergy, and before the Reformation these priests seem to have been educated men, for the records are beautifully written and some of them ornamented with flourishes and patterns. The early ones are in Latin, but after 1553 most of them were written in English, quaintly expressed. After the Reformation some of the scribes were less cultured, and many of the documents are difficult to decipher. They are written in the old English script, which is not unlike the German script, with long s's, the r's upside down, and nearly all of the capitals different from our own; but one soon becomes familiar with it.

Next in importance to the wills are the various legal and other records preserved at the Public Record Office. Of these the Chancery Proceedings, which date from the time of Richard II and occur in an unbroken series from the beginning of the reign of Henry VIII, yielded information as to lineage, for they dealt for the most part with the devolution of estates and the rights of inheritance, preserved in manuscript form by the vicars of the parish churches in the cities, towns and villages.

My search took me to picturesque spots little known to travelers, and brought me in touch with pleasant acquaintances among the clergy who are invariably interested in the history and genealogy of their localities and in preserving the old records and the memorial brasses and family monuments in the churches. All the wills and records are not in London. I found many of them filed in local or ecclesiastical courts, and a good index in the library of the Society of Genealogists.

Other sources of information which I found very helpful, where they could be had, were the old Manor Rolls. These are particularly valuable in tracing ancestors who were "copyholders" or tenants of the Lord of the Manor, and who were called before the Manor Court at certain times to swear fealty to the lord. Transfers of copyhold lands were made before this court and recorded in the Rolls.

The passenger lists of the ships which carried the early settlers to America are often very helpful, but some of the passengers sailed under assumed names, in fear of religious persecution, and not all the passenger lists have been preserved. The passenger lists bore the names only of those who left the shores of England legally, and some of these were omitted, or the lists bearing their names have been lost. Generally the passengers were obliged to be examined by the clergyman of the Church of England, touching their conformity to the discipline of the Church, and to ascertain that they had taken the oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy before joining the ranks of the colonists in New England. No "subsidy men" — that is, men liable to pay a subsidy to the Crown — were taken. Still, among

the thousands who emigrated a large number evidently left England to avoid payment of the hateful subsidy, and there were others whose consciences would not permit them to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. These left secretly, and of them no record exists. The masters of many of the ships were careless, and some left no record of their passengers' names. For instance, "The *Four Sisters* sailed from Gravesend April 5, 1629, with passengers" — no names or numbers stated; in 1622 "Arrived at Damariscove (Maine) the *Sparrow*, Rogers master, 100 tons, with 60 lusty men." In 1640 the *Neptune* of Bristol was licensed to carry 125 passengers to New England, — no names given, — and the same year the *Fellowship* was licensed to carry 250 passengers to New England, but no names given. To be "transported" did not really mean anything but to be conveyed, but those who were convicted for upholding the cause of the Duke of Monmouth were really transported. Hundreds of convicted rebels were sent to the American plantations and sold for servants or slaves, and many more were sent to the Barbados, or the "Sumer Islands" (Bermuda).

Hundreds were driven to America by the imposition of "Ship Money," and others by a forced loan act of King Charles I (without the grant of Parliament). Lord Saye and Seale, who during the Civil War, some years later, commanded the Parliamentary regiment, openly asserted that he would rather lose half of his estate than risk impoverishment of his posterity by the establishment of so dangerous a precedent as a loan without the sanction of Parliament.

The London prisons were filled with objectors. The proceedings which were taken against the nonconformists caused many English families to leave their homes and go to America; among others the Rev. John Cotton, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington left their country after having been fined for nonconformity. A good many of the Puritans emigrated first to Holland, some sailing directly from there to America, and others returning to England to join friends embarking from an English port.

These are more difficult to trace, but there is an historical society in Leyden which has published much valuable matter, and furnished me with information as to methods of research there.

The Chancery Proceedings in England give information relating to nearly every family holding landed property from the year 1558. Next in value to these, at the Public Record Office, are Records of Inquisitions held by the Escheator on the death of the person holding lands from the Crown by feudal tenure, giving details of the tenant's lands and frequently of wills and indentures relating to the same, and stating the name and age of the tenant's heir.

Besides these there are also at the Record Office: (1) the Close Rolls — "Indentures of a private nature relating to the conveyance of property, etc." — containing many wills and other deeds of great value to genealogists and beginning in 1204; (2) the Subsidy Rolls, lists of the inhabitants of every parish, arranged under its "Hundred" and "County," who were assessed in respect of goods or lands for the payment of subsidies granted to the Crown, dating from the time of Edward I; (3) the Feet of Fines (*Pedes Finium*), records of certain legal conveyances of landed property dating from the time of Richard I; (4) Recusant Rolls, relating to Roman Catholics and dating from the time of Elizabeth; (5) Royalist Composition Papers, recording the names of Royalists who took part in the Civil Wars; and (6) Patent Rolls and Signet Bills, recording grants from the Crown of lands, pardons, offices, etc.

The largest depository of wills in England is the Registry of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury. This Court has jurisdiction over all of Wales and all of England except York in the north. The catalogues may be found in the British Museum and various other libraries where it is often convenient to consult them. My immigrant ancestor was named Walter Briggs. Walter was rather an unusual name in England in the early sixteen hundreds, and an exhaustive search of all the records to which we could obtain access revealed but one Walter Briggs of suitable age and circumstances, and he proved to be my ancestor.

Not all of the clerks were sure of the spelling of the testators' names, even where the local dialect had not disguised or transformed the pronunciation. I have known my own ancestor's name to be spelled in three different ways in a single document, and my secretary found fourteen different spellings of the name Briggs or its forerunners in the data which she searched.

The early settlers of Scituate are often referred to as the "Men of Kent," but just how many of them came from County Kent has not been definitely ascertained. Mrs. Power writes, "It is safe to suppose that Nathaniel Tilden, William Hatch, William Gilson, Anthony Annable, Thomas Bird, Edward Foster and Henry Rowley were from County Kent, and I believe a few others. Hatherly came from Devonshire, and John Barker is many times spoken of as a particular friend of Hatherly. We know that Thomas Hyland came from Tenterden, County Kent."

If our ancestors had come to New England twenty years earlier they would doubtless have met with much greater resistance from the Indians. Historians tell us that only a few years before the coming of the *Mayflower* there had been a plague of smallpox among the Indians which carried off great numbers of them and forced them to desert some of their original strongholds. The settlers found "clearings and even meadows ready to their hand in some instances." Bradford tells us that Plymouth itself had evidently been a flourishing community, but was entirely deserted by the terrified natives after the fearful scourge. Gosnold, who was at Cape Cod in 1602, in speaking of the Indians, says, "This coast is very full of people." And Capt. John Smith, who was at Cape Cod in 1614, says, "It is well inhabited with many people," and speaking of the country in general, that is, Massachusetts, says, "For their trade and merchandise, to each of their principal families or habitations, they have divers towns and people belonging. It is a Paradise of all those parts, for here are many isles planted with corn, groves, mulberries, savage gardens and good harbours. The seacoast, as you pass, shows you all along large corn fields." It is estimated that on arrival of the

English there were about 20,000 Indians within fifty miles of Plymouth.

Humphrey Turner came to Plymouth in 1623 in ship *Ann*, and in 1626 built a log cabin on the cellar dug at that time, now under the house where Squire Sam Turner lived in 1885.

James Briggs, a comb maker, in his old age was a middling-sized man but very stout and courageous. In those times, 1802, bass and salmon fishing were done through holes in the ice. One day he was going to fish with his bass nets and fell into a hole, but shaped his course and came up in the next hole several rods beyond. He was noted as a remarkable swimmer. In the Revolution he was reported to be very brave. He had no gun and set off with a stick over his shoulder. When asked what he was going to do with the stick, he said he was going to take the gun of the first Britisher who fell, and he did so. After his service he returned with the gun he had captured which is now owned by L. Cabot Briggs, as well as other of his Revolutionary accoutrements.

There were many calls "to march" on different "Alarms" from Scituate, Duxbury, Plymouth County and from southeastern Massachusetts for seacoast defence, to Marshfield, to the Gurnet (where a regiment was always stationed for the defence of Plymouth Harbor), and to the North River. The following items have been omitted from the body of this book:

Joshua Briggs and others, of Wareham, marched from Wareham to Marshfield on the alarm of April 19, 1775.

Nathaniel Briggs marched as a private with Capt. Daniel Drake's Company in a Bristol County regiment, to North River from Taunton, "by Resolve of 30 June 1781, reported arrived in Camp 1 Sept; arrived home 10 Dec."

Nathaniel Briggs of Pembroke enlisted 1 Jan. 1777 in Capt. Thomas Turner's Company, Col. Bradford's Regiment, for 3 years. Reported d. 7 Sept. 1777, aged 49 yrs.

King Philip's War was probably the most ruthless conflict with the Indians in colonial American history. The

events which immediately gave rise to it are briefly as follows: Massasoit, chief sachem of the Wampanoags and steadfast ally of the Plymouth Colony, died in 1660, leaving two sons, Wamsutta and Metacom, who were nicknamed by the English Alexander and Philip. Alexander (Wamsutta) succeeded his father as chieftain, and shortly afterwards, while at Plymouth, died of a "violent fever." Philip (Metacom) soon stepped into his brother's place, firmly convinced that Alexander had been poisoned, and plotted revenge. The war associated with Philip's name was the outcome.

The name of *William Turner*, given on the memorial shaft in the First Parish Cemetery, Norwell (see page 312), as a son of Humphrey¹ and Lydia (Gamer) Turner, has caused some confusion in compiling this history, as well as in other genealogists. This William was not Capt. William¹ Turner, who died at Deerfield in 1676. Captain William¹ came from Dartmouth, England, about 1642. His grandson, Thomas³ (Thomas², Capt. William¹), came to Scituate from Hingham, and is recorded on Scituate records as *Thomas Turner, Sr.*, being the elder of two Thomas Turners. Thomas³ Turner, Esq. (Thomas², Humphrey¹), was a contemporary of this Thomas³, Sr.

The conveyances on page 711 and the will of Thomas³ Turner are there misplaced. These refer to the Humphrey Turner line (found under *Barnabus Barker*), and a duplicate of the will of Thomas³ Turner, Esq., is to be found, rightly placed, on pages 324, 325 and 326.

Most of my authorities are referred to in the text and a long list of others is appended. I have taken the liberty of extracting verbatim from a number of these, and if I have not always given them due credit I wish here to express my obligation. My thanks are also due to those friends who have helped me search the records and select and arrange these data. First of all, my thanks are due to my dear sister, Velma Briggs, who died just after I had finished this work and was about to place it in the hands of the printers. She has always been my most devoted helper in all my writings. No one could have done for me what she has done. In

preparation for the present work she spent months at Plymouth searching, discovering and copying much material never before unearthed or published. She also spent a long time in Essex County, especially at Salem, looking up records of the Hemenway and Cabot families for my "Cabot History and Genealogy," as well as for these volumes. My genealogical work ends with these volumes, for I feel I could not continue without her help. The work I accomplished in England would not have been possible but for the help I received from Bower-Marsh, the great authority in Great Britain on genealogical research, who I am sorry to relate died before the genealogy was finished. Helen B. Hopkins worked for months at the British Museum, Somerset House, and other places in England where records might be found, and assisted me in assembling my material. I am indebted to Mary L. F. Power for her most valuable assistance in working up many branches of the family and for correcting much that had been written before on the genealogy of these families, also for indexing these volumes. I wish to thank Rev. W. H. L. Parsons, Vicar of Salle, for his help in connecting the Briggs of Salle, Norfolk County, England, with my ancestors in Suffolk. He has just published a very interesting history of the Manor families of that part of Norfolk. Miss Julia Marett of St. Aubins, Jersey, assisted my son in his search for valuable papers of the Cabot family in the Island of Jersey, and she proved to be of great help, for she could easily decipher the writing of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries in old French or in Latin. To my wife I owe a very great deal — for all that is best in this book, for her patience, good judgment and literary taste in reading and correcting my manuscript, and for many excellent suggestions as to its arrangement. To the many authors and publishers of other Histories and Genealogies, who have lent me illustrations to embellish these pages, my thanks are also due.

For those of my readers who do not understand the double dating used in many of the accounts of our earlier ancestors, I quote the following from Prof. Arthur E. Kennelly's book "Vestiges of Premetric Weights and Measures:"

The Julian Calendar, established by Julius Caesar for the Roman Empire in B.C. 45, assigned just $365\frac{1}{2}$ days, or 365 days and 6 hours, to the tropical or seasonal year (the interval between successive vernal equinoxes). Astronomers have shown, however, since Caesar's time, that the tropical year is actually about 11 minutes shorter than the Julian year; *i.e.*, 365 days 5 hours 48 minutes 48 seconds. An error of 11 minutes per annum steadily accumulating would amount to 6 months of error in about 24,000 years, so that after such an interval of time, midsummer's longest day would come in December, and midwinter's shortest day in June, by the uncorrected Julian Calendar. The error in the seasons amounted to about 3 days in 400 years. With one leap year in every four, the Julian Calendar was steadily falling behind the sun as the centuries passed by. The Italian astronomers pointed out to Pope Gregory XIII, in the year 1582, — and the place is still shown in Rome where the demonstration is said to have been made, — that the vernal equinox, instead of falling on the accredited date of March 21 for equal times of day and night, actually occurred 10 days earlier according to the Julian Calendar in force, or on March 11. In order to have rectified the calendar for the vernal equinox, they should have jumped from the evening of March 10 to the next morning of the 21st, thereby cutting out 10 days.

Pope Gregory ordained that the calendar should be rectified with the seasonal year by jumping from the night of the 4th of October to the morning of the 15th of October, 1582, thus skipping the 10 days from the 5th to the 14th, inclusive. Moreover, in order to prevent a recurrence of the same kind of error in the future, there were to be 3 fewer leap years inserted every 400 years. Thus the Gregorian Calendar was introduced into Europe. It was called the "new style" calendar. Most of the European countries made corresponding 10-day jumps in their calendars shortly after Italy led the way; but Great Britain and her colonies (including America), together with Russia, Greece and Turkey, clung to the Julian Calendar, or "old style." Letters and communications began to carry double dates to suit the old and the new style of the correspondents in different lands. Finally Great Britain enacted a calendar reform in 1751, to be brought into effect the following year, 170 years later than Central and Western Europe. The reform was twofold. In the first place, the correction to the seasonal year and Gregorian Calendar, then amounting to 11 days, was to be made by jumping from September 2 to September 14, 1752; and in the second place the legal

beginning of the year, hitherto reckoned as March 25 was to be changed to January 1, so that what would have been March 20, 1752, by the old style should become March 31, 1753, by the new. The American colonies carried out this reform coincidentally with England. History records, however, that there were sundry riots in England at the time of the change, the mobs shouting, "Give us back our 11 days!"

In dealing with chronological events that occurred in Great Britain or North America between 1582 and 1752, it is common to rectify the number of a date falling between January 1 and March 24 so as to conform with the present calendar, but usage is not always the same as regards the month and day. In some cases the Julian reckoning is preserved up to 1752. In other cases the Gregorian correction is projected back to 1582, so as to avoid the carrying of the double date — old and new style. In a certain sense, therefore, there are two dates applicable to events in Great Britain and America between 1582 and 1752, — the Julian date accepted at that period, and the Gregorian date, projected back for convenience of international reckoning. For example, Washington's Birthday, celebrated annually on February 22, in America, is stated to be a Gregorian date, whereas Washington was born during the Julian Calendar period (February 11), 1732. The first instance of Scituate records of double dating was the birth of Joseph Chittenden, March 8, 1656/7.

In compiling the items of my military appointments, my appointment by the President as *Colonel, Auxilliary, United States Army*, 20 Oct. 1922, has been omitted. Also omitted was my election in 1920 as a member of New York Psychiatric Post No. 756, American Legion, and of the American Officers of the Great War, and the fact that in 1930 I was given the title of "Companion-at-Large" of the Reserve Officers' Association, of which I was already a member. My membership in the following non-military organizations has also been omitted: 1896, the Number Thirty-five Club, an organization of the officers of the Maverick National Bank of Boston; 1899, the Massachusetts Audubon Society (Associate Member); 1904, New England Sportsmen's Association (Associate); 1919, Aerial League of America; 1922, Society for the Study of Inebriety (Great Britain); 1923, one of the Abstractors and

Book Reviewers of the Boston Medical and Surgical Journal; 1924, Publicity Committee of Occupational Hand Crafts, Inc.; 1925, Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks; 1934, made a Fellow of American Medical Association of which I had been a member since 1902; 1937, certified by the American Board of Psychiatry and Neurology. On 20 Oct. 1937 I received from the President of the United States an appointment as Colonel in the Army of the United States, and my commission states that I may be ordered on active duty at any time.

It should have been stated among my wife's activities that she was appointed a member of the Advisory Council on Indian Affairs in 1923 by the Secretary of the Interior, Washington, D. C.

A very interesting character whom I introduced at some length in my "History and Genealogy of the Cabot Family" was the Chinese merchant Houqua. Since that book was printed I have gleaned more Houqua material, for the most part from the special Chinese library at the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., where there is much about Mouqua as well as Houqua, both Hong merchants, and I cannot refrain from including it here, as this Chinese friend and associate of the Perkinses and the Cabots bore an important part of my son's family history. His portrait, wise, gracious but inscrutable, painted by Chinnery, hangs in our Beacon Street dining room, and is reproduced in this book.

Mr. Samuel Shaw, the first United States Consul in China, writing prior to 1844, describes the first successful effort to carry on a trade with China. The Ship, *The Empress of China*, 360 tons, sailed on 26 Feb. 1784 and arrived in China 23 August, sailing again for home 31 December and carrying on trade with the Hong merchants.

Among these merchants it has been the custom to consider two of them as the *Senior Hong merchants*, and the authorities of Canton and the merchants themselves made great efforts to put the whole responsibility of the trade on these seniors; but this was successfully resisted by the foreign community, although the government continued to

their last days to consider the senior Hong merchants, Houqua and Mouqua, the medium of all official communications between itself and foreigners. In this connection it may not be out of place here to say a few words of Houqua, late senior Hong merchant.

This remarkable man died of general debility, the effect of unparalleled exactions and too long-continued mental efforts under the oppressive government of Canton. His mind remained firm to the moment of his decease. He retired from the Company Hong by paying largely for the privilege of being quiet in his old age — but for only two years, in 1831 and 1832. He was compelled to resume the duties of the Hong merchant, and until his death was called upon on every public occasion. He had a most comprehensive mind, and united the qualities of an enterprising merchant and a sagacious politician. He was always a warm friend to the Americans, and through them was supposed to have carried on a considerable trade, on his own account, both with Europe and the United States. . . .

L. VERNON BRIGGS.

64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON, MASS.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Publications of the Harleian Society: The Visitations of Norfolk, 1563, 1569 and 1613, edited by Walter Rye, London, 1891; also Visitations of London, Yorkshire, Hertfordshire, Shropshire, etc.
 History of the County of Norfolk. Francis Blomfield.
 History of Norfolk (England). Walter Rye, London, 1885.
 Norfolk Families. Walter Rye.
 Manorial Court Rolls of Kirkhall Manor in the Parish of Salle (MSS.).
 Salle, Its Church, Manors and People. Rev. W. L. E. Parsons.
 Parish Registers of Salle (England).
 Suffolk Records and Manuscripts. Coppinger.
 Archives of Suffolk (England).
 Subsidy Rolls of Bucklesham (Suffolk, England).
 Parish Registers of Bucklesham and Kirton (Suffolk, England).
 Parish Registers of Burgh (Ipswich Library).
 Court Rolls of the Manor of Walton-cum-Trimley (MSS.) (Suffolk, England).
 Subsidy Rolls, Exchequer, Colneis Hundred.
 Leyden Documents. In the British Museum.
 Feet of Fines, Reigns of James I and Charles I (1603-1642).
 Calendar of Wills of the Archdeaconry of Suffolk.
 Court Book of Hingham Rectory Manor.
 A certificate of All the Able Men of Suffolk Townes from Sixteene Yeres to Threescore Yeres of Age, 1639 (England).
 Marriage Licenses, Vicar General, 1669-1679.
 Marriage Licenses of the Archdeaconry of Suffolk, Ipswich Probate Court, 1613-1674.

Also many parish records and marriage licenses in London, Norwich, Suffolk and other English towns and counties; court rolls, patent rolls, wills, Chancery proceedings, etc., to be found in the British Museum, the library of the London Society of Genealogists, Somerset House and the British Record Office in London; as well as local records and wills in the Probate Offices at Ipswich, Norwich and in Kent and Devonshire Counties and other various parts of England; and records and manuscripts in the Island of Jersey, etc.

- Original Lists of Persons of Quality, etc. John Camden Hotten, London, Chatto & Windus, 1874.
 The Winship Fleet of 1630. Charles Edward Banks, Riverside Press, 1930.
 Americans of Royal Descent. Charles H. Browning, 1905.
 Handbooks of American Genealogy.

Munsell's Genealogical Index.

Pioneers of Massachusetts. C. H. Pope, Boston, 1900.

The New England Company, Letters from Eliot and Others. Privately printed from the Originals in the Possession of the New England Company, by Spottiswoode & Co., London, 1896.

Planters of the Commonwealth. Charles Edward Banks, Boston, Riverside Press, 1930.

American Ancestry. T. P. Hughes, Albany, 1887-99.

Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica. J. J. Howard, London, 1868 and 1870.

History of Scotland, 1436 to 1655. Robert Lindsay of Pitisottie, Bassett & Co., Edinburgh, 1728.

Tales of a Grandfather. Sir Walter Scott.

A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England. James Savage, Little Brown & Co., 1860.

American Historical Society, Inc. Lloyd C. M. Hare, D. Appleton & Co. Warfield's Travels.

American Colonists in English Records. 2 Series. Sherwood, London.

Delano's Voyages — Narrative of Voyages and Travel. Boston, 1817.

A Relaeion of the Indyan Warre. John Easton, 1675.

Winthrop's Journals — History of New England, 1630-1649. Edited by J. K. Hosmer.

Magnalia Christi Americani. Cotton Mather, 1675.

New England's Prospect. William Wood, London, 1639.

New England Historical and Genealogical Registers and Historical Reprints.

Massachusetts Historical Society Collections.

Soldiers of King Philip's War. George Madison Bodge, A.B., Leominster, Mass., 1896.

King Philip's War. George W. Elliot and John E. Morris, Grafton Press, New York, 1906.

Some Indian Events of New England. Compiled by Allan Forbes. Published by State Street Trust Company, Boston, 1934.

Records of Massachusetts Militia, 1812 to 1814.

Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War. Boston, 1896-98.

Duties of a Regimental Surgeon. Robert Hamilton, M.D., London, T. W. Longman, 1794.

History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts.

Famous Families of Massachusetts. Mary Caroline Crawford, Little Brown & Co., 1930.

A Journal of a Young Man of Massachusetts in the War of 1812. Boston, 1816.

Maritime History of Massachusetts, 1783-1860. Samuel Eliot Morison. Houghton Mifflin & Co., 1921.

Pedigrees of the County Families of England. Foster, London, 1874.

- Documents Illustrative of the History of the Slave Trade in America. Elizabeth Donnan, Carnegie Institution Publication No. 409, 4 Vols., Washington, 1930-35.
- Slave Ships and Slaving. George Francis Dow, Salem, 1907.
- Adventures of an American Slaver. Theodore Canot, 1807. Edited by Malcolm Cowley, Garden City Publishing Company, 1928.
- History of Slavery in Massachusetts. G. H. Moore, D. Appleton & Co., 1866.
- White Servitude in Pennsylvania. Dr. Cheesman A. Herrick, Philadelphia, 1926.
- Tracts on Slavery. In the Widener Memorial Library.
- Items on Slavery, etc., in old issues of the Boston Evening Post, Boston News Letter, Massachusetts Mercury, Essex Gazette and Evening Transcript.
- The Quakers in the American Colonies. Rufus M. Jones and others, London, 1911.
- Early Planters of Seitate. Harvey Hunter Pratt, Seitate Historical Society, 1929.
- Old Seitate. Published by the Chief Justice Cushing Chapter, D. A. R., 1921.
- History of Seitate. Samuel Deane, Boston, 1831.
- Vital Records of Seitate.
- Plymouth Church Records.
- Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth. W. T. Davis, Boston, 1883.
- Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Deeds, etc.
- History of Plymouth County. Hurd.
- Records of the Town of Plymouth, 1636-1743.
- Bradford's History of Plymouth Plantation, 1620-1646.
- Old Time Aneedotes of the North River and South Shore. J. F. Merritt, Rockland, 1928.
- A Historical Sketch of the Town of Hanover, Mass., with Family Genealogies. John S. Barry, 1853.
- History of Shipbuilding on the North River, Plymouth County, Mass. L. Vernon Briggs, Boston, 1889.
- Church and Cemetery Records of Hanover, Mass. L. Vernon Briggs.
- History and Records of St. Andrews Church, Hanover, Mass., 1904.
- Vital Records of Hanover, Mass. Compiled by L. Vernon Briggs, *et al.*
- Vital Records of Pembroke, Mass., to the Year 1850.
- Historia, a Magazine of Local History. Norwell, Mass., Nos. 1-6. Published by George C. Turner, Riverdale Farm, Norwell, Mass., 1898-99.
- Cohassett History and Genealogy, Davenport, 1909.
- Cohassett Vital Records.
- Narrative History of Cohassett. E. V. Bigelow, 1898.
- Genealogical Notes of Barnstable Families, 1888.
- Memorial of Marshfield and Green Harbor. Marcia A. Thomas, Boston, 1854.
- History of Marshfield. L. S. Richards, Plymouth, 1901.

- History of the Town of Middleboro. T. Weston, 1906.
 Vital Records of Kingston, Mass., to 1850.
 Death and Burial Records of Kingston. Thomas Bradford Drew, 1859.
 Abington Vital Records.
 Historical Sketch of Abington. Aaron Hobart.
 Vital Records of Rehoboth, Mass., 1642-1846. J. N. Arnold, Providence.
 History of the Town of Hingham, Mass. Published by the town, 1893.
 History of Hingham, Plymouth County, Mass. C. Gill, Jr., and Farmer
 & Brown, 1827.
 Truro, Cape Cod, or Landmarks and Seamarks. Shebna Rich, 1884.
 History of Carver, Mass.
 Suffolk County Deeds.
 Records and Deeds of Massachusetts Bay Colony.
 A Memorial History of Boston, 1630-1880. Justin Winsor, Boston,
 1880-81.
 History of South Boston. Toomey-Rankin, Boston, 1901.
 History of South Boston. Thomas C. Simonds, David Clapp, Boston,
 1857.
 Illustrated History of South Boston. C. Bancroft Gillespie, Inquirer
 Publishing Company, South Boston, 1900.
 History of North Bridgewater. Bradford Kingman, 1866.
 History of the Early Settlement of Newton, 1639-1800. Francis Jackson,
 Boston, 1854.
 Vital Records of Newton, Mass., to 1850.
 Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, 1629-1818. T. B. Wyman,
 Boston, 1879.
 History of Medford. Usher.
 History of Medford. Brooks, 1886.
 History of New Bedford. Ricketson, 1858.
 History of Martha's Vineyard. 3 Vols. Charles Edward Banks. Pub-
 lished by George H. Dean, Boston, 1911.
 Vital Records of Edgartown, Mass.
 Vital Records of Chilmark, Mass.
 History of Ashburnham, Mass., 1734-1886. E. S. Stearns, 1887.
 Ellis' History of Roxbury. Published by S. A. Drake, 1848.
 History of Framingham from 1620. W. Barry, Boston, 1847.
 History of Middlesex County. S. A. Drake, Boston, 1880.
 History of the First Church in Roxbury, 1630-1904. W. A. Thwing,
 Boston, 1908.
 Vital Records to 1850, Framingham, Marlboro, Hopkinton, Sudbury and
 Shrewsbury.
 Essex County Vital Records.
 An Historical Sketch of Groton, Mass., 1655-1890. Samuel Abbott Green.
 Groton Records, 1652-1707. S. A. Green.
 Groton Church Records, 1664-1830. S. A. Green.
 Groton During the Indian Wars. S. A. Green, 1883.
 Groton Historical Series. Vols. 1-4. S. A. Green.

- Groton During the Revolution. S. A. Green.
Groton, Mass., Jubilees Lawrence Academy, 1854.
Groton, Mass. Butler.
Boundary Lines of Groton, 1655.
Groton Epitaphs, 1704-1877. S. A. Green.
History of Gilsuam, N. H., 1752-1879. S. Haywood, Manchester, 1881.
History of Manchester, Mass., 1645-1895. D. F. Lamson.
Dedham (Mass.) Records.
Old Kittery and Her Families. Everett S. Stackpole, Lewiston, Me.
Ships and Sailors of Old Salem. Ralph D. Paine, Chicago, 1912.
Inscriptions from the Burying Grounds in Salem, Mass. Pamphlet,
Press of James Loring, Boston, 1837.
The Diary of William Pyncheon of Salem. Edited by Fitch Edward
Oliver, Riverside Press, 1890.
The Columbia River. William Dennison Lyman, New York, 1909.
The Smith Family of Pennsylvania, Johann Friederich Schmidt, 1746-
1812. J. Bennett Nolan.
New York Marriages Prior to 1784.
Loring Genealogy.
Cushing Genealogy. J. S. Cushing.
We and our Kinsfolk. Mary Balch Briggs.
Archives of the Briggs Family. Sam Briggs.
Life and Services of Major General John Thomas. Charles Coffin, 1844.
The Thomas Book. Lawrence Buckley Thomas, D.D. Published by
Henry T. Thomas Company, New York, 1896.
General John Thomas, a Soldier in the Revolution, a paper read by
Arthur Lord, 1914.
The Barker Family of Plymouth Colony and County. Barker New-
hall, Ph.D., Cleveland.
The Barker Genealogy. Elizabeth Fryc Barker, Frye Publishing Com-
pany, New York, 1927.
The Otis Family. Wm. A. Otis, Chicago, 1905.
The Life of James Otis of Massachusetts. Wm. Tudor, Boston, Wells &
Lilly, 1823.
Archives of the Briggs Family. Sam Briggs. Published by T. Schenck
& Co., Cleveland, 1880.
The Doane Family. Alfred Adler Doane, Boston, 1902.
The Genealogy of the Cushing Family. Lemuel Cushing, Montreal, 1877.
Dunham Genealogy. Isaac Watson Dunham, Norwich, Conn., Bulletin
Print, 1907.
Kent Genealogies. L. Vernon Briggs, 1898.
The Descendants of Walter Woodworth, Scituate.
Life of Thacher Magoun, 1935.
Family Vicissitudes of John Phillips, Sr., of Duxbury and Marshfield.
Azal Ames, M.D., 1903.
Cornet Robert Stetson. Nelson M. Stetson. Published by Stetson Kin-
dred of America.

- The Descendants of Cornet Robert Stetson of Scituate. Oscar Frank Stetson, 1875.
- John Rogers Family in Plymouth and Vicinity.
- Thomas Mayhew, Patriarch to the Indians. Lloyd C. M. Hare, D. Appleton & Co., 1932.
- Letters and Journals of Edith Forbes Perkins, 1908-1923.
- Memoirs of Henry Lee. John T. Moore, Jr., 1905.
- John Wheelwright, 1592-1769. John Heard, Jr., 1890.
- Cabot Bibliography. George Parker Winship, 1900.
- Some Facts About John and Sebastian Cabot. George Parker Winship, Worcester, 1900.
- History and Genealogy of the Cabot Family, 1475-1927. L. Vernon Briggs. Privately printed, Goodspeed, Boston, 1927.
- Life and Times of Stephen Higginson. T. W. Higginson, Boston, 1907.
- From the Books and Papers of Russell Sturgis. Julian Sturgis. Oxford University Press.
- Life of Francis Higginson. T. W. Higginson, New York, Dodd, Meade & Co., 1891.
- Memoir of the Rev. Francis Higginson. J. B. Felt, Boston, 1852.
- Memoir of Thomas Handasyd Perkins. Thomas C. Cary, Boston, Little Brown & Co., Boston, 1856.
- Two Loyal Bostonians, William Edward Jones and Ellen Frances Preble. William Preble Jones, Somerville, Mass., 1929.
- The Massachusetts Hemenway Family. Descendants of Ralph Hemenway of Roxbury, Mass., 1634; Rufus Hemenway, Mary Hemenway Newton and Clair Alonzo Newton. Napierville, Ill., 1910.
- A Memorial of the Life and Benefactions of Mary Hemenway, 1820-1894. Mary Wilder Tileston. Privately printed, 1927.
- Genealogy of the Hon. Joseph W. Porter. Bangor, 1878.
- The Descendants of Major Samuel Lawrence. Robert Means Lawrence, Riverside Press, 1904.
- Bartow Genealogy. Evelyn Pierrepont Bartow, Innes & Co., Baltimore.
- The Genealogy of the Descendants of Richard Haven of Lynn, Mass. Boston, W. White & H. P. Lewes, 1843.
- Hemenway Genealogy, 1880.
- The Livingstons of Callendar. Edwin Brockholst Livingston, T. & A. Constable, Edinburgh, 1920.
- The Livingstons of Livingston Manor. Edwin Brockholst Livingston, Knickerbocker Press, New York, 1910.
- Annals of Albany, N. Y.

Also Vital Statistics, State House, Boston; wills, records, deeds and other documents, Suffolk County Court House; church and town registers in various parts of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Rhode Island and Connecticut; and manuscripts on file at Essex Institute, Salem, at the Massachusetts Historical Society and the New England Historic Genealogical Society, etc.

CONTENTS

VOLUME I

	PAGE
CHAPTER I: ENGLISH ANCESTRY OF BRIGGS OF SALLE FROM A.D. 1254	1
CHAPTER II: ANCESTRY OF WALTER BRIGGS OF SCITUATE STEPHEN ¹ , NYCOLAS ² , THOMAS ³ , WALTER ⁴	26
CHAPTER III: WALTER BRIGGS THE EMIGRANT AND HIS FRIENDS	52
CHAPTER IV: WHITE, INDIAN AND NEGRO SLAVES OF OUR ANCESTORS AND OTHER EARLY SETTLERS, 1632- 1830	86
CHAPTER V: QUAKERS THE ANCESTORS OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY, THEIR FRIENDS AND ASSOCIATES, DEFEND THE QUAKERS, WHO ARE PER- SECUTED BY BOTH THE PURITANS AND THE PILGRIMS	138
CHAPTER VI: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION II CAPT. JOHN ² , LIEUT. JAMES ² , CAPT. CORNELIUS ² (ALLYN FAMILY), HANNAH ² , AND JOSEPH ² BRIGGS	164
CHAPTER VII: GRANDCHILDREN OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION III	187
CHAPTER VIII: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER ¹ BRIGGS, GENERATION IV INCLUDING CAPT. JAMES ⁴ BRIGGS, WHO WAS A SOLDIER IN THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AND IN THE REVOLUTION, AS WELL AS A FAMOUS SHIPBUILDER	224

CHAPTER IX: ANCESTRY OF HANNAH BARKER, WIFE
OF JAMES⁴ BRIGGS

THE BARKERS — RICHARD WARREN OF THE "MAYFLOWER"
— JOHN WILLIAMS — ANTHONY ANNABLE, JR. — HUM-
PHREY TURNER — EBENEZER STETSON — EDWARD JEN-
KINS — AND OTHERS, ALL ANCESTORS

276

CHAPTER X: DESCENDANTS OF WALTER¹ BRIGGS,
GENERATION V — THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS (JAMES⁴,
JAMES³, CORNELIUS², WALTER¹)

ICHABOD, ENOS, SETH, ELISHA, DANIEL — ALL SHIP-
BUILDERS

337

ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME I

	FACING PAGE
SOUTH TRANSEPT OF THE NORFOLK PARISH CHURCH AT SALLE, <i>frontispiece</i>	
SALLE CHURCH, FROM THE EAST	6
SALLE CHURCH, FROM THE NORTHEAST	6
ARMS OF BRIGGS ON THE CHURCH AT SALLE	8
EXTERIOR SOUTH TRANSEPT, SALLE CHURCH	8
BRASS ON TOMB OF JOHN BRIGG IN SALLE CHURCH	12
SOUTH TRANSEPT OF THE NORFOLK PARISH CHURCH, SALLE-REEPHAM	21
SOUTH TRANSEPT WINDOW, SALLE CHURCH, MARGARET BRIGG	28
HOTEL MEURICE, PARIS	28
CABOT COAT OF ARMS	34
RUINS OF COUCY-LE-CHATEAU	41
HERMITAGE CASTLE, SCOTTISH BORDER	41
SOMERSET HOUSE, LONDON	44
SKATUTAHKEE FARM, HANCOCK, N. H.	44
HOUSE BUILT BY WALTER BRIGGS, THE EMIGRANT, IN 1651	56
ORIGINAL BRIGGS HOME ON MUSHQUASHCUTT POND	56
MILITARY HATS WORN BY THE BRIGGS ANCESTORS	58
ANDIRONS BROUGHT FROM ENGLAND BY WALTER BRIGGS	58
L. CABOT BRIGGS' LIVING ROOM AT EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD	70
BEDROOM OF L. CABOT BRIGGS AT EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD	70
BARBARA COOPER	78
ORIGINAL BILL OF SALE OF SLAVE MARIA	86
DEBORAH BRIGGS INHERITS MARIA	88
BOND ON PURCHASE OF MARIA	90
JAMES BRIGGS DEEDS MARIA TO STEPHEN OTIS	90
PURCHASE OF A SLAVE, 1734	94
SAMUEL ⁴ AND ELIZA (PERKINS) CABOT AND THEIR CHILDREN	94

	FACING PAGE
PORTRAIT OF NAPOLEON	104
MEDAL STRUCK FOR SHIP "COLUMBIA"	122
SADDLE BAGS OF DR. CUSHING OTIS	122
IRONS USED FOR RUNAWAY SLAVES	122
DRAWING ROOM, 64 BEACON STREET (SOUTH VIEW)	130
DRAWING ROOM, 64 BEACON STREET (NORTH VIEW)	131
MARY PERRY	140
LUTHER BRIGGS	140
ISAIAH HANSCOM	140
MRS. ISAIAH HANSCOM	140
RECEIPT GIVEN COLONEL PERKINS BY THE MARQUISE DE LAFAYETTE	144
APPROACH TO SKATUTAHKEE HOUSE, HANCOCK, N. H.	160
MARY CABOT BRIGGS, DOUGLAS A. THOM AND L. CABOT BRIGGS AT DUNOTTAR CASTLE	160
CASTELLO DE TREVANO, LAKE LUGANO, ITALY	166
CHÂTEAU DE BELLIGNIES OF PRINCESS MARIE DE CROY, NORD, FRANCE	166
CHATEAU OF MARQUIS DE MORTEMART IN BRITTANY	170
CASTLE OF DUC DE BEAUFORT, PETSCHAU	170
GRAVESTONE OF CORNELIUS BRIGGS	177
CHÂTEAU DE MEILLANT OF THE MARQUIS DE MORTEMART	201
GRAND SALON OF CHÂTEAU DE MEILLANT	201
HOUQUA	214
SARAH ELLIOT	232
BRIGGS' SHIPYARD	248
BRIGGS' SHIPYARD, HOBART'S LANDING, SCITUATE	248
SHIP "COLUMBIA" AND SLOOP "WASHINGTON," 1788	254
THE "COLUMBIA" AT FALKLAND ISLANDS	254
THE "COLUMBIA" ATTACKED BY INDIANS	256
CAPTAIN GRAY ASHORE AT WAMPOA	260
BRONZE TABLETS ON THE NORTH RIVER BRIDGE, HANOVER	266
BARKER HOUSE, PEMBROKE, MASS.	279
OLD BARKER GARRISON OR BLOCKHOUSE, 1637	279
WILLIAMS-BARKER HOUSE	283
JOHN BARKER HOUSE, SCITUATE HARBOR, 1634	283
L. CABOT BRIGGS' CUP FOR INTER-COLLEGIATE LACROSSE TEAMS	320
TIM FOSTER HOUSE, SCITUATE, 1676	329
LLOYD BRIGGS AND HIS SON, 1869	329
LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1876	329

ILLUSTRATIONS

xxix

	FACING PAGE
PARLOR, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	352
CHAMBER, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	352
MEMORANDUM OF THOMAS BRIGGS	363
LETTER TO THOMAS BRIGGS FROM THOMAS OTIS	364
DARTMOOR PRISON, ENGLAND, 1814	370
COLORING DRAWING OF SHIP BY THOMAS BRIGGS, 1813	374
DEBORAH C. BRIGGS	374
ABIGAIL T. OTIS	374
L. CABOT BRIGGS IN DOG SLED	386
RESIDENCE OF DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON	386
BARK "AMY TURNER" IN A GALE OFF CAPE HORN, OCTOBER, 1880	396

CHAPTER I

ENGLISH ANCESTRY BRIGGS OF SALLE

FROM A.D. 1254

Ever since I was a small child I remember the tradition in our family that the Briggses were descended from the ancient family of Briggs of Salle in Norfolk. So much was this still in my mind that in 1890, when I made my first visit to England, I proceeded at the earliest opportunity to the parish church of Salle in Norfolk, and to the surrounding parishes, in search of any clue that would connect this family with Walter Briggs, our emigrant ancestor. This was nearly forty-five years ago. It was not until 1931 that we found a clue in the Chancery Records in London, and then with the assistance of Mr. Bower Marsh, probably the most expert genealogist in England, my ancestor, Walter Briggs, was found to have come from Bucklesham in Suffolk. This is in the same diocese as Salle in Norfolk. Up to the present time I have not been able to find the identical link which would directly connect this family with the ancient family of Briggs of Salle, but there seems little doubt that the Bucklesham family was an early offshoot of the family of Briggs of Salle, which was very numerous and from which many, if not all, of the manor families bearing the name of Briggs in East Anglia were descended.

The name *Briggs*, *Brigg*, *Brygge*, *Atte Brigge*, etc. (Blomefield gives sixteen different spellings in the index to one of his volumes of "The History of Norfolk") goes back, at first in its Latin form, *de Pontibus*, to the earliest records of East Anglia. It is generally considered of Saxon origin, like other similar short English names, but it is interesting to note that Coppinger, in his "Suffolk Records and Manu-

scripts," mentions at Horningsheath, *Hermer, son of Randolph del Punt*, and again, *Hermer del Brigge*. *Del Punt*, I am told, is Norman French, and suggests interesting possibilities.

It is impossible to be sure of the succession of Briggs of Salle before the time of one Thomas Briggs, who left a will dated 1444, and who seems to have been a man of landed estate. It is interesting, however, to go back to those of his ancestors who are mentioned in the records. For convenience I will number the several generations previous to this Thomas as given by Blomefield in his "History of Norfolk," Vol. VIII, as this account is for the most part in keeping with the wills, records, manor rolls, etc., still extant in Salle and elsewhere. These manor rolls and other records have been carefully searched for me by the Rev. W. H. L. Parsons, now rector of the old church at Salle, which is still standing in an excellent state of preservation, and still contains memorials of the prominent Briggs family of Salle.

1. WILLIAM¹ ATTE BRIGGE. Blomefield, in his "History of Norfolk," says:

The first of the family I have met with was William atte Brigge of Salle, called in some deeds *William de Ponte* and in others *de Pontibus de Salle*, and the last mention I find of him is that he was living at Salle in 1334.

This William is also mentioned in the Salle records in 1346. Blomefield and other authorities agree that many of the manor families of this name were descended from one *John Brigges* or *atte Brigge* of Salle, generally given as the son or grandson of this William; but Blomefield, in at least one other instance, mentions a Symon Brigges as the grandfather of John. Walter Rye ("Norfolk Families," 1913) says, "Robert atte Brig (also found written *Robert de Pontibus*) was of Salle as early as 1324," and appears to consider him the ancestor of the Salle family; but Blomefield tells us, in his Vol. IX, that —

Robert atte Brigge was appointed "rector of the Church of St. Michael in Hokering in 1349, at the nomination of Sir Robert de Morley."

In his chapter on Fawconer's Manor, Quidenham, in Vol. I, Blomefield mentions one *Walter atte Brygge*, who may have been a brother of William, as the dates correspond:

The family named De-ponte de Quidenham, or atte Brygge, continued here from about Henry the Third's time to about 1500, and had a free tenement held of the Kenninghall Manor, at 16s. 5d. per year, which is now joined in the other manor.

Walter atte Brygge had Thomas, who had Richard, Bartholomew and Amy, widow of William Humfreys of Quidenham, 1323.

At his death, the inquisition says, he held Quidenham Manor and avowdson of the Duke of Norfolk, as of Kenninghall Manor, by fealty and 34s. 1d. rent, 1 lb. pepper, it containing 300 acres of land, and pasture in Quidenham called Chamberlain's, held of Thomas Tirrell, knt., as of Banham, by fealty and 44s. rent, and also of Hocham Parva Manor, &c.

Blomefield gives the sons of William atte Brigge of Salle (temp. Edw. I and II) as —

- i. WALTER BRIGGS, clerk (alive 1389).
- ii. JOHN ATTE BRYGGE of Salle², esq. (A^o 1383).
- iii. ROBERT ATTE BRIGGE (alive 1393) ("1349 Robert atte Brigg Rector of the church of St. Michael in Hokering, at the nomination of Sir Robert de Morley").
2. iv. THOMAS BRIGGES of Holt (alive 1400), in 1392 went to the Holy Sepulchre of our Lord as Chaplain with Sir Thomas Swinbourne, knt., an account of which pilgrimage written by himself is still extant in the MSS. in Caius College, Cambridge Library, which begins thus:

A. MCCCLXXXII, vi. Aug. die Martis ego Thomas Brygge recessi de Castro de Gynes versus Sanctum Sepulorum Domini cum comitavâ Domini mei Dni. Tho. Swynbourne Militis de Anglia, et veni Venecias, die Domenica, &c. (Blomefield.)

Thomas Brygges of Holt is mentioned, 1400, in the Frere MSS. of Holt Hundred.

v. WILLIAM ATTE BRYGGE of Holt.

His children:

1. SIR JOHN BRIGGE, Chaplain (bur. 1481) "was presented, 1438, to the Rectory of St. Laurence, in Norwich, by the Abbot and Convent of Bury; in 1446 Rector of Dickleborough, in 1466 Rector of Burford, and was buried there in 1481." (Blomefield.)
2. WILLIAM, his son and heir (alive 1466). Blomefield tells us, Vol. IX, "Stafford's Manor, Wiveton or Wifton . . . William Brigg was returned to be lord in 1401, and Catherine his widow presented in 1426 and 1427, Joan Briggs, widow in 1475."

A careful study leads me to believe that these were not all sons of William atte Brigge, though they were doubtless his descendants. Mr. Parsons tells me that Blomefield left out one or two generations. Mr. Parsons gives the sons of William from contemporary Court Rolls (which are probably more correct) as Adam, John, William, Richard and Thomas. This Thomas (not Thomas Brygges of Holt, but probably his father or uncle) died in 1360/61. He was father of John (d. 1415, m. Margaret) and of Roger.

Mr. Parsons sends me the following extracts from the Court Rolls of Kirkhall Manor, etc., in the Parish of Salle. He says:

The earliest reference known to the present writer is to Philip, son of Geoffrey ad Pontem, who had 5 acres in Morloft (*i.e.*, between Salle and Heydon) in 1254.

Another early, but undated, deed says, "I Ralf, son of Silvester of Salle, have conveyed to Geoffrey de Ponte 1 ac. on the E. side of the church of St. Paul of Salle."

1333. Simon atte Brigge pays 3s., John 2s. 6d., Robert 2s. 6d. to the Lay Subsidy.
1334. Robert atte Brigge of Salle is named with John Bussel as having a tenement in Morloft, once of Philip atte Brigge, about 3 acres.

Ada, dau., and Edw., son of William Attebrigge surrendered land . . . to the use of John, son of said William, and William his brother.

- 1338. Gregory, Sampson and Thomas atte Brigge are named.
- 1339. John and Margaret his wife hold 9 aeres in Causton.
- 1340. Adam, son of William atte Brigge, John and Richard his brothers, come into Court and release to William their brother the full right which they have in a cottage.
- 1342. John, son of William atte Brigge is fined 3d. because he grinds eorn elsewhere than in the Lord's mill. William his brother is also mentioned.
- 1346. John atte Brigge unjustly detains 2s. 10d. from Walter Rook.
- 1347. Thomas atte Brigge distrained for one lamb for arrears of $\frac{1}{2}$ year — "Thomas, son of Wm. Atte Brigge."
- 1348. John, son of William atte Brigge is named
- 1349. John and William atte Brigge held two tenements in Morloft.

Hugo de Marsh surrenders 1 rod and 8 perches for the use of Thomas atte Brigge.

John atte Brigge and William atte Brigge held tenements Beres and Gobbes.

- 1349/50. Adam son of Wm. atte Brigge, takes 1 mess., 1 ae. & $\frac{1}{2}$ rd., plus, at the death of his father (Black Death, 1349/50)

John atte Brigg takes 8 ae. through the death of John, son of William atte Brig, his uncle.

- 1350. Robert, son of William atte Brigge had John a brother. Adam, son of William atte Brigge surrendered land to Emma, wife of Adam.

Adam, son of William atte Brigge, being siek (probably *in extremis*) surrendered a house and land to Emma, his wife.

- 2. 1360/61. Thomas atte Brigge died. Roger his son next of kin and heir.
- 3. 1361. John and Roger atte Brigge appear in Court, tenants under Kirkhall Manor.

John atte Brigge and Margaret his wife have 6 aeres in Woodcroft. (It is inferred these were parents of Thomas Brig (will 1444)

- 3. 1363. John atte Brigge rendered into the hands of the Lord 30 p. in Salle, for the use of Geoffrey Melman.

(This Geoffrey Melman was the father of John Melman, referred to later. According to Blomefield he held three-fourths of a Knight's Fee of Lord Morley, with Thomas Briggs, in 1403.)

1378. John atte Brigge released land to Robert Luee.

2. THOMAS² ATTE BRIGGE. We know from the wills which I shall give later that Thomas⁴ Brig or Briggs of Salle was the son of a John³ and Margaret. Blomefield tells us that this John³ was alive in 1383. As the Manor Rolls show that John², son of William¹ atte Brigge, died in 1349/50, probably John³, the father of Thomas⁴ (1444), was the *grandson* of William¹ atte Brigge (son of his son Thomas²), who is mentioned under dates 1361 and 1363 above. (We do not find Walter atte Brigge, son of William, according to Blomefield, in the Court Rolls. He was a clerk or priest and consequently does not concern us, except that he is the *first Walter* mentioned.)

Sons of Thomas² atte Brigge:

- i. ROGER, next of kin and heir.
3. ii. JOHN ATTE BRYGGE of Salle, Esq.

3. JOHN³ ATTE BRYGGE OF SALLE, ESQ., Blomefield says, "is the first I find mentioned of this family in any of the pedigrees I have seen. He was alive in 1383, and then bare for arms *gul.*, 3 bars gemelle, *or*, a canton *arg.*" Mr. Parsons tells us that —

In front of the South Door of the Salle church there is a half figure of a man (the brass of his wife and children is gone). This brass is the earliest in the church and is almost certainly of the date 1415–1425. The feature of it is the hood round the neck, which went out of fashion before 1430. It may be the memorial of John Brigg, father of Thomas Brigg (d. 1444). It is said that the south aisle was built by a Brigg, but there is no positive evidence of it.

(Also in the south aisle is the indent of a woman. Blomefield records a stone in this aisle bearing the inscription:

"Hic jacet Christiana Brigg nup. uxor Johs."

This indent suggests an early date in the 15th Century, and this



SALLE CHURCH FROM THE EAST

W. L. E. Parsons' book on Salle



SALLE CHURCH FROM THE NORTHEAST

W. L. E. Parsons' book on Salle

Christiana was probably the wife of John, son of William atte Brigge, though she cannot be positively identified.)

As I have said, Blomefield considers this John the son of William¹ de Pontibus, but he evidently did not have access to the Manor Rolls which were recently discovered by Mr. Parsons and from which I have quoted. He gives as his two sons:

- i. JOHN BRIGGES, ESQ., eldest son and heir, will dated 1454.
- ii. EDMUND BRIGGES. Burke's "Extinct and Dormant Baroneteies," Briggs of Haughton, says:

"John Briggs of Saul in the County of Norfolk, settled by deed, but without date, but supposed to have been made in the time of Edward II., all his lands, tenements and hereditaments in Crasfont, in Westmorland, upon his second son, Edmund Briggs, which estate descended lineally to the seventh inheritor, Oliver Briggs, Esq., who having sold it in 1565 . . . removed himself to Ernestry Park, near Ludlow in Salop, in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's time, and in the same reign purchased from George, Earl of Shrewbury, the grant of the forest or free chase of Clees or Clives, in that county, as well as of lands in the shires of Warwick and Montgomery," etc., and he carries the account of this family down to "Moreton Briggs, esq., of Haughton, in the County of Salop, who was created a baronet by King Charles." This baronetcy became extinct in 1757, on the death of Sir Hugh Briggs, the fifth baronet.

The "Visitation of Shropshire" (Harleian Society, XXVIII) gives a similar account of Briggs of Ernestry and Haughton, as does Wotton, in his "English Baronet-cies." The latter quotes the old deed of John Briggs of Salle mentioned above.

We do not know whether or not our Thomas¹ Briggs (will 1444), who appears to have been the next inheritor of the properties in Salle, was son, nephew or grandson of this John. We *do* know that Thomas's father was named John and that he married a Margaret. From now on, however, our information is somewhat clearer.

4. THOMAS⁴ BRIGG was a man of considerable property. Walter Rye, in his "Norfolk Families," says that *Thomas Briggs* and *John Briggs* were returned as *two of the gentry* in 1433. In his account of Nugoun's Manor, in Vol. VIII, Blomefield tells us that "Thomas Briggs and John Melman were found in the 3rd of Henry IV. to hold three parts of a fee of the Lord Morley." *Thomas Briggs, as will be seen by his will, died possessed of several manors in Norfolk.* Mr. Parsons writes:

I think Thomas (1444) was a man of *large* estate. He owned two manors in Salle, Nugouns and Hawes. He owned two or three manors elsewhere, viz., Wood-Dalling and Pensthorpe, but the former was not the big manor of the parish. True, he built our South Transept (Salle Church) but it is surprising what large gifts were given to the church by people of what we should call limited means. His grandson calls himself "armiger," which equals *esquire*: it means armor-bearer, the man who attended on a Knight.

On the other hand, I have recently found that Thomas (1444) and Margaret his wife were members of the Trinity Cloth Guild of Coventry, which certainly points to their being interested or engaged in weaving. So I suppose Thomas Brigg made his money from keeping sheep or from weaving. Geoffrey Melman (see Court Rolls) was also a member of the same trade guild, and he had a son John, and Blomefield says that in 1403 Thomas Brigg and John Melman held three quarters of a knight's fee of Lord Morley, which was either Nugoun's or Hawes Manor, and means, I think, that Thomas Brigg and John Melman had *bought* the Manor. I think John Melman died about 1430, and if I could find his will it would probably bequeath the manor to Thomas Briggs.

As for the arms assigned to John Brigg (1383) they are the same that Thomas Brigg and his successors held, but what ground Blomefield has for his statement I do not know.

Blomefield's "History of Norfolk," Vol. VII, says:

Thomas Brigg of Salle, by his will, dated May 6, 1444, was buried in the Chapel of St. James in the Church of Salle, and was lord of his manors, Penthorpe, Wood-Dalling, Hardigrews, etc.; he appoints three chaplains to pray there for him, and a salary to each of 8 marks per ann., names therein Margaret his wife and



ARMS OF BRIGGS ON THE SOUTH PORCH OF THE CHURCH AT SALLE,
WHICH WAS BUILT BY A BRIGGS, AS WITNESS THE ARMS



EXTERIOR SOUTH TRANSEPT, SALLE CHURCH, BUILT BY THOMAS BRIGGS

John his son, who married, as I find, Aliancre (Eleanor) dau. of Thomas Beaupré of Outwell, Esq., and was descended from Ralph de Ponte of Brigg, who was living in the 3rd of Edward I. (1275).

Through Mr. Parsons I have been so fortunate as to get a copy of this will, which reads as follows:

In the name of God, Amen. I thomas Brigg composmentis first of all leave my soul to Almighty God, Blessed Mary Virgin, Blessed Paul the Apostle and to All Saints, & my body to be buried in the chapel of St. James of Salle. To the Light of the Holy Cross 1s. (the crucifix of the Rood Beam) to the Light of Holy Mary, & to the Plough Light $\frac{3}{4}$: to the parochial chaplain 2s.: to the parish clerk 12d. to every leper at the gates of Norwich 4d. the residue of all my goods I give into the hands of my executors, to pay my debts and for my funeral expenses and other works of piety, as they shall see to be most pleasing to God. To my wife Margaret, all my lands in Boton, Brandiston & Cawston, & all my monor called Hawes in Salle. I will that Margaret may have for the term of her life a chamber with chapel annexed with its solars together with the use of the chapel there, & which of the gardens she should choose. I will that if my son John shall be have kindly & honourably, especially towards his mother when he marries or comes to the age of 26 he may have my manor called Nugones in Salle with its appurtenances lying in Salle, Repham, Wood-Dalling, Heydon, Oulton & Cawston, & his heirs male. Also to John I leave my principal messuage in Salle with the reversion of the said apartment after the death of my wife Margaret.

I will that my feofees in my manors of Pensthorp, Wood Dalling and Hardigreys keep them for 25 years, the profits to be employed to find priests to pray for my soul, & after the said term of 25 years to sell the same and the money to be disposed in alms, pilgrimages and works of charity. To Agnes my daughter I leave £40, to Margaret my daughter £40.

Margaret my wife to have & enjoy all the necessaries and utensils of my house, except bodily ornaments & except silver gilt jewels & masers, of which I will to Margaret 24 silver spoons of the best, also two silver salt cellars of the best, also two silver pieces with their covers.

Margaret my wife & Robert Popy & Thomas Scggford & Wm. Colling I appoint my executors & as supervisors John Heydon & Stephen Lyng of Walsingham.

Edmund Hobbys, chaplain & notary public & John Sampson parochial chaplain of the Church of Salle, witnesses.

Note. We the aforesaid Edward (*sic*) & John at the special request of the said Thomas Brygg attached our seals.

There has been much confusion among the genealogists and historians regarding this Thomas⁴ Brigg, whose will is dated 1444, and his grandson Thomas⁶, whose will is dated 1494; but their wills show very clearly their relationship. Blomefield's charts make the first Thomas the son, rather than the father, of John⁵ Briggs, who married Eleanor Beaupré, but the will of the second Thomas (*q.v.*), of which I have secured a transcript, makes these matters very clear. Thomas⁴ Brigg was probably nephew and namesake of Thomas Briggs of Holt, to whom I have already referred. Thomas (1444) seems not to be mentioned on any of Blomefield's genealogical charts, although Blomefield mentions him several times in his accounts of manor families.

He married twice, each time a Margaret, but we do not know their maiden names. The second wife survived him, as the will shows. Blomefield tells of an inscription in Salle Church in his day:

On a stone the portraiture of a man between his two wives, "Pray for the soules of Thomas Briggs and the two Margarets his wives."

The stone, with the studs remaining, is still in the south end of the transept, but the brass has disappeared.

Mr. Parsons says that the south transept of Salle Church was added by this Thomas Briggs; the letters "T. B." are on two small bosses of the roof. This roof and the similar one of the north transept are particularly fine pieces of work, and are *said to be copied in the lobby of the House of Lords*. This transept was built as the Chapel of St. James. (There was a guild of St. James in existence in 1358.) Thomas⁴ Brigg willed to be buried in this chapel and to have three chaplains to celebrate in the chapel for twenty-five years. The east window of this transept commemorates Thomas Brigg and his two Margarets; he is portrayed

as kneeling before Thomas of Canterbury, his patron saint, and his two wives are behind him. The inscription is, "*Benedicat Virgo nos cum prole pia.*" The head of the second wife has been removed and may be seen in the window opposite. The figure of the man is probably not the original glass, but it has been rightly restored and the style of his hair and dress, according to Mr. Parsons, agrees as to date (1440-60) with that of the wives, the glass of which is original.

As we see by his will, THOMAS⁵ BRIGG left a son John and daughters Agnes and Margaret.

5. JOHN⁵ BRYGGES, ESQ., as Blomefield calls him, son of Thomas⁴, was the next in line at Salle. He was born before 1418 and died about 1473. He married (1) ELEANOR, daughter of *Thomas de Beaupré* of Outwell, and (2) MARGARET ROOKWOOD of Euston in Suffolk. He had six children, who survived him:

- i. THOMAS⁶ (d. 1494), eldest son and heir.
- ii. EDWARD (or EBORARD), who succeeded Thomas in 1494; d. 1511.
- iii. MARGARET.
- iv. JOAN.
- v. ELIZABETH.
- vi. GEORGE, d. about 1506.

These were probably all children by the first wife.

Blomefield also mentions a Henry, alive 1476, probably a monk, named in the will of Thomas⁶ as "Domino Henry Brigg, monk." Blomefield says:

The will of Thomas de Beaupré (1452) leaves to John Brigg 10 l. per ann. out of his manor in Wesynham (which John married Elianore, dau. of said Thomas) till he should receive out of it the sum of 50 l., and then to his son Thomas, etc.

This is important as showing us which John married Eleanor de Beaupré, as there seems to have been some confusion on this question.

John Brygges bore the arms of Beaupré on an escutcheon of pretense, and his son Thomas quartered their arms and impaled the arms of his first wife (not a Beaupré, as has been stated by some genealogists).

Norris (eighteenth century) has a note "John Brygge of Salle died intestate, and admission was granted September 9, 1473, to William, Citizen and Alderman of Norwieh, and to Thomas Brigge of Salle." But this must be a mistake, for the will of his son Thomas says ". . . according to the terms of my father's will."

In his little booklet on Salle Church Mr. Parsons writes:

On the floor in the south aisle is the brass of John Brigg. It is a shroud brass: the figure is naked, but not a skeleton, as usual. The shroud hangs behind the body and is knotted at the top. The date of the brass is usually given as 1451 or 1454. But this must be wrong. The date of John Brigg's death is not known, but his son, Thomas Brigg (d. 1494), left £1 6s. 8d. for a marble stone for his father in Salle church.

The English inscription reads thus:

Here lyth John Brigge under this marbil ston
Whos soule our Lord JHU have mercy upon
For in this worlde worthyly he lived many a day
And here hys bodi ys burried and couched in clay
Lo frendis fre whatever ye be pray for me I yow pray
As ye me se in soehe degre so schall ye be anothis day.

Blomefield mentions this monument several times, ascribing it also to John Brygges, Esq. (d. 1454). What he tells of that latter John in Vol. IV, "History of Norfolk," is very interesting, and if his dates were not so perplexing I should feel certain that the John he speaks of in this early volume is the same John⁵ who married first Eleanor Beaupré, and second Margaret Rookwood. He makes this John Brygges a son of John atte Brygge and grandson of William, but it is far more likely that he belonged to a later generation. He says:

JOHN³ BRYGGES, Esq., his [John² atte Brygge's] son and heir, was a man of good estate in this county, as appears in his

will, dated 1454, in which he gave to Margaret his wife all his lands, faldcourses and watermills in Ewston and Suffolk, which of right were his in fee tail, and all his sheep there, for life; she being to leave the manor and full stock to Will Brygge, her son. His manor of Lynford, which he purchased of the executors of Sir Constantine Clyfton of Bukenham Castle, knt., his great friend, he ordered his executors to sell to the Prior of St. Mary at Thetford for 8 score marks, according to his agreement, out of which he assigned 40 marks to celebrate his anniversary in that monastery; every monk in priest's orders attending there to have 12d and each other 6d, as long as the money lasted. *Thomas*, his second son, was to have the other 6 score marks; but William his son and Margaret his wife were to have the custody of him until he was of age to be a priest, or if not, till he was 24 years old; Margaret his daughter was to have Illington Manor to her and her heirs, but if she died without heirs it was to be sold and disposed of to pious uses. *It appears that on his second marriage he removed from Salle to Thetford*, for he gave his house in Thetford, of her inheritance, to his second wife, *having settled his paternal estate at Salle upon his heirs male by Eleanor, his first wife*, and all his second wife's inheritance on her and her issue. In 1438 he was trustee of Bukenham's Manor in Old Bukenham. The free tenement or manor of Quidenham, which had been in a family of this name for a good while, came to this John, and was left by him to William his son, and continued in the family until about 1500. He lies buried in the south aisle of Salle Church. . . .

As the reader will see, this extract from the part of this will which Blomefield quotes relates to the children of this John's second wife, Margaret (who may well have been Margaret Rookwood, as property in *Euston* in *Suffolk* is willed to her — doubtless her dower; Margaret Rookwood came from Euston in Suffolk, according to various authorities). In this case the children I have already mentioned as the children of John⁴ Brygges were the children by his first wife, Eleanor Beaupré. In his Vol. II Blomefield gives a very interesting history of the Priory of the Virgin Mary and St. Andrew at Thetford, quotes from this will of John Brigge of Quiddenham, and gives the date as 1358. This date is obviously wrong, and the other may be also.

The children of JOHN BRYGGE, Esq. (will 1454), by his second wife, Margaret, were, according to this will and to other statements of Blomefield's:

- i. WILLIAM BRIGGS of Thetford. He is mentioned several times by Blomefield; was Mayor of Thetford in 1471 and again in 1480 and 1481 "and divers other times." He is the only one in the long list of mayors from 1307 to 1727 to be named as "Esquire."
- ii. THOMAS BRIGGS, clerk, under age in 1454.

THOMAS⁶ BRIGG, son of John⁵ Brygges, Esq., and Eleanor Beaupré, was the next lord of Salle. He married Margaret, daughter and co-heir of Thomas Monceaux, Esq., of Wood-Dalling, and relict of William Lumnor, Esq., of Mannington in Norfolk. He seems to have been a man of much piety and considerable estate. Edward IV came to the throne in 1461, and it appears that Thomas Brigg favored the Lancaster line and was for some time in disfavor. Mr. Parsons sends me the following incidental notices:

Patent Rolls — 1462: Commission to the Sheriff of Norfolk to inquire into the report that Thomas Brigge and Wm. Willy are stirring up insurrections and circulating false rumors within the city of Norwich and elsewhere in that county.

1482. "Commission," a certain discussion having arisen between William Lumnor on the one part and Thomas Brygge "gentilman" and Margaret his wife on the other, "to summon the parties and others and examine them and inquire into certain felonies, murders, trespasses and offenses committed by the said Thomas and Margaret late the wife of William Lumnor (Sr.), and certify to the King and council in the quinzaine of Midsummer next."

These difficulties with his stepson, William Lumnor, must have been settled amicably, as is shown by Thomas's very interesting will. Blomefield says that "Thomas Brygges of Salle was a great friend and doer for John Paston, Esq., by whose means he much advanced himself." Certainly his estates and worldly consequence had been

greatly augmented since the time of his grandfather Thomas (1444), as we see by comparing their wills. This Thomas died without issue.

WILL OF THOMAS⁶ BRIGG (1494)

I, Thomas Briggc, armiger, (*i.e.*, esquire) 21st May, 1494, make my testament and last will in the following manner. First I commend my soul to God Almighty, the Blessed Mary Virgin and all Saints, my body to be buried in the Church of the Friars Minor Norwich in the South part of the same church in front of the Altar within the parclose (screen). I will that my executors pay to the same house of Friars 100 marcs according to the terms of an indenture made between me & Thomas Clanmylle prior of the same house, on condition that the Friars pray for my soul and the souls of my friends.

I leave to the High Altars of the Churches of Manyngton, Itteryngham, Causton, Salle, Boton, Heydon, Dalling, Sharynton, Kerdeston & Fretenham, to each high altar 6s. 8d.; to each guild of which I am a brother 6s. 8d. to repair of church of Salle, £10: Manyngton; £10. Ittringham 20s., Wood Dalling £5, Fretenham 40s., Boton 20s., Sharynton 20s., Dersyngham, 40s. Sum total £14. To each house of the 4 orders of Friars in the City of Norwich 20s. to house of Carmelite Friars of Blakeney 40s. to house of Friars Minor of Walsyngham, £6.13.4. to the house of Lepers at the gate of S. Augustine, Norwich, £1.6.8. to each house of the rest of the houses for Lepers of Norwich, 3s. 4d. to the repair of the Cathedral Church of Norwich £10.

I will that to the house of Priory of Binham, on condition that the convent there immediately after my decease at every High Mass shall say one collect for my soul and the souls of my parents in perpetuity . . .

. . . I leave & give (or forgive) to Thomas Sefoule, esquire, of the debt which he owes me, on condition that he and his exors. pay to my exors. all the rest of the money and all the grain that he owes me, £30.

I leave and give (or forgive) to John Laverole of the debt he owes me on the aforesaid conditions £13.6.8.

I d^d to Edward Gryffyn of Causton, ditto, £6.13.4

I leave to the Prior of Bromholme together with the 33s. 4d. which he owes me £6.13.4.

I leave to John Watts of Salle and Edmund his son 40s.

I leave to Margaret my wife all my utensils at Manyngton and elsewhere and all my silver ealled the plate, except one piece silver gilt called "Ffendrell."

I leave to said Margaret to be raised and paid for my dues £40, on condition that she in no way disturb the execution of my will, & if she does so then my exors. shall dispose the £40 for the health of my soul.

I leave to Thomas Lumnor and Anne his wife, beyond the £47 already granted to them outside this will £53.

I leave to Elizabeth Lumnor £40, to John Lumnor £20, to Henry Lumnor £20.

I will that my exors pay to Joan Lumnor £40 according to a bond between us now in the possession of Joan. to Domino Henry Brigg, monk, £6.13.4 to Nicholas Lumnor, monk, £6.8 (?) to each servant being in my serviee in my house on the day of my death 13s. 4d.

I leave to Margaret, wife of Richard Browne the aforesaid piece of silver gilt ealled the ffendrell.

I will that my exors dispose according to their discretion in satisfaction to all those persons to whom I have done any injury, 100 mares.

I will that my exors forgive, according to their discreession, the debts of my most needy debtors, to the amount of £26.13.4 beyond the remissions above named.

I will that my exors dispose of £20 among the poor and needy as it shall seem best for the health of my soul.

I will that my exors. cause to be celebrated by fit priests for my soul and the souls of my friends 1000 masses at once after my death for which eelebrations I will that they pay £10.

I will that they provide one fit priest to celebrate in the Chapcl of St. James in the ehurch of Salle for my soul and the souls of Thomas Brigg & Margaret his wife (T. B. d. 1444) John Brigg & Margaret his wife. (fa. of Thos. Brigg d. 1444?) Robert Mounsews (Monceau) & Joan his wife, Henry Lumnor & Katerina his wife, Wm. Lumnor & lady Margaret Butvelen, for 10 whole years.

I will that they provide a fit priest to ecelebrate for my soul & the souls of John Brigg & Alianora his wife for two whole years.

I will that the convent of Friars Minor of Walsingham ecelebrate for my soul for one year, for 66s. 8d.

I will that my exors pay for one marble stone over my tomb 100s., for a marble stone for the tomb of John Brygg my father in Salle church £1.6.8; another stone for the tomb of Alianora my

mother in the church of St. Peter Mancroft Norwich £1.6.8: another stone for Matilad Monsews in the church of Woodallyng 13s 4d.; and for another one for the tomb of Thomas Monsews £1.6.8; of which the sum is £9.13.4

I leave to Margaret my wife 300 ewes of all my ewes being in my fold of Manyngton & all my logs in my fold at Ittryngham with 30 cows, 6 heifers & 2 bulls, on condition that my wife, or her exors. immediately after her death, shall deliver to William Lumnor her son & Margaret his wife or their heirs 100 sheep & 23 cows, 20 qrs. of barley, 10 qrs. of wheat, 10 qrs. of oats & so many horses & carts with their apparatus as may be worth 10 marcs, beyond the said sheep and quarters.

I leave to each of the sons and daughters of the said Wm. Lumnor & Margaret his wife 20 muttons; to each son & daughter of Thomas Lumnor & Jane his wife 30 muttons; to Margaret the wife of Richard Browne 200 muttons.

I will that Margaret my wife have my Manor called Noions, & my other Manor called Hawes in Salle during her life, & after her death I will that Noions manor remain according to the terms of the last will of Thomas Brigg my grandfather & the Manor called Hawes remain according to the terms of the will of John Brigg my father.

I will that my capital messuage in Salle and all those lands & tenements of mine in Salle, Heydon, Reephham, & Kerdeston which were lately of John Brigg my father, remain to Everard Brigg my brother, & his heirs male, provided that the said Everard pay to Margaret Brygg my sister 40 marcs & to Joan Brygg my sister 40 marcs; and if it happen that the said Everard die without male issue, then I will that the said messuage remain to George my brother & his heirs male lawful, on the same condition that he pay the 40 marcs or all the marcs then remaining due at the rate of 4 marcs p. a.

I will that the status (estate?) of the messuage & all lands, &c, remain in the hands of my feoffees until the said 40 marcs be paid so that if the said Everard or George fail in any payment of the 40 marcs, then my feoffees shall have power to expel them & to receive all the proceeds for the paying of the 40 marcs until they be fully paid. And if it happen that Everard & George die without any male heirs then the said messuage, &c, shall be sold, & I will that half of the money from the sale be spent in alms & other works of charity for the souls of my parents & friends & the other half equally divided between my sisters & their sons & daughters.

I will that the whole manor of Holwood in Wooddalling remain according to the terms of my father's will.

I will that Roger Bulwer, son of John Bulwer, by the advice of Henry Heydon, knight, & the discretion of my exors. & the exors of John Bulwer, have all those messuages, lands & tenements in Causton lately of Michael Harman & Robert Longe & afterwards of the said John Bulwer, lately assigned to me in exchange for the said manor of Holwood.

I will that all the land in Causton once called Randolph's & all those tenements & lands there, which I lately acquired of William Grene should be sold and the money for the sale be disposed in the performance of my present will.

I will that George Brigg my Brother have for himself all those lands & tenements which I lately acquired in Causton on condition that, in addition to the £40 bequeathed to Margaret my wife, the said George should pay to my exors. £20 as follows viz during 6 years after my death, & that the said George should pay Elizabeth my sister £20 legal money, viz 40 s. p. annum.

I will that my Garden, & all lands & tenements in Causton as above assigned to said George remain in the hands of my feofees until the said £20 are paid to my exors. & the said £20 to Elizabeth.

I will Margaret my wife have my Manor of Fretenham during her life, an annuity being paid out of it to John Skernyng & after her death I will that the whole of the said Manor remain to Sir Henry Heydon on condition that said Henry pay 400 mares, viz 200 mares to my exors. viz 50 mares within one month of my death, & after that 50 marc p. a.: & he shall pay to William Lumnor 200 mares viz. £20 p. a. till the whole is paid.

I will that the said Wm. Lumnor have the whole manor, late of Wm. Lumnor his father, in Manynton & the villages near, according to the will of the said Wm. Lumnor.

I will that Margaret my wife, after the death of John Sharynton & his wife, have all the messuages in Sharynton, Gunthorpe & Bathcle, which were once of the said John Sherynton.

I will that Richard Brown & Margaret his wife have those my lands & tenements in Boton & elsewhere which I bought of Oliver Calthorp & Agnes his wife.

The residue of my goods & chattels not above bequeathed, I give & bequeath to Richard Brown, gentleman, & Thomas Langdon whom I appoint my executors that they may dispose of them as they may think to please God & to be for the health of my soul,

according to the advice of Sir Henry Heydon & Philip Calthorp, esquire,

I leave to each exeutor for his labor and to each supervisor £10.

In testimony whereof I Thomas Brigg have set to this present testament my sign manual on the Monday on the morrow of the Festival of the Holy Trinity (*i.e.*, Trinity Monday) in the afore-said year.

Proved 12 November, 1494.

Mr. Parsons has furnished several interesting notes with this will which he so carefully copied from the original at the Probate Office in Norwich:

A testament was of personality; a *will* was of realty.

The Church of Friars Minor in Norwich is now gone and the land built over.

A marc equals 13s. 4d. 40 mares, £26.13.4.

The "High Altar" was the chief altar.

Anne Lumnor was probably the wife of Thomas Lumnor.

The Chapel of St. James is the S. Transept, built by the grandfather, Thomas (d. 1444)

The stone to "John Brygg my father" is still in Salle Church, with the shroud brass already described.

A Log: a sheep up to one year old, generally female, but sometimes male, in the old documents.

"Thomas Lumnor & Jane his wife:" *Jane* is the same as *Anne*.

Noions Manor: Nugoun's or Nogoun's or Nogones.

In his account of the Manor of Wood-Dalling, Blomefield writes:

Margaret, daughter of Thomas Monceaux, lord of Wood-Dalling, mar. (1) William Lumnor and (2) Thomas Brigge of Salle. Wm., son of William Lumnor and this Margaret, sold this lordship, as it seems, to Thomas Brigge, who in his will orders a gravestone to be laid over Matilda Monceaux, in the church of Wood-Dalling, she being, as I take it, sister of his wife and the other daughter and co-heir of Thos. Monceaux aforesaid.

It is interesting to know that this MARGARET, widow of THOMAS BRIGGE, survived still a third husband, for we have

a note of the will of Margaret, widow of Edmund Paston, 1504:

I will that my son, William Lumnor, have . . . in recompense of goods . . . that Thomas Brygge, late my husband, by his last will bequeathed to the said William Lumnor. (See will of Thomas Brigg, 1494.)

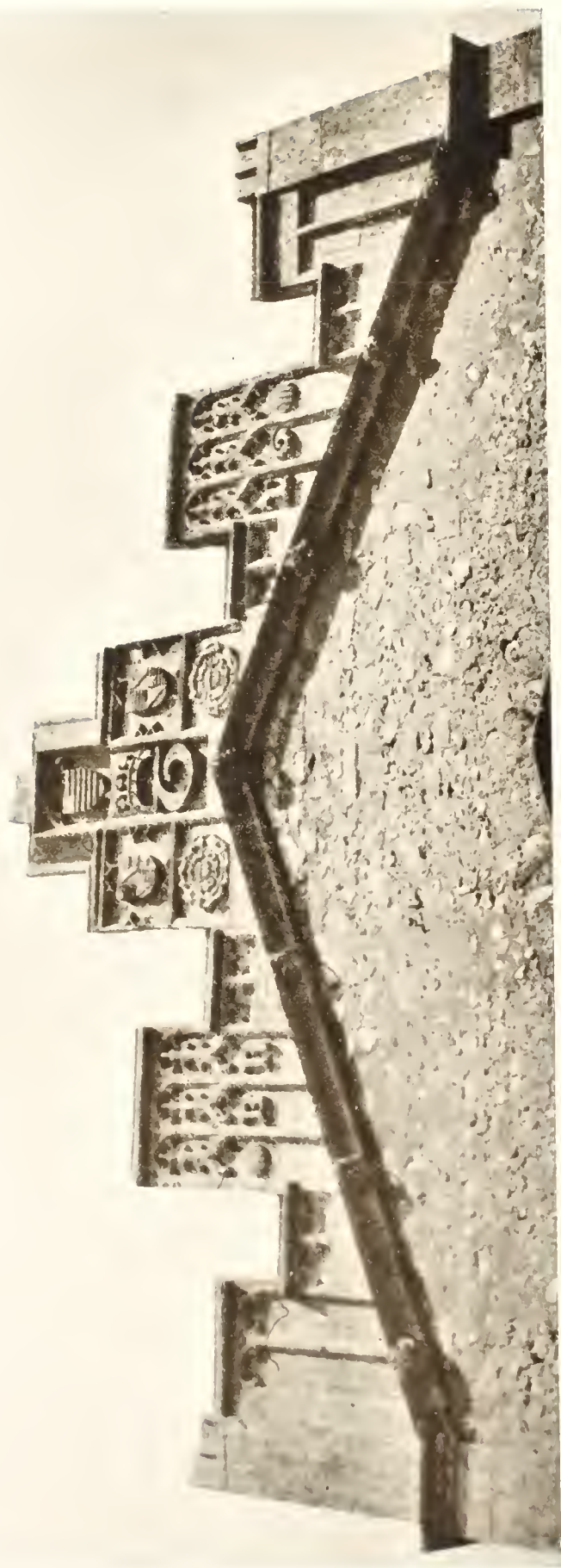
Mr. Parsons, who has made a very careful study of the memorials in Salle Church, says:

It was Thomas (1444) who built the S. Transept or Chapel of St. James and not Thomas (1494) as Blomefield says. Thomas (1494) probably added the façade of the S. Transept. The shields seem to prove that it was a son of John Briggs who added the façade. The arms are *Brigg* and *Beaupré* and *Rookwood*. They are very difficult to see from the ground, but I got onto the roof of the transept and held a looking-glass out from the battlement, at about 1 ft. from the shield, so could see them plainly. Some have supposed the device to be boars' heads or water bougets, but they are *rooks* (chess figures). Once I went to Staningfield in *Suffolk*, and there I saw on the tomb of Thomas Rookwood (about 1400) the very same figure, so there is little doubt that John Brigg married Margaret Rookwood for his second wife.

6. EBORARD (EVERARD or EDWARD⁶) BRYGGES (d. 1511/12), brother of Thomas⁶ and second son of John⁵ Brygg and Eleanor Beaupré, was the next to succeed to the estates at Salle and elsewhere, according to the will of his brother Thomas. He married Cecely More, daughter of Edward More of Wolterton, Esq.

Edward probably added the top story of the tower of Salle Church, for on its north side appear two "E's" with the big "T." crowned, which is found on the south façade, representing Thomas of Canterbury, the patron saint of Thomas Brigg, his grandfather.

The following reliable record, copied recently in the Record Office in London, verifies the relationships as we have stated them in our account of Thomas Brigg:



SOUTH TRANSEPT OF THE NORFOLK PARISH CHURCH, SALLE-REEPIAM. "THE GLORIFIED T IS FOR THOMAS OF CANTERBURY. THREE COATS
OF ARMS, BRIGGS, BEAUPRÉ AND ANOTHER"

From photographs furnished by the rector, Walter Langley Edward Parsons, M.A.

*Escheators' (enrolled) Account, Norfolk, Nov. 3, 4th Henry VIII.
(1512)*

Manor of Noyons (*i.e.*, Nugouns or Noions) in Salle, which Eborard Brygges, Knight, and others held in trust for Margaret, wife of Edmund Paston, Esq., Edmund Moor, gent., & Thomas Moor, son of the said Edmund, with the reversion to the use of Cecely Moor, whom he afterwards married, for her life, then to remain according to the will of John Brygges his father and Thomas Brygges his brother.

Eborard died 28th March 3rd Henry VIII (1511-12), leaving a son and heir, John, aged 11 years and more.

From this record it appears that Eborard Brygges was a *knight*. Margaret (Monceaux, Lumnor, Briggs) Paston died in 1504.

The Manorial Court Rolls of Kirkhall Manor name, 1506, 9 acres late in the farming of George Brigg. Probably this was George, brother of Thomas.⁶

Blomefield mentions THOMAS BRIGG, 1559, resident vicar of Necton.

The children of Edward⁶ Brigg and Cecely More, or Moor, are given by Blomefield as follows:

- i. JOHN BRIGG, d. 25 May, 3rd Edw. VI (1550); m. Dorothy, dau. of Thomas Quaplude.
- ii. HENRY BRYGGE (1501).
- iii. THOMAS BRYGGE, Esq., of North Wotton (1546); m. Elizabeth, dau. of Richard Mounteyn and Elizabeth, his wife.
- iv. WILL BRYGGS, prior of the Black Friars in Norwich (1507).
- v. SIR THOMAS BRIGGS, clerk.

There is a stone in the floor of the south aisle of Salle Church which probably marks the grave of this Edward and his wife. The brass is missing, but Blomefield tells us that in his day it bore the inscription:

Orate p. a'i'ab; Edwardi Briggs et Cecelie consortis sue, qui quidem. Edw. obit. 2 die mensis Apr. A.D. 1511.

The ancestors of Walter Briggs of Bucklesham, Suffolk, I firmly believe, are descended from the family of Briggs of Salle. They probably came to Suffolk before the family had achieved rank and prominence. They appear in Bucklesham early in the sixteenth century, and doubtless left Salle nearly a hundred years earlier. It is, of course, impossible to trace the numerous descendants of the younger branches of the family. I continue as briefly as possible the account of the Salle family, which is summed up in a single paragraph by Blomefield in Vol. VIII:

Nugoun's Manor . . .

Edward Brigg, brother of Thomas, married Cecelia, daughter of Edmund More of Wolterton in Norfolk, gent., and was father of John Brigg, (6) who died May 25, in the third year of Edward VI. (1550) and left by Dorothy, his wife, daughter of Thomas Quaplode, *James* (7) his son and heir, aged 18, who married Mary, daughter of Thomas Stotvill of Dalham in Suffolk, Esq.; he died on February 10, in the 6th of Edward VI. Mary, his only daughter and heir, was married to John Fountaine, Esq., and in her right he was lord of the manor, sergeant at law, and died in 1671, and was father of Brigg Fountaine, esq., of Salle, who died in 1661, and had by Johanna, his wife, daughter of Andrew Henley, esq., of Taunton-Dean in Somersetshire, James, his eldest son and heir, who married Anne, dau. of — Slaney of London, gent., and dying Nov. 2, 1690, was buried in this church, leaving Brigg Fountaine, Esq., his son and heir, who died without issue, at the Popinjay in Norwich, April 1729, and left his estate to his sister Dorothy, widow of John Repps, Esq., of Mateshall.

I quote the Fountaine connection, etc., partly to show the connection of the name Repps, which is mentioned more than once in Salle Church memorials, and which occurs again in relation to the Briggs family of Bucklesham in Suffolk.

Mr. Parsons writes me a correction to this statement of Blomefield's, in which he says:

Blomefield is quite wrong in saying that John Fountaine (Ffounteyn), who married Mary Stotevill, was sergeant-at-law and died in 1671. John and Mary were married in 1587 at Salle (see Regis-

ters). Mary died in 1605, and her husband died in 1621. There were *four* John Fountains at the same time. John, the husband of Mary, was son of Arthur Fountaine. John, who died in 1671, was the son of Arthur who was the 4th son of this Arthur Fountaine.

A few items gleaned elsewhere in regard to the persons mentioned above agree with this account:

Subsidy Roll of King Henry VIII.:

1544. John Brygge paid x s. subsidy or tax. This was the largest sum paid by anyone in Salle Parish at that date.

Blomefield:

1551. John Brygge died, and about that time is an entry in the Court Roll, "Land late of John Brygge."

Salle Registers:

1563. James Brygge, gent., buried, 13th of February.

Visitations of Norfolk, 1563, 1589, 1613:

"James Brigg of Salle in Norfolk mar. Mary, dau. of Thomas Stoteville (Stotvill) of Dallam (Dalham) in Suffolk." The Salle Registers agree, except that they show that James was buried at Salle in 1563.

Salle Registers:

1605. Marye ffunteyne, the wife of John ffunteyne, gent., and the daughter and heyer of James Brigge, gent., by Marye one of the daughters of Thomas Stuteville, of Deellham in the county of Suffolk, Esq., was buried the 23rd daye of Aprill.

As Mr. Parsons says, John Fountaine was probably the eldest son of Arthur Fountaine. The Fountains, "ffounteyns or Fountaines," are another old and very interesting family of Salle, going baek to the very early days, like the Briggses, and with a name probably of similar origin. There are a number of memorials to them in Salle Church, but the family has no genealogical interest for me.

Of Edward⁵ Brigg's other sons, Blomefield tells us (Vol. VI):

Thomas Brygge, Esq., of North Wotton, second son of Edward Bregge of Salle, bare arms of Brygge with the *canton sab*, in

1509 he had the manor of Rustcyns in Snetsham settled on him by Ric. Mounteyn, Esq., and Elizabeth his wife, and Ric. Crop-hill, on his marriage of their daughter.

Sir Thomas Brygge, clerk, . . . was rector of Brysingham in 1549, chaplain to the Lady Mary, sister of King Edward VI. and Queen after him; was Vicar of Kenninghall and in 1556, vicar of Windham.

There were many Thomas Briggses and several *Sir Thomas Briggses* who were priests. In 1551 one "Thomas Briggs was entered a student at Cambridge by Edward Briggs, gent." This could hardly have been Sir Thomas, but may have been one of his nephews. There seems to have been at least one Thomas dedicated to the priesthood in every generation of Briggses of Salle. For instance (and these are only a few of those mentioned) Blomefield says:

1422. Sir Thomas Briggs, Priest, died Rector of Brockdish.

1538. Brother Thomas Briggs S.T.B., Prior of the Black Friars and, after the Dissolution, rector of Brisingham.

1539. 23rd November: Thomas Briggs, clerk (Rectory Manor, Brisingham) on whose deprivation in 1554, 28 July, William Storme, priest, was instituted. Before the Dissolution he was a preaching friar of the convent in Norwich and was deprived by Queen Mary for being married.

Blomefield mentions, in his description of Salle Church, the various Briggs monuments, and adds:

Over the south door, the arms of Briggs, and in the windows here Beaupré and Calthorp and Briggs.

In a house, *late Briggs*, in Salle, were these arms: *Briggs* impaling Beaupré, Briggs impaling, quarterly, *gules*, on a chevron *argent*, three cinquefoils *azure* in the first and fourth, and *gules*, a chevron, between three boars' heads, couped, *argent*, *White*.

These arms give an interesting key to the marriages of the Briggses of Salle. Mr. Parsons sends me a fuller description of the window in this house, as recorded by Norris, about 1750, with his (Mr. Parsons') own notes appended:

Arms painted in the staircase window at Edw. Hase's house at Sall:

- (1) Brigg & Monseux (Thos. Brigg (d. 1494) mar. Margaret Lumnor, widow of William Lumnor & dau. of Thos. Monseux).
 - (2) Brigge & Beaupré (John Brigg, son of Thos. Brigg (d. 1444) mar. Eleanor Beaupré of Outwell Hall).
 - (3) Brigge & Tempest
 - (4) Brigge & Cobham
 - (5) Brigge & Bardolf
 - (6) Brigge & Crofts
- } [Mr. Parsons knows nothing of this]
- (7) Brigge & More (Eborard Brigg bro. of Thos Brigg (1494) mar. Cecelia More. He d. 1511.)
 - (8) Brigge & Stuteville James Brigge grandson of Eborard Brigge, mar. Mary, dau. of Thos. Stuteville, or Stotvill, of Dalham.
 - (9) Brigge with Beaupré in a scutcheon of pretense (*i.e.*, John Brigg above mar. Eleanor Beaupré, an heiress) impaling *gules* a fess between three water bougets *ermine*.
 - (10) Fountain & Brigg, a Lion rampant *argent* (probably refers to the marriage of John Fountain to Mary Brigge, in 1587, the last heiress of the Brigge family.) [Mr. Parsons cannot explain the lion.]

The house in which these shields were was pulled down and a new one built in 1761, but I have never heard of any of these valuable pieces of glass being preserved.

In Vol. I Blomefield tells us (no date given — after 1579): “William Drury of Besthorpe mar. Margaret, dau. and sole heir of William Briggs of Whitwell in Norfolk.” And in Vol. II he says: “Besthorpe. — Manor of New Hall, erected by the Drurys. In the windows are the arms of Drury with 1593 under them, and *Drury* impaling the arms” of four other families, including “Briggs, *gul*, 3 bars *gemelle or* a canton *sable*.”

CHAPTER II

ANCESTRY OF WALTER BRIGGS OF SCITUATE

STEPHEN¹, NYCOLAS², THOMAS³, WALTER⁴

In the preface of this book I give some account of the research which led to the discovery of Walter Briggs, father of my immigrant ancestor. We first found his name in the Chancery Proceedings, and this reference led us into Suffolk, to the little town of Bucklesham, where we traced Walter's ancestry back for several generations. Mr. Bower Marsh, who is probably the ablest genealogist in Great Britain, assures me after months of research that there is no doubt of Walter's direct descent from Stephen Briggs, who was living in Bucklesham in 1524 and died there in 1539.

As I have said before in my preface, Bucklesham and Salle are both in the diocese of Norwich, though Bucklesham is in Suffolk and Salle is in Norfolk. Most of the manorial families of our name in Norfolk and Suffolk, as well as many families of *Briggs* in other parts of England, trace their origin to Salle. After a careful study of names, dates and other circumstances, I have no doubt that this Bucklesham family originated in Salle, and I have therefore given a history of the ancient family of *Briggs of Salle* in the previous chapter.

The counties of Norfolk and Suffolk are embraced in the ancient division of the country called East Anglia. Suffolk is divided into East and West, with Ipswich the county seat for the East division. The town of Bucklesham lies near Ipswich, somewhat to the northwest. Ipswich is today a busy commercial town, but there are still evidences of its antiquity. The White Horse Inn recalls Mr. Pickwick's encounter with Mrs. Bardell; and one of the ancient houses still standing is a unique example of ornamental woodwork and pargeting. Norwich, the county seat of

Norfolk, is a fine old East Anglian town, with an imposing cathedral and a castle. We visited many villages in this part of England in our search for early records. East Dereham, where some of the Briggses lived in early days, is an attractive town; here we saw the house in which George Borrow was born and lived and the grave of the poet Cowper, but we found no records in the parish church of any special interest to us. Hingham, which is also in Norfolk, interested us especially, as so many of our ancestors came from there.

East Anglia extends to the coast, and some of the early emigrants to New England, among them some of my own ancestors, sailed from the ports of Great Yarmouth, Felixstowe and Ipswich. Ipswich, which lies near the mouth of a river leading to the sea, was once a considerable port.

The parish records of Bucklesham and Kirton before the year 1678 must have been lost or mislaid. The vicars were responsible for keeping the records of their parishes, and their families did not always pass them on to their successors after they died. Occasionally one turns up in the attic of an old house or among some collection of papers in a church or court where it had been deposited with the vicar's papers. In tracing my ancestry I have had to resort to all records available. My ancestors Walter and Thomas Briggs were *copyholders*, and copyholders held their lands by certain services of rents to the Lord of the Manor. When a tenant was first admitted, an entry to that effect was made on the Rolls and a "copy" was given to the tenant. We made an exhaustive search for the court records of Bucklesham, but these had been preserved only from 1715; however, we were more fortunate with the Manor Rolls, as we shall show later.

The Suffolk Feet of Fines shows that "Walter Brydges, gent, and Joan his wife sold land in Stanton to Henry Frost, Trinity 34 Henry VIII [1542], for £40;" and again, "Walter Bryges and Joan his wife sold land in Hartest, Michaelmas, 37 Henry VIII [1545] for £80."

Mr. Bower Marsh says:

Walter Briggs lived in the Ipswich half of Suffolk, while Stanton and Hartest are both in the Bury half. These sales were, in the early sixteenth century and before, near Bury. The earliest record at Bucklesham is of Stephen Briggs in 1524; but at the same time, a Stephen Briggs (not necessarily the same) was living at Gorleston, in North Suffolk.

The spelling Brydges, Bryges and various other forms are interchangeable with Brigges or Briggs in many of the old documents. In quoting from these documents I have not edited these inconsistencies, though it is possible that in a few cases my copyist may have done so.

1. STEPHYN¹ BRYGGES of Bucklesham (who died about 1539) married MARGERYE —, who survived him, as did his sons Nycholas Brygges and Philippe Briggis (under 20 years of age in 1536), and daughter Johan Bryggis.

On 7 May 1535, John Wode of Bucklesham made his will, proven 17 July 1535, in which he made Stevyn Brigges of Bucklesham one of his residuary legatees.

According to the Subsidy Rolls of Bucklesham, Stephen Briggs paid subsidy for land in Bucklesham in 1524. He died in 1539, leaving this land to his son Nicholas, who paid subsidies in 1543 and 1545.

From the will of Stephyn Brygges of Bucklesham I have extracted the following:

18 Nov. 1536

My soul to our Blessed Lady & all the saints in Heaven; my body to be buried where it please God.

To the high altar for my tithes and offerings forgotten iii^s iiij^d.

To my wife Margerye half my house and lands and all manner of cattels & household goods moveables and unmoveable as horse, neats, sheep, swine, corn and pullery.

To my son *Nycholas Brygges* the other half.

Margery my wife shall take Edmund Purchard & Nicholas Bemond & two of the tenants of the lord's soil & they to part my goods indifferently; & *Nicholas* my son to choose

If my wife do marry, my son Philippe Briggis to have her part in the house & land at 20 years of age



SOUTH TRANSEPT WINDOW, SALLE CHURCH,
MARGARET BRIGG



HOTEL MEURICE, RUE DI RIVOLI, PARIS, WHERE THE CABOTS
HAVE STAYED SINCE 1830 AND THE BRIGGSSES SINCE 1890

If she do not marry she to have her part for life & after to her children and mine and their heirs.

Wife Margery to give to every one of her children xx^s

My son Nieholas to give to Johan Bryggis his sister xiii^s iiii^d & to Margarette Bryggis xiii^s iiii^d

Wife Margery & son Nieholas to pay debts at Michaelmas & to fine with the lord of soil & to pay rents half & half & to give to each of my godchildren xii^d

My land in Haston belonging to Aspelye Hall to remain in the hands of my wife & my son Nicholas "till it be worn out" Nieholas Fatter & Thomas Roblat to be arbitrators between them to see it indifferently parted, they to have iii^s iiii^d each

They to give to every priest that sing mass iiii^d & to see me honestly brought to ground "deseyring you to be good and rightfull to my son Nicholas that he may have his part indifferently"

Residue to my wife Margery & son Nicholas, exors:

Supervisors: Edmunde Punehard & Nicholas Bemonde; to each xiii^s iiii^d

Wit: Sir Robert Chamberleyn, John Baker, John Atkynson

Pd: 1 March 15³⁹/₄₀ by both exors:

Arch^{vs} of Suffolk 13/195

Children of Stephyn¹ Brygges and Margerye —:

2. i. NICHOLAS² (NYCHOLAS or NYCOLAS) BRYGGES, b. about 1515.
- ii. PHILIPPE BRIGGES (under 20 in 1536). (Phyllip Briggs of Dovercourt, Essex, made his will 23 June 1576, pd. 21 July 1576. He mentions son William, son John, dau. Betteris and wife's dau. Susan Blagg to whom he leaves "a bullock called Tomfole," etc. It is possible that this is Philip, son of Stephen Briggs of Bucklesham, who was a boy when his father made his will in 1536. Dovercourt is in the extreme northeast corner of Essex and so only a few miles from Bucklesham. A search of the Essex Courts failed to reveal any other *Briggs* in this neighborhood.)
- iii. JOHAN BRYGGIS.
- iv. MARGARETT BRYGGIS.

2. NICHOLAS² BRIGGES (BRYGGES) (1. *Stephyn*¹) born about 1515. As we have said, this Nicholas paid sub-

sidies in 1543 and 1545. The next Briggs on the Subsidy Rolls for Bucklesham is Thomas Briggs, in 1581, when the assessment is the same as for Nicholas. The Feet of Fines gives no evidence of a Thomas Briggs buying land in the interval. Nicholas was probably just of age, over 20, when his father Stephen made his will, 18 Nov. 1536 (pd. 1 Mar. 1539). Nicholas made returns in lands for 1545, 1546, 1547, 1549, 1568, 1576; and there being no other returns of any Briggs until Thomas, in 1581, Mr. Bower Marsh says, "clearly shows that Nicholas died while Thomas was an infant, and that during the minority the lands were possessed by someone else." In 1610 Thomas Briggs was replaced on the Subsidy Rolls by his son Walter.

NICHOLAS² BRIGGES married ELIZABETH —, who survived him, and later she married John Ring (Ryndge).

Children of NICHOLAS² BRIGGES and Elizabeth —:

3. i. THOMAS³ BRIGGS.
- ii. MARGARETE BRIGGES.

The will of John Ryndge of Bucklesham, dated 17 Apr. 25 Eliz. (1583), was probated in May of the same year and recorded in the Archives of Suffolk. He was the second husband of Elizabeth, widow of Nicholas Briggs, and leaves to his wife Elizabeth, to his son John Rindge, to his "son-in-law" (stepson) Thomas Brigges, and to his daughter-in-law Margaret Brigges.

On 26 July 1583, Elizabeth Rindge of Bucklesham, widow, made her will, which was probated 29 Mar. 1586, at Ipswich, by her daughter Margarete. In it she gives —

To the poor of Bucklesham 12d; To my son John Rindge best new featherbed, bedding, &c, best brass pot of three, table with a Locke now standing in the parlour, one great new chair. I give unto Thomas Brigges my sonne my earthe plowe and harrowes with all the other furniture thereto belonging, also unto him a paire of quearnes nowe standing in the barne. The residue of all my goodes and cattell moveable and unmoveable unbequeathed I give unto Margaret Brigges my daughter whome I make my soul executrix . . . and also to cause to be paid all such legacies and debtes as I am charged withall by my late husband John Rindges will.

From Subsidy Rolls, Exchequer, Colneis Hundred:

181-234 . . .	34/35 H VIII (1543)	Bucklesham Nicholas Briggs in Landes by yer ii ⁱⁱ ^d .
269 . . .	37 H. VIII (1545)	Bucklesham Nicholas Briggs in Landes xx ^s ii ^d Felixstow Robt Cowpar in Landes xxvi ^s viii ^d — ii ^s viii ^d
182-370 . . .	18 Eliz (1576)	Felixstow Robert Cowpar in goods xiii — xxi ^s viii ^d Margaret Cowpar goods iii.
182-378 . . .	23 Eliz (1581)	Bucklesham Thomas Bridges lands xx ^s xvi ^d
182-378 . . .	23 Eliz (1581)	Henry Rippes goods Naeton and Margery Cowper Kyrtton lands xx ^s .

3. THOMAS³ BRIGGES (*Stephyn*¹, *Nicholas*²), grandfather of Walter¹ Briggs of Scituate, the emigrant, describes himself in his will, which he signed 20 Feb. 1613, as of Bucklesham in the County of Suffolk and Diocese of Norwich. He bequeaths his property to his son Richard and Joan his wife and to his son WALTER and ANNE his wife.

We do not know whom Thomas³ married, nor whether he married more than once. In 1563 one Thomas Briggs married a Margaret Youngman, in Norfolk; a Thomas Brigs married Joan Garter, 17 June 1576, at Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk. (St. James Parish Register.) Walter⁴ Briggs, son of Thomas³ Briggs, refers in his will to "property left me in his will by Henry Rippes my uncle," and Henry Rippe's will refers to Walter⁴ Brigges as "my godson." It seems reasonable to suppose that *Thomas³ Brigges married a sister of this Henry Rippes, or Henry Rippes may have married Thomas's sister.* The name Rippes (Repp, Reppes, Reppys, Rippe) is a common one in Salle.

The will of Henry Rippes is interesting, for it mentions THOMAS³ BRIGGS and both of his sons. He appears to have left them a considerable property, which is mentioned in later wills.

From the will of Henry Rippes, of Naeton, County Suffolk, Yeoman, the following is extracted:

29 Oct. 1601

To my sister Anne Rippes tenement ealled "Dottes" and 2 acres of copyhold land in Naeton.

I give unto WALTER BRIGGES my godson the son of *Thomas Brigges of Bucklesham* all the lands free & copy wth all the houses & appertenaunces there unto belonging wch I bought of Thomas Micklefeld of Walton seituete in Naeton & Levington to him & his heires for ever

I command Richard Beading my brother to pay William Beading the son of Wm. B. dec^d £10 & to Katherine Beading dau^r of Wm. B. £5 & to Dorotheie Beading her sister £5

All the rest of my goodes moveables and unmoveables not bequeathed I give unto THOMAS BRIGGES of Bucklesham & doe ordeyn and make the aforesaid Thomas Briges my executor & I give unto him my tenne shepe & my fower lambes & all the rest of my goodes unbequeathed in my last will . . . seeing my body buryed & my funerall expenses discharged

Wit: Peter Marsh, Richard Brigges, Richard Marshe

Arch^{vs} of Suffolk 41/101

The Feet of Fines, H. 6 James I (1608), says that *Thomas Briggs* bought land of James Hubbard at Monk's Ely Parish; and H. 7 James I, "W. Bredge" bought land from *Thomas Bredge* at Kedington Parish.

Subsidy Rolls of the Exchequer, Colneis Hundred:

182-378 . . 23 Elizabeth (1581) Bucklesham *Thomas Bridges*,
Landes xx^s xvi^d

WILL OF THOMAS³ BRIGGS OF BUCKLESHAM
PR. MAY 1614

Arch. Suff. Bk 47 fo. 3.

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN The Thre and twentieth daye of Februarye one thousand six hundreth & thirten and in the Eleventh yere of the Reigne of oner soueraine Lord King Jeames by the grace of god &c I Thomas Briggs of Bucklesham in the Cowntie of Suff. and Diocese of Norwieh yeoman being sick in bodeye but yet of perfect remembrance god be thanked forsaking all former wills and testaments doe make and ordayne this my last will and testament in manner . . . following, First I bequeath my soule into the hands of the blessed Trinitye hoping

to be saved by the blood of Jhesus Christ my Saviour and Redemer, my bodye I will that it be buried at the discretion of myne Executors hereafter named. Item I will gyve and bequeath unto Richard Briggs my sonne all my freehold lands and tenements wth the appurtenances wch I latelye purchased of Nicholas Bobbett and also all my freehold lands and tenements wth there appurtenances whatsoever which I purchased of Josua Herding all lying and being in Bucklesham aforesaid, To have and to hold to the said Richard Briggs and Joane his wife so longe as she kepeth herself sole (and unmarried after the decease of the said Richard) and to the heires of the sayd Richard for ever. Item I will give and bequeath unto the sayd Richard my sonne all my coppye hold Lands and tenements whatsoever wth there appurtenances scituate in Bucklesham aforesayd, wch I bowght and purchased of John Humfrye of Ipswich Clothier which were sometye the Lands of Philip Briggs To have and to Hould to the said Richard Briggs and Joane his wife, so long as she kepeth herself sole and unmarried after the decease of the said Richard and to the heires of the sayd Richard for ever. Item I will give and bequeath unto the sayd Richard my sonne, the one half of all my monye plate goodes and chattells whatsoever my debts payd my Legacies performed my funerall discharged and my will proved. And I gyve unto him the sayd Richard my cart and plough and all the collers and trayce belonging unto the same, Provided allwayes and my true intent meaning and will is that the sayd Richard his heires executors and assignes shall ever hereafter suffer *Walter Brigges* my sonne *Anne his wife* the heires of the sayd Walter and ther heires peacably and quietly to have . . . and enioye to them and Every of them all such Lands and tenements goods and Chattells which in this my last will and testament hereafter following are gyven and bequeathed unto them or eyther of them And if the sayd Richard Briggs or his heires or any other person or persons clayming from, by or under him the sayd Richard or his heires shall hereafter disturb make clayme to sue or make any title to any of the Lands tenements goods or Chattells wch in this my last will and testament hereafter following are . . . bequeathed unto the sayd *Walter Briggs* or *Anne his wife* or the heires of the sayd *Walter* then I will gyve and bequeath all the aforesaid lands and tenements both free and Copy to him the sayd Richard Joane and the heires of the sayd Richard before gyven and bequeathed and also all the goods and Chattells to him the said Richard before in this my sayd last will

and testament . . . bequeathed unto the sayd *Walter Briggs* and his heires for ever so that the sayd *Richard* his wife and heiers shall not in any wise have any benefit by this my sayd will and testament. Item I will and bequeath unto the sayd *Walter Briggs* my sonne all the rest of my Coppy hould lands and tenements whatsoever before not gyven and bequeathed scituate and being in Bucklesham aforesayd to have and to hould to the sayd *Walter Briggs* and *Anne his wife* as long as she shall keep herself sole and unmarried after the decease of the sayd *Walter* and to the heires of the sayd *Walter* for ever. Item I will and bequeath unto the sayd *Walter* my sonne the one half of all my mony plate goods and chattells whatsoever my Debts paid my legacies performed my funerall discharged and my will proved. Provided allwais and my true intent meaning and will is that the sayd *Walter* his heires executors and assignes shall suffer the sayd *Richard Briggs* my sonne and *Joane his wife* and the heires to the sayd *Richard* & ther heires for ever peacably and quietly to have . . . and enioy to them and every of them all such Lands and tenements goods and Chattels which in this my said last will and testament before are gyven and bequeathed unto them or any of them, And if the sayd *Walter* or his heires or any other person or persons elayming from by or under him the sayd *Walter* or his heires shall hereafter disturbe . . . sue or make any title to any of the lands tenements goods or Chattells which in (This my sayd last will and testament before are gyven and bequeathed unto the sayd *Richard Briggs* then I will . . . and bequeath all the aforesayd lands and tenements to him the sayd *Walter Anne* and the heires of the sayd *Walter* before given and bequeathed and also all the goods and Chattells to him the sayd *Walter* in this my sayd last will and testament before bequeathed) unto the sayd *Richard Briggs* and his heires for ever so that the sayd *Walter* his wife and heires shall not in any wise have any benefit by this my last will and testament. Item I do gyve . . . and bequeath unto the poore people of Bucklesham aforesayd fortye shillings of lawfull mony of England to be distributed by myne executors hereafter named. I doe make and ordaine my sayd two sonnes *Richard Briggs* and *Walter Briggs* Executors of this my last will and testament. And further I doe publish and acknowledge this to be my last will and testament in the presence of thes persons whose names are underwritten (*Thomas Briggs* his marke) in the presence of *Jeames Armond Clerke* *Nicholas Futter* *Anthony Payne* his marke



CABOT COAT OF ARMS FROM ORIGINAL PAINTED ON SAMUEL CABOT'S "CHARIOT
HE BOUGHT IN ENGLAND, 1851"

See Cabot Genealogy

Probatum fuit huiusmodi testamentum apud Gipwiccum coram venerabili viro magistro Johanne Aldrich in Artibus magistro et per totum Archinatu(?) Suff. Commisario legitime constituto quinto die mensis Maij Anno Domini Millesimo Sextentesimo decimo quarto Ac per ipsum approbatum et insinuatum proque viribus et valore emsdem testamente legitime pronuntiatum et declaratum Et Comissa fuit Administracio omnium et singulorum bonorum etc. dicti defuncti Richardo Briggs et Gualtero Briggs executoribus in dicto testamento nominatis et in debita Juris forma Juratis etc. salvo Jure cuiuscumque etc.

Inventarium bonorum exhibitur

Children of Thomas³ Briggs and wife — Rippes (?):

4. i. RICHARD BRIGGS, b. about 1583.
5. ii. WALTER⁴ BRIGGS, SR., father of Walter the emigrant, b. about 1590.

4. RICHARD BRIGGS, born about 1583, son of *Thomas*³ and heir to half of his property, was uncle of my ancestor, WALTER⁵ BRIGGS, *who emigrated to New England*. Richard is mentioned with his wife Joan in the will of his father, 1614, but we do not know her family name. His name appears in various records:

29 Oct. 1601, he was witness to the will of his uncle, Henry Rippes.

Burgh Parish Registers (Ipswich Library) give the following:

27 Apr. 1608, Ann Bridges, dau of Richard Bridges, bap.

21 Mar. 1610/11, Mary Bridges, dau of Richard Bridges, bap.

20 Sept. 1629, Johan Cracknell and Ann Bridges, mar.

3 Sept. 1640, Johan Cracknell bur.

Chancery Proceedings, James I:

9 Feb., 1617. Bill against Richard Brigges of Kirton Co. Suffolk, yeo. & Walter Brigges of Bucklesham Co. Suff: yeo.

Richard Brigges on the Annunciation 6 years ago borrowed £40 on interest from Thom^s Wade of London, gent: and with *Walter Brigges* became bound to him in the sum of £80. . . . C 3 300/86

As this bill is the only document on this matter (and it is in fragmentary condition) it was evidently settled out of court. It was through the discovery of this document in

the Chancery Proceedings of James I, in the Chancery Record Office, London, that we traced the family of Walter Briggs. On 10 Jan. 1619/20, Richard Briggs, yeoman, made a deposition at Ipswich in which it is stated that he was then about 37 years old. The deposition concerns some dispute between two of his neighbors.

Ship Money Returns:

29 March 1640 Hasketon Richard Briggs 8^s

25 Mar. 1640 Leverton Richard Briggs, outdweller, 8^d

The name of this Richard appears several times on the rolls of the Manor of Walton-cum-Trimley. He died about 1648.

Children of Richard Briggs and Joan —:

- i. ANN BRIDGES, b. 1608; m. (1) Johan Cracknell; (2) Robert Yorke.
- ii. MARY BRIDGES, b. 1610/11. (The Hasketon Parish Register records the marriage of John Watson and Mary Briggs, 27 Oct. 1633.)

5. WALTER⁴ BRIGGS, SR. (*Thomas*³, *Nicholas*², *Stephyn*¹), father of my American ancestor, was born about 1590, according to a deposition taken at Ipswich, 10 Jan. 1619/20, in which "Walter Briggs of Bueklesham, Suffolk, aged 30, or thereabouts" mentions John Fletcher, the lawful parson of the parish church of Kirton, and Richard Smart, whom he had known twelve years.

WALTER⁴ BRIGGS, SR., married, first, ANNE COOPER, and by her he had three children, WALTER⁵, Elizabeth and Ann. She was alive in 1619, but may have died in that year at the birth of her younger daughter. She was daughter of JOHN COOPER (who died in 1589) and co-heir to his estate with her sisters Judith, wife of Henry Borrett, and Joan, wife of Simon Cumberland (Commerland). Symon Commerland mentions his wife Joan, sons Symon, John and Henry, and his daughters Bridget, Katherine and Emme. We see the name Judith (Cooper) Borrett in the first of the two Feet of Fines quoted previously, and we know that *Walter* Briggs was mentioned as supervisor in the will of Henry Borrett.

The Court Rolls of Walton-cum-Trimley give interesting evidence that the family of Cooper (or Cowper — Mr. Bower Marsh tells me that these spellings were interchangeable) owned property in that jurisdiction.

Walton cum Trimley — Court Roll 20. 1581-1590

[Translation]

22 Ap. 27 Eliz. (1585)

Admission of Margaret, wife of Peter Cowper to lands under the will of her father, Thomas Blackman.

20 Sep. 27 Eliz. (1585)

Robert Cowper surrenders his lands to the use of himself and Alice Haurys whom he intends to marry.

19 Sep. 28 Eliz. (1586)

Admission of Thomas Cowper to certain lands on the surrender of Leonard Wright, clerk.

11 Mar. 31 Eliz. (1588/9)

Recites that on the Eve of St. Peter ad Vincula 2 Hy. VIII. (31 July, 1510) Isabel, late wife of John Knights, & George Knights surrendered land in Felixstowe to the use of John Cowper and Agnes his wife. The homage present that Agnes survived John Cowper and died about 50 years past, and that Robert Cowper, youngest son of Robert Cowper, youngest son of the said Agnes is the heir — Robert Cowper is admitted.

N.B. Court of John Ireton, Esq., holden 14 Oct., 1652

The homage present that the custom of the Manor is that molland increasc land and marshland descend to the *elder brother*, and lands held by copy of court roll descend to the *youngest son*.

23 Ap. 26 Eliz. (1584)

The jurors present that Robert Cowper died since last Court and upon his deathbed surrendered into the lord's hands by the hands of William Serutton bond tenant in the presence of Robert Doble(?) & John Flynt bondtenants all his copyhold lands to the use of his will.

Mich: 14 Jas. I.

Richard Briggs (1617) *v.* Walter Briggs Anne his wife, Henry Borrett Judith his wife, Simon Cumberland Joan his wife, 1 mesuage 1 garden 2 orchards 26 acres land 2 of meadow 12 of pasture, in Kirton & Bucklesham Richard Briggs paid £41.

(This is evidently a sale to Walter Briggs' brother Richard of land inherited by the heirs of — Cooper, the father of Ann Cooper, Walter's first wife.)

Mich: 21 Jas: 1.

Walter Briggs *v.* Edmund Randes & Elizabeth his wife 1 messuage, 1 garden in Naeton Walter Briggs paid £60.

WALTER⁴ BRIGGS of Bucklesham was supervisor under the will of Henry Borrett of Felixstowe (his brother-in-law), which will was probated 23 May 1624. There is interesting evidence that WALTER⁴ purchased another small piece of land, shortly before he died in this same year, to which he refers in his will and through which we have been able to trace several of his heirs. This we have from the Court Rolls of the Manor of Walton-cum-Trimley, Suffolk, which include separate rolls for Walton, Trimley and Felixstowe.

The Court Rolls of Walton-cum-Trimley give ten names on the marginal headings, all sworn at an inquest for Trimley holden 31 Aug. 1624, at the General Court at Walton. The first name is Daniel Cottyn (*sic*) gent.; the fifth is *Walter Briggs*. On this same roll is a reference to the court held on 21 May 1624, in which is recorded the surrender of Thomas Beale, to the use of *Walter Briggs* and his heirs, certain lands, etc.:

Court General Friday, Whit week, 21st May 1624

[N.B. The initial "C" of "Curia" has a very fine pen-and-ink sketch of birds on a tree, with delicate leaves and fruit.]

Surrender of Thomas Beale to the Use of Walter Briggs and his Heirs.

To this court came Thomas Beale copyhold tenant of this manor and in full court before the whole homage surrendered into the hands of the lord by the hands of John Howard gentleman his steward one piece of land containing by estimation half an acre lying in a certain Close called Tyle Carr Close in Kirton (which the said Thomas Beale took up to himself and his heirs of the surrender of Daniel Collwyn gent.) to the use of WALTER BRIGGS his heirs and assigns forever,

Which same Walter comes here into court before the whole homage and seeks to be admitted tenant thereof, to whom the steward delivered seisin. And he gives to the lord a fine 3s 4d, and he has done fealty and is admitted tenant.

And whilst the same court is sitting the said Walter Briggs in full homage surrendered as well the said piece of land and all his copyhold tenements held of the manor to the use of his will.

[N.B. On this same roll, on another membrane referring to the court held at this time (at which Thomas Beale surrendered his lands to the use of WALTER⁴ BRIGGS), the initial "C." for "Curia" contains a vigorous sketch of a bearded man in the clothes of the period, smoking a pipe. This is of particular interest because of the close association of the Cavendish family with Trimley, which village they filled with mariners and retainers who had accompanied Cavendish on his voyage round the world.]

In 1617 John Gage of Falkenham, County of Suffolk, set aside £200 in his will for the education of his sons Thomas and Edmund to the age of twenty-one; and for the £200 his wife, who is to hold it in trust, was to give bond to Thomas Cottenham of Falkenham and *Walter Bridge* of Bucklesham, and Walter Bridge is named as one of the overseers of the will.

Subsidy Rolls, Exchequer — Colneis Hundred:

472 . . 8 Jas. I. (1610) Bucklesham *Walter Briggs*, iii^{li} viii^s

From The Feet of Fines, Reigns Jas. I. and Charles I. (1603–1642)

(The Feet are brief notes on record in the Court of Common Pleas of sales of land, effected by agreement before the judges, the Plaintiff being the buyer and the Deforciant being the seller. There are four of these Feet to which *Walter Briggs*, Sr. was a party. Unfortunately two of them now exist only in the index.)

Term	Plaintiff	Deforciant	Parish
E. 13 Jas. I.	Tho. Bridges	Jas. Hubbard	Monks Ely
H. 7 "	W. Bredge	Thos Bredge	Kedington
E. 8 "	W. Bridge	Fras. Chopin	Haverill
M. 11 "	John Cole	W. Bridge	"
M. 12 "	Jo: Maysent	W. Bridge	"
M. " "	W. Bridge	Jo: Yonges	Wortham
E. 13 "	Henry Borrett	Walter Bridges	Kirton
" " "	Walter Bridges	Henry Borrett	"
M. 14 "	Ri. Briggs	Walter Briggs	"
H. 15 "	Jo: Westropp	Tho: Bridge	Hinden
M. 17 "	Ri. Miller	Tho: Bredge	Haverill
M. 22 "	<i>Walter Briggs</i>	Edm. Randes	Nacton
M. 1 Chas. I.	W. Bridge	Hy. Nunne	Wortham
E. 6 "	"	Rob ^t Jackson	"

Mr. Bower Marsh says, "WALTER⁴ BRIGGS was a man of considerable means. He had property in Bucklesham, Nacton, Levington and Kirton, and was sufficiently esteemed by his neighbors to be given positions of trust." Information as to his activities, his genealogy and his possessions has been obtained only after diligent search among the local registers and the Court Rolls of the Manors, the Suffolk Feet of Fines, Depositions, etc. The Court Rolls of the Manors are in private hands and some of them were almost impossible of access. The Court Rolls of Bucklesham and Nacton, in the possession of Messrs. Cobbold Sons & Mennier, were found to be of too late a date for our purpose; other Rolls which we consulted are those of the Manors of Falkenham, 1639-52; Grimston Hall, Trimley, 1606-12; Walton with Trimley, 1598-1602; also the Rolls of Orwell Park, which, with the Walton Rolls, were very voluminous.

Henry Rippes of Nacton, uncle of Walter⁴ Briggs, dated his will 29 Oct. 1601. He gives to his sister, Ann Rippes, copyhold land in Nacton, to WALTER⁴ BRIGGES, "my Godson, son of Thomas Brigges of Bucklesham, all the lands, free and copy, with all the houses and appurtenances therunto belonging which I bought from Thomas Micklefeld of Walton, situate at Nacton and Levington, to him and his heirs forever." After making other bequests, he gives the rest of his goods, "moveables and unmoveables" not otherwise bequeathed, unto THOMAS³ BRIGES of Bucklesham, whom he also makes his executor; and further gives him "my tenne shepe & my fower lambes & all the rest of my goodes unbequeathed." In other words, we find that THOMAS³ BRIGGS and his son WALTER⁴ were the principal heirs of this Henry Rippes, which leaves little doubt in our minds that THOMAS³ BRIGGS married a sister of Henry Rippes, who was mother of WALTER⁴ BRIGGS.

The name Rippes, as I have said before, was a common one in this part of Suffolk, and also in Salle in Norfolk. I have copies of two old wills of this name, probably concerning ancestors of Henry Rippes:



RUINS OF COUCY-LE-CHATEAU, VISITED BY COLONEL AND MRS. BRIGGS AND
CABOT IN 1920

(See page 1100)

Photograph by Mary Cabot Briggs



HERMITAGE CASTLE, ON THE SCOTTISH BORDER OF ENGLAND

(See page 1102)

Photograph by Mary Cabot Briggs

7 September, 1489, John Rippes of Butley, co Suffolk, devises to his wife Margaret and to his daughters Mawt, Joan and son John, mentioning a black cow, two mother sheep, a red cow, a salett, bow and arrows, houses and barn in Butley and Wantisden, and names as attorney his son, John Reppes.

1546, Joan Reppys of Rendlesham, co. Suffolk, widow, leaves to her son Thomas house and lands in Rendlesham, and names her four children, Thomas, George, Joan and Alice, and appoints John Cooper, a witness, one of the overseers.

In Salle there is a mural tablet in the parish church in memory of Virtue Hasen, the youngest daughter of John Reppes, who died 1801.

After the death of his first wife, 1619 or later, WALTER⁴ BRIGGS married, second, Alice —, by whom he had one daughter, Alice, living in 1651 and then unmarried. His wife Alice survived him. He left her the greater part of his property, making her guardian for his children. He died in October, 1624, the same year in which he had been made supervisor of Henry Borrett's will and had purchased the property in Nacton from Thomas Beale. He was about 34 years old at the time of his death.

WILL OF WALTER⁴ BRIGGS OF BUCKLESHAM

Proved 4th Nov., 1624

Arch. Suffolk, 1624. No. 14. (Original)

In the name of God Amen the fifth day of . . . July Anno dni 1624 I Walter Briggs of Bucklesham in the County of Suff. (& dioces of norwich) yeoman, being sick in Body, but of perfect remembrance thancks be given to God do make . . . this my last will and testament in maner and forme following First I bequeath my Sowle into the hands of the most blessed Trinity not doubting but by the mcreyes of God I shall be saved by the deathe and passion of my Lord and savior Jesus Christ my Body I commit to ye earth from whence it came to be buryed at the discesion of myne exceutrix hereafter named As for my worldly goods lands and Tencments I give and bequeathe them in maner . . . following. That is to saye First I give . . . unto Alicc my wife for the terme of her naturall life All those ny lands and

Tenements whatsoever seituat lying and being in Bucklesham aforesayd to have and to holde to her & her assignes for the terme of her naturall life aforesayd And after my sayd wives decease I give and bequeathe all my sayd lands and Tenements to my sayd wife before given and bequeathed unto Walter Briggs my sonne and to his heyers forever. Item I give . . . all my lands and Tenements (whatsoever both free and Copy) wch I lately purchased of Thomas Beale seituat lying and being in Kirton (& Nacton) in the sayd County of Suff (unto the sayd Alice my wife and her Assignes) And also my landes and Tenements wch I bought . . . of Edmond Randes lying in Nacton in the sayd County unto Alice my wife and to her Assignes for ontill the terme of eight yeres from the feast of Sct. Michael tharchangel next after my decease shalbe fully acomplished . . . and after the sayd ternie of eight yeres I give all those sayd landes and Tenements wch I purchased of the sayd Thomas Beale unto Elizabeth Briggs and to Anne Briggs my daughters and to theyr heyers for ever to be equelly devyded betweene them. And also after the sayd terme of eight yeres I give . . . my Tenement and landes in Nacton aforsayd wch I purchased of Edmond Randes If my wife shalbe wth childe at the tyme of my decease wth a sonne then I give and bequeathe those lands and Tenements in Nacton aforesayd to that sonne and to his heyers for ever. and if my sayd wife be not wth childe at the tyme of my decease then I give the sayd lands in Nacton to Alice Briggs my daughter and to her heyers for ever. Item I give . . . unto Elizabeth Briggs and unto Anne Briggs my daughters and to theyr heyers for ever all those my lands and Tenements whatsoever both free and Copy seituat . . . in Kirton aforsayd to be equally devyded between them. Item I do give unto my sayd two daughters Elizabeth Briggs and Anne Briggs all the christning linnen that was theyr mothers and also seaven payr of sheetes A piece, of the best sort wch were myne before I married Alice my now wife. & one table clothe A piece of the best sorte, and a dozen & an half of napkyns of the best sort of those that were myne before my sayd mariage wth the sayd Alice my wife. Item I give unto Anne my daughter one great stonde pottle typt wthe silver wch was her grandfather Coopers Item I give unto the sayd Alice my wife all those goods and Chattels whatsoever wch I had wth her in marriage that she brought wth her unto me. Item I give unto my sayd Two daughters (Elizabeth and Anne) & to eache of them two of my best fether beds a piece wth two Bolsters a

piece two pilloes a piece two of the best Coverleds a piece and two blankets a piece Item I giv will and my true intent and meaning is that Alice my wife shall have all thother my Bedding whatsoever. As for the rest of the houshold stuffe (within my house) weh was myne before my mariage wth my sayd wife, my legacyes performed I will shalbe equally devyded in three partes Betweene Alice my wife and my two daughters Elizabeth and Anne Briggs saving that I will that my sayd wife shall have the use of all my sayd houshold stuffe wthin the house untill Elizabeth my daughter shall accomplish her age of sixteene yeres and then I will that the sayd houshold stuffe shall be equally devyded between them all three as aforsayed by my supervisors hereafter named. Item I give unto Robert Brooke of Nacton Esquyer and to his heyers for ever all those lands and Tenements in Nacton and Levington weh I had given unto me by the last will and Testament of Henry Rippes my Uncle late deceased paying to myne executors sixe powndes weh I payed for hym to M^{rs} Symnell deceased. Item wheras my brother Richard Briggs dothe owe me thirty two pounds by bonde I do forgive them twenty powndes of it uppon condicion that he do paye unto myne executrix hereafter named twelve powndes of lawfull money wthin sixe monthes next after my decease or else his bonde shallbe still in force and this legacy voyde Item I will that my wife shalbe gardian to all my children and shall receave all the profitts therof (of theyr sayd lands) & shall bring up all my sayd children and make a true account unto them when she shalbe called therunto. Item wheras I have (before in this my sayd last will) given certen landes and Tenements unto my sayd wife lying in Kirton and Nacton for the terme of eight yeres my true intent is that my sayd wife shall paye owt of the profetts of my sayd landes unto Alee Briggs my daughter one hundred powndes of lawfull money of England at the ende & terme of the sayd eight yeres and then I will that the sayd hundred powndes shall be presently imployed to the best benefit for my sayd daughter. And further I will and my true intent is that my dettes being payed and my legacyes performed my funerall discharged and this my last will proved I give (the use of) overplus whatsoever yt shall remayne of all the rest of my goods and chattells unto Alice my wife so long as she shall keepe herselfe sole and unmarried. Upon condicion that the sayd Alice my wife do enter bonde (wthin three monthes after my decease) unto my supervisors hereafter named in the somme of two hundred powndes to pay the sayd somme that shalbe remayning

uppon the pryeing of my sayd goodes as aforesayd wthin sixe monthes next after the sayd mariage (to sayd Alice my daughter) Item I do Make Mr. John Fletcher Parson of Kirton & Mr. James Armond Parson of Bucklesham supervisors of my last will and Testament and I give unto them twenty shillings a peece for theyr paynes desiring them to be carefull wth indifferency to make peace and quietnes betwixt my wife and my children & to use theyr best indevors for all theyr estates Item I do make and ordeyne the sayd Alice my wife sole executrix of this my last will and testament. In wytnes wherof I the sayd Walter Briggs have hereunto set my hande and seale & do publish this to be my last will & Testament the daye and yere above written. this will conteyneth 3 pages & the testator's hande is to every page

Thees being wytnesses

WALTER BRIGGES

ROBTE TATE

his marke

THOMAS BETTES

JAMES ARMOND

JO: FLETCHER

I Walter Brigges of Buckleshame in the County of Suff: yeoman having finished this my last will & Testament for avoyding of Rents and divisions which in tyme to come might chaunce between my children have further added That whereas (as appears by this my will) I have given unto Elizabeth Briggs and Anne Briggs my daughters by a former wife all my lands free and Copy lying in Kirton & bought of Thomas Beale to wch gifte for the Copyhold lands there is no surrender. My will is (that if anie of my children by Alice my wife shall at anie tyme hereafter make anie claime to these Copyhold lands whereby to hinder my sd. daughters Eliz. & Ann) That then the sd. Eliz & Ann my daughters shall have and hold so much of my lands lying in Buckleshame as shalbe equivalent in worth to those in Kirton to have & to hold to them & to their heires for ever notwithstanding anie former gifte in this my will In witnes whereof I have hereto sett my hand & seale this sixt day of October 1624.

This

addicion was sig. & sealed in

the presents of us

JO: FLETCHER

THOMAS BETTES.

(Endorsed): Probatum fuit huiusmodi testamentum apud Gippingem coram venerabili viro Henrico Dade in legibus Baccalario



SOMERSET HOUSE ON THE THAMES, LONDON, WHERE THE EARLY DATA FOR THIS
BOOK WERE PREPARED
(See Preface)



VIEW FROM FRONT OF SKATUTAHKEE FARM, HANCOCK, N. H.
(See Chapter XXIX)

in et per Totum. Archtano Suff. Commiss. magistro & officiali legitime constituto quarto die mensis Novembris Anno Domini 1624. Et commissa fuit Administratio omnium et singulorum Benorum etc. dicti defuncti Alicie relictæ dicti defuncti et Executrice in dicto Testamento nominate et in debita Juris forma etc. saluo etc.

Exhibitum est Inventarium.

Shortly after the death of *Walter*⁴ *Briggs* his widow married John May, as is shown by the following Court Roll, from which we also learn the ages of Elizabeth and Ann:

Manor of Walton cum Trimley. Court Roll 23. 22 James I. to 1 Charles I.

Court General, 5 April 1626.

Admission of Alice Briggs, widow, to one acre for the term of eight years, and of *Ann* and *Elizabeth Briggs daughters of Walter Briggs* to all the other premises surrendered by the said Walter.

At this court it was presented by the Homage that *Walter Briggs*, copyhold tenant of this manor since the last court (The last court is Apr. 5, 1625) and before this court has died, and before his death, lying upon his death bed surrendered unto the hands of the lord of the manor by the hands of John Howard, gentleman, steward of this court, all his copyhold lands and tenements held of this manor to the use of his will, whereby he gave and devised to Alice his wife and to her assigns half an acre of land in one piece in a certain close called Tyle Acre Close in Kirton for the term of eight years after his death, and furthermore he gave and devised to Anne Briggs and Elizabeth Briggs his daughters all other his copyhold lands and tenements held of this manor, to hold to them and their assigns forever as is more fully shown by the will brought into court.

Now to this court comes as well Alice Briggs now the wife of John Maye as the said Anne and Elizabeth his daughters and severally claim to be admitted to the lands and tenements in form aforesaid, to hold them according to the form of the said will.

To which the same Alice, the wife of the said John May seizin was delivered for the term of eight years and to Elizabeth and Anne and their heirs seizin was delivered for the residue of the lands forever.

And they did suit of court and gave fine to the lord for their admission.

And because the said Elizabeth and Anne, daughters of the said Walter, are within age, namely Elizabeth at the age of nine years and Anne of seven years, therefore the eustody of the said Elizabeth and Anne is committed to Alice Briggs late wife of the said Walter until they shall severally accomplish their full age of fourteen years, rendering account for the issues and profits of the copyhold lands and tenements at the several ages of fourteen years. And Alice is admitted guardian, and so far she gives to the lord no fine saving his right.

John May died in 1631. As will be seen by his will he had brothers Alexander and Roger. His wife Alice survived him.

Ipswich Probate Office

Arch. Suffolk. Book 1631 No. 30. Original Will.

Will of John Maye of Bucklesham, yeoman.

Date 18 Aug. 1631 Probate 13 Jan 1631/32

To the poor of Bucklesham, Kirton and Walton, to each town 10s apiece, adding 10s more to Walton.

To Brother Roger May, marsh called Little Marsh and Whinney Close in Walton, on condition the said Roger pay to Alice Briggs my daughter-in-law (step-daughter?) £140 when 21 years of age.

If unpaid, said Alice to enter the lands being part of the legacy given to her by her father's will.

Brother Roger May to pay further to Alice my wife every year out of the land to the use of the said Alice, her daughter, £5 until she be 21 years of age.

To wife Alice freehold lands and tenements in Kirton purchased of John Burton;

Also 40 shillings every year until she pay her daughter Alice
£46

Brother Roger owes me £30. This to be paid to my eldest sister's children whom she had by Raymond King, namely, Raymond, Elizabeth and Mary and also

the said Roger to pay my eldest brother's children, John, Alexander and Roger May £5.

Brother Roger to be responsible for payments

To sister Joan, wife of Richard Rose, 20s

To her daughter Elizabeth 20s
 Executrix and residuary legatee wife Alee.

Children of Walter⁴ Briggs and Ann Cooper:

6. i. WALTER⁵ BRIGGS, b. 1612; emigrated to America.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. 1617; d. before 1640; unm.
- iii. ANN, b. 1619; d. before 1640; unm.

Child of Walter Briggs and Alice ——, his second wife:

- iv. ALICE, b. before 1623; living in 1651; unm.

The following extracts from the Court Rolls of Walton-cum-Trimley are important as showing that WALTER⁵ BRIGGS must have left Bucklesham before 1639, and they give various family statistics, all in connection with the property left by Walter⁴ Briggs lying within the jurisdiction of that court:

Walton cum Trimley Court Roll No. 24 (1636 — 1647, in Latin)

[Translation]

Court General there holden Mon. 4 Nov. 15 Charles I. (1639)

Homage on the part of Walton — (include) Roger May.

(Under the title of Walton eum Trimley. Briggs.)

Whereas the Court here holden the (blank) day in the (blank) year of the reign of Charles now King of England, it was presented that Walter Briggs, etc. Now Richard Briggs, the brother of Anne is admitted to one moiety of one moiety of (the) land after the death of Ann Briggs sister of the same Richard. And also to the reversion of the moiety of the same moiety of one aere after the death of Roger May.

Whereas at this Court as above Roger May is admitted to one moiety of one moiety (one moiety) of the same aere as tenant by courtesy; to hold to him for the term of his life.

Walton cum Trimley Court Roll 24 (1636–1647)

[Translation from original document in Latin]

Whereas at the Court here holden 4 Nov. 15 (Chas. I.) it was presented by the then homage that Elizabeth Briggs and Ann Briggs, daughters of WALTER BRIGGS had died before that Court without issue seised to them and their heirs of divers lands holden

of this manor by copy of the rolls of the court of the manor, which by the will of Walter their father dated 5 July 1624 were devised to them — Now the homage of this court present that Richard Briggs, brother on the father's side (*patrinis*) of the said Elizabeth and Anne is heir of the said Elizabeth and Anne to the premises aforesaid. Who comes to this court and seeks to be admitted tenant to the premises aforesaid, viz. to one acre and a half and eight perches of land and pasture adjacent to land formerly of Thomas Beales towards the east, lying in Kirton. And to half of one acre lying in Tyle Acre Close in Kirton. To which Richard the lords by their steward granted seisin thereof by the rod. To hold to him and to his heirs at the will of the lords according to the custom of the Manor And he gives to the lord for fine and hath done fealty and has been admitted tenant.

The Richard mentioned in both of these deeds is Richard the brother of WALTER⁴ BRIGGS, uncle (*patrinus*) of Elizabeth and Ann. Mr. Bower Marsh assures me of this, having been most careful to study copies of the abbreviated Latin in which the Rolls were written. He adds: "There is no doubt that the 'brother' of 1639 was a mistake on the part of the scribe which was subsequently corrected. (There are signs that the clerk drew his entries carelessly; he twice refers to 'Prdtor. Elizabethhe et Anne', *i.e.*, *predictorum* where he should write *predictarum*.)"

Walton cum Trimley Court Roll 25 (1648-1654)

Court 27 Apr. 24 Chas. I. (1648)

Walton cum Trimley presented death of *Richard Bridges (sic)* seised of 1½ acre 8 perches of land adjacent to land formerly of Thomas Beale lying in Kirton, and of the half of an acre in Tyle Acre Close in Kirton, which Richard took up to himself and his heirs at the Court holden 4 November 15 Chas. I. after the death of Elizabeth Bridges and Anne Bridges: and

(2) that Anne Bridges, now wife of Robert Yorke, only daughter of the said Richard Bridges, appears (by her husband as attorney) and is admitted.

Walton cum Trimley & Felixstowe Priory

Court 8 April, 1651.

Homage present that Richard Rose, copyholder on 29 March 1651 surrendered all his lands and tenements held of this manor

to the use of Geoffrey Sale, sr., gent and Geoffrey Sale junr. his son, who crave to be admitted, namely to all the tenements devised by the will of Alexander May to his brother John May, a messuage, bakehouse, barn, millhouse and garden mentioned in the will aforesaid, which Roger May took to himself & his heirs 5 April 6 Chas. I. after the death of his brother Alexander May, and a marsh called Le Little Marsh, and a close called le Whinney Close lying together in Walton, which Roger took up on 27 March 8 Chas. I. after the death of his brother John May: —

and which *Richard Rose took up of the surrender of Roger May 13 Apr. 23 Charles I.*

And to this same court came *Alice Briggs daughter of Walter Briggs* and quitclaimed all her right to Ric. Rose.

and there came Roger, son of Alexander May and quitclaimed his right — both to Richard Rose.

Now Geoffrey Sale and his son are admitted.

6. WALTER⁵ BRIGGS (*Walter*⁴, *Thomas*³, *Nicholas*², *Stephyn*¹), my immigrant ancestor, was in Bucklesham in 1624, as is shown by his father's will which leaves him a substantial property on the death of his stepmother, Alice, who married John May. We have been unable to get the Court Rolls of Bucklesham in which this property must have been recorded. WALTER⁵ was about twelve years old at the time of his father's death. The records of Walton-cum-Trimley to which we have had access do not concern him until after the death of his sister Anne in 1639. He did not appear at that time to claim his share of her property; consequently he must have left England between 1624 and 1639. His stepmother, Alice May, was still living in 1631, but we have no further record of her. His sisters Ann and Elizabeth both died before 1640, and Richard Briggs died in 1642. There is no record of the death of Walter anywhere in the Diocese of Norwich, nor any mention of his having disposed of the property which he inherited from his father in any records which we have found. That he did come into this property and dispose of it in some manner for a substantial consideration is evident, for he arrived in Scituate with ample means, and his friends and associates were among the wealthiest men of the Colony. Not long after

he arrived he had become a large owner in real estate, had bought "undesirables" from England to work on his farm, and had indentured servants and slaves.

Another evidence that WALTER⁵ must have left Suffolk before 1638 is the fact that his name does not appear on the list given in "A Certificate of All Able Men of Suffolk townes from Sixteene yeres to Threescore yeeeres of age (1638)" which I consulted in the British Museum, although the name of Richard Brigges of Burgh appears. (It is interesting to note that in this list there are eight Brigges mentioned, and five different spellings of the name!) The records of the County of Suffolk give ample proof of the death of every other member of his family, — his father, his mother, his sisters, his uncle, his stepfather, as well as other relatives.

The age of WALTER⁵ BRIGGS of Bucklesham exactly coincides with that of WALTER¹ BRIGGS of Scituate, and his disappearance from Bucklesham coincides in date with the arrival of WALTER THE IMMIGRANT in Scituate. There is no doubt that this was the same Walter, especially as he arrived in New England possessed of a considerable property which he invested in land, indentured servants, slaves, etc., doubtless the proceeds of his inheritance under his father's will.

The name Walter is not common, and the name Cornelius is still more uncommon. Yet on the Rolls of Walton cum Trimley the name Cornelius appears twice (at least), and this name, unusual in England at that time, was probably familiar to Walter⁵ Briggs, as he named one of his sons Cornelius.

Walton cum Trimley — Roll 25

Court 18 Aug. 1652

Land surrendered by Sir Miles Hobart, Knt., to Peter Scrivener, gent., including land in Kirton abutting on Cornelius Croxston's land West and Northwest.

Court 7 Aug. 1653.

Presentment that upon 30 April 1653 Henry Whetcroft gent. and wife Ursula surrendered copyhold lands to the use of William

Perryman otherwise Fedyman, including a parcel of pasture late divided into three enclosures called Fures land between Kirton Common and the lands late Jeremy *Cornelius* called *Croxston* on the East and South and on Kirton Common.

This Cornelius may have been a friend of whom WALTER⁵ BRIGGS was fond, and for whom he named his oldest son, born in Scituate in 1644 or 1645, Cornelius.

CHAPTER III

WALTER BRIGGS THE EMIGRANT, AND HIS FRIENDS

1. WALTER¹ BRIGGS, son of *Walter*, and grandson of *Thomas Briggs* of Bucklesham, County Suffolk, England, emigrated to New England prior to 1642, but the exact date, or the name of the vessel in which he came, is not known to me. He was about twelve years of age when his father, WALTER⁴ BRIGGS, died in 1624, and as he arrived in Scituate with ample means, it is reasonable to suppose that he emigrated after disposing of his inheritance, which he received on reaching his majority in 1633 or 1634. His name appears on record for the first time in New England in 1643. In August of that year the Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. VIII, record "The Names of all the Males that are able to beare Armes from xvj. Yeares old to 60 Yeares, wthin the seuerall Towneshippes," and here the name of "Walter Briggs, Scittuate," is recorded.

In 1638 William Vassall and William Hatch were appointed by the Colony Court "to exercise the people in arms at Scituate," following the Pequot Indian War of 1637, and from that time on a company of militia seems to have been maintained in Scituate.

In 1639-40 Scituate suffered the loss of many of her inhabitants, owing to great numbers following Rev. Mr. Lothrop to Barnstable. It is said that nearly half of the inhabitants departed. By the wise use of his fortune Timothy Hatherley (who afterward became Walter Briggs' most intimate friend) carried the town through this critical period. He purchased the properties of all who wished to depart. New settlers came in 1640, and Walter Briggs may have been among these, if he had not arrived earlier. In 1650 there was another emigration, this time to York,

Maine; in 1658 another to Barbados, and in 1670 to Rehoboth and Swansey.

Walter Briggs is frequently mentioned in the Plymouth Colony Records. He took part in public affairs, and was called upon to occupy positions of trust. On 6 June 1649, he was chosen one of the "Servayors of the Hiewayes" of Scituate; on 5 June 1651, was on the "Grand Enquest;" and in the census or List of Freemen, 1658, his name appears, he having taken the "oath of Fidelitie" as early as 15 Jan. 1644. Other references are made to him which I will refer to later.

His place of residence in the settlement previous to 1651 is not known, but in that year he purchased from Mr. Timothy Hatherley a large farm, including the north side of Farm Neck on the "Glades," with housings, barns, etc., upon which Mr. Hatherley had resided before his marriage to the widow Lydia Tilden in 1642, and his removal to her residence on Kent Street, Scituate. This farm consisted of 300 acres of mostly fertile land, much of it not heavily wooded as compared with lands farther to the west and south, which were included in the first grant to Timothy Hatherley and his partners, John Beauchamp, Richard Andrews and James Shirley. The partners purchased the interests of the other "Merehant Adventurers" who financed the *Mayflower* Company.

Conihassett, Konohassett or Conohassett includes a fishing promontory for which the locality was named, and from which the East Precinct of Hingham took its name when incorporated as the town of Cohasset. This was a part of Scituate, although the partners appointed their own clerks, surveyors, committees and agents, laid out and maintained their own roads, made grants to their minister, and otherwise conducted their affairs with the efficiency of a corporate town. When Walter Briggs bought his property, the harbor, formed by the jutting out into the sea of the Glades Point, became known as Briggs Harbor, which name it still bears. It is very possible that Walter Briggs' first residence was near this cove, for it was known as Briggs' Harbor as early as 1650. He may have been one of the early settlers

on this land, when Timothy Hatherley received his grant with Beaumont, Andrews and Shirley in 1637, and have made his home here. This grant extended to the high water mark of the Atlantic Ocean, "three miles back to a brook," or, as another description puts it, "three miles up into the wood."

The Merchant Adventurers and the Conihassett Partners are not to be confused. The four adventurers who continued to finance the *Mayflower* Company were Timothy Hatherley, John Beauchamp, James Shirley and Richard Andrews. These four purchased the interests of the original company of "Adventurers" very early. The Conihassett Partners were composed of Hatherley and 26 of the first settlers. Hatherley purchased the interest of Beauchamp, Shirley and Andrews in the first grant in 1637 and, retaining one quarter, he divided the remaining three quarters of the grant into thirty shares, which he sold to settlers *already on the lands*, and others, in 1646. *Rodolphus Elmes*, one of my ancestors, was one of the Conihassett Partners and a neighbor of Walter Briggs.

The Conihassett Partners were Mr. Charles Chauncey, Thomas Chambers, *John Williams*, Sr., James Cudworth, Joseph Tilden, Henry Merritt, Thomas Rawlins, Thomas Tarte, John Hoar, Richard Sealis, *Thomas Ensign*, Thomas Chittenden, John Stockbridge, John Allin, *Thomas Hilaud*, John Wheteomb, John Woodfield, *Edward Jenkins*, John Hallett, Ann Vinal, William Holmes, John Whiston, Gowin White, John Daman, *Rodolphus Ellms* and Richard Man.

Their first clerk was Richard Garrett, he being a skillful penman, though not a partner; the second, James Torrey; the third, Steven Vinall, and the fourth and last, Samuel Jenkins. They kept records of all transactions, conveyances, etc., in beautiful order, which fill a large volume. Their last meeting on record was 1767, and was held in the so-called "new house," built by *Capt. Stephen Otis* in 1697, which about 1750 and later was a tavern (according to the late Charles Otis Ellms).

Many of the above-named partners had settled upon the

Conihassett lands without title or authority, before the Colony Court granted it in 1637 to the "Adventurers," which caused many "entanglements" between Mr. Hatherley and themselves. In 1656, a tract of three miles square was granted to Mr. Hatherley as indemnity for his entanglements with the people of Scituate, "and to satisfy the Conihassett partners." This tract was divided into 40 parts, 27 of them assigned to the Partners, the remaining 13 shares being retained by Mr. Hatherley. The boundary of this tract next to Scituate (now next to Norwell) is known as "the share line." This three-mile square tract of land later became a part of the towns of Hanover and Abington. When East Abington was set off and incorporated as Rockland, the Hatherley tract adjoining Norfolk County became a part of the new town, and has a post office which perpetuates the name of Hatherley. An effort was made to call East Abington Hatherley, but it was opposed by the Catholics, many of whom resided in East Abington.

By the terms of Walter's deed the land was to be holden "according to the manner of East Greenwich in the county of Kent, in free and common soekage, and not in the *Capite* or by the Knights' service, by the rents and service thereof." It seems that this was a perpetuation of the custom in that part of Kent, where the land, instead of going by entail to the oldest son, was divided among all the children.

Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. II, Part 2, p. 2

Jan. 9, 1651. Timothy Hatherley of Scituate, New Plymouth New England In consideration of £200 of current New England pay to me in hand by Walter Briggs of Scituate (I do grant him his heirs, etc.) all that my dwelling house, barne, out houses, yards gardens and 200 acres of land Lying and being in Scituate on the Westerly side of the great pond thus called and Knowne by the name of Musquasheutt pond or the afores^d house called by the name of the Musquashentt farme house, also Conihassett farme house, likewise upland in Scituate known by the name of Conihassett land and is by computation 123 acres joining the afores^d dwelling house and barn, bounded to the East to the Sea,

toward the West to the Swamp & Point in the Swamp, which s^d Swamp runs from the great pond afores^d, etc.

TIMOTHY HATHERLEY (Seal)

Witness — STUNSON [probably STETSON]

JOHN SAFFIN

RICHARD GARRETT

[These names in the original deed are hard to decipher, but knowing that Hatherley's home was beside Great Musquashcutt Pond, one can see that "Musquashcutt" can be formed from the ancient writing.]

Robert Stetson (one of my ancestors), John Saffin and Richard Garrett were associates of Timothy Hatherley and Walter Briggs. Garrett was clerk of the Conihassett Partners for ten years. Robert Stetson and John Saffin were active in town affairs at this time. Saffin was called a "lawyer."

Walter Briggs built a new house upon his farm a few years after its purchase. This house is now standing (although it has been moved a short distance from its first location), and the original structure can still be defined, as seen in the illustration. The ell on the right side was added in the middle of the last century. For many years it was known as "the old Collier house," having finally come into the possession of that family by the marriage of Judith Briggs, a great-granddaughter of Walter, to William Collier in 1748.

At the time that Walter Briggs finished building his new house, with its huge oak timbers and plaster of clamshell mortar, he was in the prime of life, a man of much prominence and considerable property. With his three sons, his indentured servant, his negro slaves and his "Irish man" (whom he evidently bought from one of those cargoes of undesirables sent from England and sold at auction on arrival to the highest bidder) he tilled the land, using kelp and fish from the seashore as fertilizer. After clearing his land and building stone walls with boulders from the fields he used the lumber he had cut to build with, and the smaller wood for the great fireplaces where the cooking was done



HOUSE BUILT BY WALTER¹ BRIGGS, THE EMIGRANT, IN 1651, ON THE CONIHASSET GRANT AND NEAR CONIHASSET HARBOR, WITH HUGE OAK BEAMS AND CLAM SHELL MORTAR. LEFT TO HIS SON JOHN² AND PASSED LATER TO COLLIER HEIRS. IT IS STILL STANDING (1938)



ORIGINAL BRIGGS HOME ON MUSHQUASHCUTT POND, AND NEAR WHAT IS NOW BRIGGS³ HARBOR, AS IT APPEARED IN 1917

See Plymouth Registry of Deeds, Plan Book 1, Plan 103

and which also served in winter for heating. About this time we have records of his possessing at least one indentured servant, Robert Sprout, and a little later two negro slaves, Maria and Jemmy, as well as the "irishman." We do not know how many more servants he may have had of whom the records make no mention. Twenty-four years after building his new house Walter Briggs had three sons, who, as well as himself, served in King Philip's War, — Captain John, Lieutenant James, and Ensign Cornelius.

Not many years ago Azro Turner, while ploughing in a field west of Musquashcutt Pond, uncovered a hearth made of English brick. E. P. Collier, the last of the family to own the old house and some of its land, believed this hearth was that of the house built by Hatherley, as a few rods east of this spot, near the shore of the pond, stood as late as 1926 an old pear tree which had grown out of the roots of a tree of still greater age. The fact that this tree stood where no orchard has been within the memory of the oldest inhabitant, together with its great age, probably marks it as the last vestige of that orchard which Hatherley mentions in a subsequent deed in 1651.

An original deed from Hatherley to Walter Briggs, bearing same date as the home farm deed, appears as follows:

Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. II, Part 2, p. 4

Jan. 9, 1651. Timothy Hatherley for & in consideration of £10 current New England pay paid by Walter Briggs of Scituate (grants & conveys to him, his heirs, &c.) one lot lying & being by Mushquashcutt harbour or Conihassett harbour 20 acres upland — 5 acres upland — 6½ acres of marshland — adjoining land of Rudolphus Ellms & John Damon, etc., etc.

Witness

JOSEPH COLMAN

RICHARD GARRETT

TIMOTHY HATHERLEY

On the same day, 9 Jan. 1651, Walter Briggs gave a bond to Mr. Hatherley that was never recorded. It reads:

Know all men by these presents That I Walter Briggs of Scituate in the Gov^tment of New Plymouth in New England in

America ffarmer, doe acknowledge my self to owe and to be In-debted unto Timothy hatherley of Scittuate in the Gov^ement aforesaid Gen^{tl} the full and whole sum of twenty pounds Sterling Current Mony, due to be payed unto the said Timothy hatherley, his heires exeyvitors Adminnestrators or Assighes att the now dwelling house of the said Timothy hatherley To & for the true performanee heerof; I the said Walter Briggs bind mee my heires exeyvitors Adminnestrators and assigns; In witness whereof I the said Walter Briggs have heerunto sett my hand & seale, this ninth day off January in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred [illegible] one.

The Condition of this obligation is such that whereas Mr. Timothy hatherley has sold unto the aforesaid Walter Briggs a thirtieth [?] or share of three [?] or shares of Conihasset land according to the bounds thereof in his deed bearing date with this obligation. Now there is a line within those bounds, which is called accord pond line, that is begun att aceord pond, and Runeth Crosse and Cutteth the said line of the bounds, and Runeth to bound brook, and as that brook Runeth untill it Issueth out into the Sea. The land which lyeth on the Northerly & Westerly syde of Accord Pond line, and on the Northerly and Easterly syde of said bound brook; & sixty aeres of Marsh on the Southeast syde of bound brook, all which land is now in Controversy and layed claime to by the Gov^ement of the Bay and Brigham men; and by Reason of the Controversy the said Timothy hatherley hath given a full and valuable Consideration unto the said Walter Briggs in the sale of this land aforesaid. . . .

The Condition of this obligation is such that if the said Walter Briggs hee his heires exeyvitors Administrators or assigns doe never trouble, sue or molest the said Timothy hatherley, hee his heires exeyvitors Administrators or Assigns; although the said land be never recovered then this obligation to be void and of none effect, or else to stand in full power force or verteu as before.

In witness whereof I the said Walter Briggs have heerunto sett my hand and seal the day and yeare above written.

Signed sealed and delivered
in the presence of us, viz:

JOSEPH COLEMAN
SAMUELL NASH

WALTER BRIGGS (seal)

This above written is a true copy of the original bond signed and sealed unto by Walter Briggs; which original bond was Casually Ccancelled, now ordered by the Court held att Plymouth the third



MILITARY HATS WORN BY THE BRIGGS ANCESTORS OF L. CABOT BRIGGS,
1750 TO 1820, AND NOW IN HIS POSSESSION (1938)



ANDIRONS BROUGHT FROM ENGLAND BY WALTER BRIGGS, THE EMIGRANT, AND
NAMED LATER FOR TWO OF HIS SLAVES, MARIA AND JEMMY, NOW IN
POSSESSION OF L. CABOT BRIGGS (1938)

of July 1673 to be transcribed, and in defect of a witness Lieut. Samuell Nash hath sett heeronto his hand as a renewed witness; and delivered to mee Nathaniel Morton [Secretary ?] to the Court aforsaid to be [kept ?] for [the use ?] of the heires exeyvitors and Administrators of Mr. Timothy hatherley deceased.

pro NATHANIEL MORTON, [Secretary]

A reasonable interpretation of this situation, which is supported by many facts, is that Timothy Hatherley's title to the lands bordering on the line separating Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth Colonies was in controversy in 1651, owing to the insistent contentions of "Little Hingham" (Cohasset) that the boundary as defined in 1640 was not in accord with the terms of the Massachusetts Bay grant. If the boundary should be altered by a later commission, the thirty-odd acres named in the second deed might be materially reduced. Because of these unsettled conditions, Mr. Hatherley sold his friend Walter Briggs the lands in question for the small amount of £10, after safeguarding his interests by a bond wherein Walter Briggs agrees that in case the acreage of tract be reduced, he would make no demand on Mr. Hatherley for enough land to make up what he would lose by a change in line. The deeds in question were filed at Plymouth, but the bond, which might never be required, was retained by Mr. Hatherley. After various attempts, the bounds were defined in 1664, in accordance with the findings of the commission that met in 1656 in *the house of Walter Briggs*. The bond was no longer of especial value, and was "casually cancelled" by Mr. Hatherley, perhaps mutilated or partially destroyed at this time. Timothy Hatherley died in 1666. In 1673, Deacon Joseph Tilden, his stepson and the executor of his estate, was in controversy with Rev. Thomas Hanford, Hatherley's nephew, over the provisions of his uncle's will. He probably found the cancelled deed, which was no longer in condition to be recorded, and the court ordered a copy of the original to be transcribed, perhaps by sending Lieut. Samuel Nash, who was a Plymouth man, and one of the witnesses of the original bond, to Scituate to secure the signature of

Walter Briggs on the duplicate bond, or so-called "copy." L. Cabot Briggs, ninth generation from Walter, has this original transcribed bond.

The most important commission of early colonial days was that which, in 1640, established the boundary line between the Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth Colonies — a boundary separating Puritans from Pilgrims.

The Commissioners were John Endicott and Israel Stoughton from Massachusetts, and William Bradford and Edward Winslow from Plymouth. All except Stoughton were Governors or ex-Governors of the two colonies.

This line, known as the "Old Colony Line," the "Patent Line" or "Patten Line," began at a rock near the mouth of Bound Brook at the Lincoln mill pond at North Scituate, ran straight through the middle of Aecord Pond, and, with the exception of a slight deviation in Attleboro, marked by the "White Oak Angle Tree," replaced in 1790 by the "Angletree Stone," to the northeast corner of the Rhode Island boundary. This mutual arrangement between two colonies, established by their own appointed commissioners, was the first step of federation that ended in the Colonial Congress.

These two colonies had separate charters, and according to strict adherence to the authority of the Court of St. James, they would be expected to appeal to the authority of their King Charles across the Atlantic to define their boundaries; but instead of that they undertook to meet each other as two sovereign states and to determine their own realms in mutual agreement through their authorized deputies. The compact in the cabin of the *Mayflower* is sometimes referred to as the germ of our United States, but it is more properly the seed of a single state. For individuals to bind themselves in the maintenance of a government is distinct in principle from the federation of states. (Bigelow's "History of Cohasset," p. 197.)

This line was an early bone of contention on the part of the settlers in Hingham and in Scituate, because of the wide marshes near the sea which were especially valuable for the salt hay so much needed for forage, when no so-called

"English hay" was raised upon the uplands. Bound Brook lay about one mile from the shore line, and beyond it were some threescore acres of marsh, terminating in Bassing Beach, the southern boundary of Cohasset Harbor. The ownership of these threescore acres was continually in dispute until 1656. If that straight line established in 1640 had been continued straight to the sea the threescore acres would have belonged to Massachusetts Bay, as the Hingham settlers contended; but Plymouth Colony claimed "the Gulf" as the natural boundary. On 18 Nov. 1656, a commission, consisting of William Torrey and Capt. Richard Brackett from Massachusetts, met with Josias Winslow from Plymouth, at the "*new house of Walter Briggs*" at Conihassett. This commission gave most of the territory in dispute to Plymouth. Minor changes from time to time, made necessary by changes of the "Gulf," have been made by the Legislature up to 1840 and later, the "Gulf" being at the present time the acceptable boundary.

In 1895 Governor Wolcott of Massachusetts appointed a commission, consisting of William T. Davis, Esq., of Plymouth, Rev. S. Hopkins Emery of Taunton, and Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Boston, to prepare and put in place a memorial to commemorate this early event. As Bound Rock itself was underneath a storehouse of the grist mill originally owned by Mordecai Lincoln (ancestor of President Lincoln), a boulder with a tablet was placed on the main highway at the Cohasset line, resting against the boundary stone, 133 feet distant from Bound Brook. It reads:

THIS TABLET IS ERECTED BY THE COMMONWEALTH ON THE BOUNDARY LINE BETWEEN THE PLYMOUTH AND MASSACHUSETTS COLONIES. BOUND ROCK, THE STARTING OF SAID LINE AS FIXED IN 1640 BY JO. ENDICOTT ISRAEL STOUGHTON WILLIAM BRADFORD AND EDWARD WINSLOW COMMISSIONERS OF THE TWO COLONIES LIES 133 FEET N. 52 DEGREES E. FROM THIS SPOT.

In 1661 the Conihassett Partners agreed that there should be a highway "for both cart and cattle from Little Musquasheutt pond into the way that goes to Hoophole Necke

upon the undivided land, and from Little Musquashcutt pond to the Seaside where the way did formerly lie between two slows." There were men living in 1929 who remembered the remains of this way, according to Pratt, who says, further: "This was clearly intended for the accommodation of Timothy Hatherley, who had his farm at the foot of Great Musquashcutt pond at the foot of Mann Hill; John Saffin and John Hoar, who lived south of it, and Walter Briggs, whose farm was at the Glades."

While, as has been said, Walter Briggs had both indentured servants and slaves, it is not recorded that he bought the services of any of the town's paupers. Pratt gives some instances of how the town took care of its poor. This must have been when they were not sold to the highest bidder, as was the case for many years. He cites the case of the widow Hickes, who was probably not sold on account of her infirmity of age, and because there was some property involved. Thomas Hickes came to Scituate in 1640 from Plymouth, where he had been living for seventeen years, and subsisted with his wife on a small and unproductive farm on the east of Brushy Hill, about a mile southwest of the harbor, where they lived for twelve years, until his death in 1652. The small estate remained intact, but his wife, who was old, ill and unable to maintain herself, sought assistance from the town. At town meeting it was agreed:

and chose *Walter Briggs* and Robert Sprout to take ward of Widow Hickes and to maintain her upon her own estate as far as it will go, and then the town to make supply afterwards and place her in the fittest place they can for her comfort and the town's profit; and the town is not willing to be charged with above 2s. 6d a week, except in extraordinary cases, and the town has ordered there shall be 3 pounds put in the next rating to be in readiness to supply the widow's wants when necessity shall require.

Robert Sprout was still Walter Briggs' indentured servant in 1652. The name of the Hickes family, and the location of their home, has been preserved after more than two hundred and eighty years by "Hickes Swamp" and

"Hiekeses Hole." The South Shore Branch of the Old Colony (New York, New Haven & Hartford) Railroad runs through Hickes Swamp between Greenbush and Seituate railway stations. On the southern border of this swamp near the highway leading from Greenbush to the harbor is "Hiekeses Hole," which the late Charles Otis Ellms believed to have been the cellar hole of the Hiekese house. He related that unruly children of the locality were often told that if they did not mend their ways "old Mother Hiekese would come out of the hole and beat them."

Mary, the first wife of Walter Briggs, was living in 1658/9, and during that year "Timothy Hatherly was deputed to go and reason with her in consequence of her unpleasantness with the contumacious apprentice Robert Sprout," who either came to America with Walter Briggs, or was later sent over to him from England, and was indentured to him until 1658. In May of that year the Plymouth Court ordered Walter Briggs "to return indenture to his servant Robert Sprout." The unpleasantness with the troublesome apprentice resulted in his suing Sprout in June 1658, for £20 damages. Robert Sprout, or Sproat, removed to the "Two Miles," where he appears in 1660, and where he took up land adjoining John Barker's. The Duxbury Records record that he owned land in 1682 on the Marshfield highway adjoining Lieut. Robert Barker. He married, and died in Middleborough in 1712, leaving many descendants, one of whom became a distinguished preacher in Philadelphia a hundred years ago.

Wolves, wildeats, beavers and deer were found in the forests. That wolves were numerous is evident from the passage of laws requiring the town in 1642 to maintain four wolf traps, and in 1665, two wolf traps. In 1673, Dead Swamp, on the Second Herring Brook, was known as Wolf Swamp, and Wolf Trap, near Iron Mine Brook in Hanover, was a landmark noted by Deane. By the colony laws it appears also that a bounty of four bushels of corn was given for every wolf killed, and for a wolf killed by an Indian, "a coat of trading cloth." Stones were placed on every grave to prevent the wolves from digging up those buried. On

13 June 1660, the county treasurer states that he paid “To *Walter Briggs* for a woulfe 15 shillings,” which he killed.

Walter Briggs, on 1 May 1673, is mentioned as one of the original purchasers at Showamett (Swansey). On 1 Nov. 1677, a deed of record shows that the General Court empowered the Colony Treasurer to sell certain lands, and that Walter Briggs bought and was assigned over twice as much land as any one else, which proves his position of wealth and prominence in the colony. The record reads:

To all to whom these Presents shall come Constant Southworth, Esq^r Treasurer of his Majesties Colony of New Plimouth in New-england in America, Sendeth Greeting &c.

Whereas the Generall Court held at Plimoth in the Colony afores^d the Tenth day of July 1677 appointed and Impowered the said Treasurer with the assistance of Cornet Stetson & Mr Nath^el Thomas to make Sale of ye lands of Shawamet & to Defray the said Collonyes Debts and at another Generall Court held at Plimoth afores^d the first day of November 1677 the said Court did Declare that the said words (the lands of Shawamet) are to be Interpreted to contain the lands called the outlet as well as ye Neck it self called Shawamet and therefore did allow & confirm the Sale of the said Outlet Land as well as the Neck it self to all those to whom the said Treasurer hath made Sale thereof according to ye boundaries of the Said Out Lett thereby mentioned Viz: bounded on the East by Taunton River and on the North by Taunton Lands & on the West partly by Swansey lands which were purchased of ye Indians by Capt Thomas Willet & Mr Steven Paine Jun^r and partly by the lands of Rehoboth if the said Colonies land extend so far Westward and on the South by ye s^d Neck as Doth and may appear more fully upon Record in the s^d Court Records Now Know Ye that I the said Constant Southworth as Treasurer & by virtue of ye above Recited orders in the said Colonies Behalf for and in consideration of the full and just sum of Eight Hundred Pounds that is to say for Every Share or Thirtieth part of the abovesaid Neck & outlet the sum of Twenty Six pounds Thirteen Shillings & four pence in Lawfull money of New-england to me the said Treasurer in hand well and truly paid before the ensealing and delivery of these presents by Josiah Winslow Esq^r Nathaniel Winslow Isaac Little Ephraim Little Sammel Little & John Mendall of

the Town of Northfield in the said Colony and *Walter Briggs* Capt John Williams Richard Dwelly John James William Haek William Peakes Jonathan Jackson Richard Proute Leut^t Isaae Buck Zachariah Damon and Daniel Damon of the Town of Seituate in the s^d Colony and Capt Benjamin Church & Ensign Jonathan Alden of ye Town of Duxbery in the Colony afores^d and Edward Gray of ye Town of Plimoth in ye Colony afores^d and Capt Matthew Fuller of the Town of Barnstable in the Colony afores^d and Inerease Robinson Mallica Holloway Thomas Linkhorn John Smith Joseph Wood & David Wood of ye Town of Taunton in the Colony afores^d and Thomas Paine of the Town of Eastham in the Colony of Newplimoth afores^d and Samuel Princee of Hull the Colony of ye Massachusetts in Newengland afores^d — And which said sum of Eight Hundred Pounds that is to say the sum of Twenty six pomsds thirteen and four pence for every share or thirtieth part of all the s^d Neck and outlet I the said Treasurer do aeknowledge to have Received from all the above named Barganees according to each mans Interest quantity share or shares of and into all the said neck & outlet which he holdeth by these presents.

To Have and To Hold all the said Neck and Outlet land with all and singular the hereby granted and bargained & Intended to be granted premises unto them the said Barganees them and every of them their and every of their heirs and assigns forever that is to say To the said Josiah Winslow one share to him his heirs and assigns forever and to the said Nath^{el} Winslow Two shares to him his heirs & assigns forever and to the said Isaae Little two shares to him his heirs and assigns forever and to the said Ephraim Little half a share to him his heirs and assigns forever and to ye s^d Sam^{el} Little half a share to him his heirs and assigns forever and to ye S^d John Mendall one share to him his heirs & assigns forever and to the s^d *Walter Briggs* five shares to him his heirs & assigns forever and to ye s^d John Williams two shares to him his heirs and assigns forever and to ye said Richard Dwelly one share to him his heirs and assigns forever & to the said John James one share to him his heirs & Assigns forever &c. In Wittness whereof I the said Constant Southworth Treasurer have hereunto set my hand and ye Publiek Seal of ye s^d Colony of Newplimoth the Twelfth Day of November in the year of our Lord one thousand Six hundred Seventy and Seven. And in the Nine and twentieth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord

Charles the Second of England Scotland France and Ireland
King Defender of ye faith &c 1677.

Signed Sealed & Delivered	CONSTANT SOUTHWORTH Treas ^r
In the presence of us	Sigillum
the mark X of JOHN BERRY	publick
NATHANIEL THOMAS	Seal

This Deed was acknowledged by Mr Constant Southworth
Treasu^r this 12th day of November 1677 before me

JOHN ALDEN Assist.

Rec^d & Recorded Janu^{ry} 4 1722/3 by Sam^l Howland Reg^r

This Deed is Recorded according to order of Nathaniel Morton
Secretary to ye Court for ye Jurisdiction of Newplimoth the Book
of Evidences of Land Recorded folio :50:

A deed of this land dated 1711 refers to Joseph, Cornelius, James, Hannah and John Briggs, who were apparently the living grandchildren of Walter Briggs.

In March, 1676, *Walter Briggs*, with thirty others, was serving in King Philip's War, under Capt. John Williams, at Plymouth and Middleborough. On 22 July 1676, "the Court allowed Walter Briggs £5, 18s, 07d in land for his services in King Philip's War. At the close of the year 1675, after the disastrous battle at the Narragansett fort in which Scituate had twenty men, several of whom returned desperately wounded, an expedition was planned to be made against the Narragansett Indians. Before starting on this expedition, many of the men made their wills. On 16 Jan. 1676, Walter Briggs drew and signed his will, which was witnessed by his friends James Cudworth and William Hatch. It was at the Swamp Fight before the Narragansett fort of the previous month that Walter Briggs lost his Irishman at the Swamp, which was his estate." (See chapter on Slavery.)

Walter Briggs is said to have contributed largely of his wealth to the public good, and gave liberally to his children, as will be seen later in the chapter on the Second Generation. Deeds of large tracts of land were made to each of them before he died, and when his daughter Hannah married he bought and gave her a house on Prince Street in Boston, and helped pay for the paving of Prince Street

with cobbles or beach stones at that time. (These deeds can be found with the data of the several children in later chapters.)

Walter Briggs was twice married. The surname of his first wife Mary, who was the mother of his children, is not known. We only know that she bore him a family of four sons and a daughter, and that she was living in 1658/9. She died not long after that date, for about 1662 Walter married, for a second wife, Frances, the widow of John Rogers of Marshfield. John Rogers came into Scituate with the Rev. William Wetherell in 1644. He lived for a time in Scituate, but removed to the Marshfield side of North River in 1647. His entrance into Scituate with Mr. Wetherell indicates that he and his family were members of the Second Church, which was located a short distance across the river from the Rogers home. John Rogers died on 3 Feb. 1660/61, leaving a family of several children. His will, made 1 Feb. 1660, was probated 1 June 1662, wife Frances executrix. It gave to son John Rogers, Jr., "house and land he is now living on;" to son Joseph, land next Nathaniel Bosworth; to daughter Ann, wife of John Hudson, land at Namassakett "they are now living on;" to daughters Mary and Abigail, and mentions one Timothy Rogers, a son. The inventory presented by his wife Frances, 1 June 1661, amounted to £225 17s. 9d.

It would be interesting to know how Walter Briggs became acquainted with Mrs. Frances Rogers. A large gathering came to Scituate with Mr. Wetherell, who was born in Yorkshire and later was a schoolmaster in Kent. Bower Marsh finds Wetherell in Ipswich. One John Rogers married Frances Littleton at Stepney, Middlesex, in 1640, who may well be our Rogers. It seems not unlikely that Walter Briggs met John Rogers and his wife in Ipswich before coming to America. As Walter Briggs lived at Conihasset after 1651, and probably, with his neighbors, attended the First Church, his acquaintance with the Rogers family was not brought about by church attendance after 1651. It seems far more likely that they first met at an earlier date.

Plymouth Colony Records (Deeds), Vol. 3, p. 113

June 4, 1668, before Thomas Southworth, "Franees the wife of Walter Briggs Certifieth that George Russell deeeased about 13 years ago," [or in 1655] "being at the house of John Rogers then husband to this deponent was suddenly taken siek and growing exceeding sick, the above said John Rogers went for his wife but when he was gone the said Russell finding himself sieker mainfesting his will to his mother-in-law this deponent, Viz: — That his two sons should have his land at Mattakeesett equally between them and that his wife should have the rest of his estate, whieh he said was to little to bring them his children and that before his wife and her husband came he was taken speechless."

George Russell married a daughter of John and Frances Rogers. John Rogers in his will mentions the Russells.

On 26 Mar. 1673, Walter Briggs bought from Margaret Cock, wife of Edward Cock of Boston, mariner, for £14.10, the negro girl "Maria" for a servant for his wife Frances. An account of this sale will be found in the chapter on Slavery.

Walter Briggs's widow did not long survive him. She died intestate in 1687, and on the seventeenth day of October, 1687, administration was "Granted unto John & Joseph Rogers to administer upon the Estate of their Mother Frances Briggs late of Sittuate Desseased." The inventory of her estate reads:

A true Inventory taken of all & singular the goods & Chattells of His Widdow Frances Briggs late of Sittuate Desseased, appraised by us whose names are under written this 24th day of October 1687.

Imps. In Purse and apparrell	13		
Item a bed & furniture thereunto Belonging	5		
Item in four Cattle	7	5	
Item in provision & other small things		15	
Item in debts due to the Estate	8	4	3
Item in a debt due from Thymothy White	5		
Item in shirting cloath		10	
the totall	39	14	3

JOHN HOLBROOK
SAMUEL CLAP

Joseph Rogers appeared in the Inferior Court of Common Pleas held at Plimouth the 14th day of March Anno Dom. 1687 And made oath that the above written is a true Inventory of the goods Chattells and Creditts of Frances Briggs desceased soe farr as he know & when he knoweth of more that he will discover the same.

NATHANIEL THOMAS Cler

When Walter Briggs died in 1684 he left, besides his farm, consisting at that time of 300 acres, 84 acres granted him by the town for his services in the war, and for the loss of his "Irishman." The 84 acres remained undivided by his descendants until 1750. The will drawn by him in 1676 was presented for probate on 4 June 1684.

WILL OF WALTER BRIGGS

In ye name of God, Amen, ye 16th. day of January in ye year of our Lord God 1676, I, Walter Briggs in ye jurisdiction of New Plymouth in New England, in America, Yeoman, being aged, but of sound mind & perfect memory (praise be given to God for ye same) & calling into remembrance ye uncertaine estate of this transitory life & that all flesh must settle unto deathe when it shall please God to call & being desirouse to settle things in order, do make, constitute, ordain & declare this my last will & testament in manner & forme following, revoking and annulling by these presents all & every testament or testaments, will or wills, heretofore made by me, & declared, either by word or by writing & this to be taken for my last will and testament, & no other.

& First & principally, I recommend my soule unto Almighty God, my Creator assuredly believing I shall reseave full pardon & free remission for all my sins & be saved by ye precious blood & merits of my blessed Savior & Redeemer, Jesus Christ, &, my body to ye earth from which it came, to be buried in a decent & Christian manner as to my executor, hereafter named, shall be thought & meet convenient, & As touching such worldly estate as ye Lord in mercy hath lent me, my will & meaning is, the same shall be employed and bestowed as hereafter in this my will, is expressed.

I give and bequeath unto my loving wife, Frances Briggs, 6 pounds per annum, during her life, to be paid by my executor hereafter named, in corn or cattle or any other pay.

I give and bequeath unto my said wife one of ye two beds we lay on and ye furniture belonging to it, to be att her dispose when she dye. I bequeath unto my said wife during her life, ye loer rooms of ye west side of my dwelling house & libertie of a third part of ye sellar & room in ye chamber over ye sellar to put anythings as she may have occasion for & libertie to make use of potts, kettles & other vessels commonly made use of in ye house, that she may use them as she has occasion but not to dispose of them. & I will her liberty of keeping 2 swine & I will her liberty to make use of ye two gardens & she to have $\frac{2}{3}$ & my executor $\frac{1}{3}$ of what she raiseth of them. I will that my executor allow my said wife a gentle horse or mare to ride to meeting or any other occasion she may have & that *Jemmy ye neger catch it for her*.

Also I will give my said wife, *Mariah, ye little neger gerle*, to be with her so long as my wife lives, provided she continue at Conihasset. I give & bequeath unto my sone John Briggs as or for a homestead, my dwelling house with all barnes, outhousing, yards & ye gardens belonging to it, with my orchard, barne, field & ye field of ye northerly end of ye barne field & from ye northwest eorner of my son James Briggs his field, near ye bars at ye going out with a straight line towards ye southwest to southwest southerly to Mr. John Saffin's land; this I settled upon my son John Briggs, his heirs & assignes, forever, he & they allowing my wife to enjoy that out of ye premises which is before willed her during her life.

I give and bequeath unto my son James Briggs as & for a homestead ye house he dwells in, with ye whole field within which his house stands & from ye southwest eorner of ye sheep pen on a straight line towards ye sow-west to a maple tree by ye fence, unto ye fence of ye barne field & by ye fence round his barne untill it comes to ye barrs going into James his field, near ye northwest corner of ye sheep pen & in case this falls short in quantity of that settled on my sonn John, then my mind & will is that ye full quantity of ye lands be made up of ye lands adjoyning to ye field, in equal breadth, from end to end, & this I settle upon my son James Briggs, his heirs & assignes forever.

& My mind and will is that during ye life of my wife, that my son John Briggs take ye profit & benefitt of $\frac{2}{3}$ of all ye rest of my land undivided and my son James Briggs $\frac{1}{3}$ of ye profit thereof but after my wife's decease, my mind & will is, that all my lands in Scituate not devided as before shall be equally divided betwixt my son John & my son James, allwayes being provided & so it is to be understood & no otherwise, in case my son James



L. CABOT BRIGGS' LIVING ROOM AT EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD, ENGLAND,
1931-32



BEDROOM OF L. CABOT BRIGGS AT EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD, ENGLAND,
1931-32

pay a legasie of 40 pounds unto his sister Hannah Winslow, within one year after my wife's decease which legasie of 40 pounds I doe, by these presents, give & bequeath unto my daughter Hannah Winslow. But in case he shall refuse or neglect to pay ye same as aforesaid, then my will is, that son John Briggs pay ye same legasie of 40 pounds unto my daughter Hannah Winslow & then my mind and will is that my son John shall have $\frac{2}{3}$ of all ye land undevied as aforesaid, unto him, his heires, & assignes forever.

I do give & bequeath unto my son Cornelius Briggs one whole freeman's share of land that already appertains unto a share or shall ever after appertaine, in Swanscy & on ye easterly side of Tanton River & on ye eastward — or elsewhere, & this I bequeath to my son Cornelius, his heirs & assignes forever.

Also I give & bequeath unto my son Cornelius 30 pounds, to be paid him within 1 year after my decease, by my executor hereafter named. All ye rest of my goods & chattles, movables & immovables, not mentioned nor disposed of, I give to my eldest sonn John Briggs, whom I make & appoint to be sole executor of this my last will & testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand & seale ye day & year first above mentioned. Mem. I give & bequeath to my executor 10 pounds in money to defray my funoralle expenses — this before sealing.

WALTER BRIGGS — his seal.

Signed sealed & declared by Walter Briggs to be his last will & testament in ye presence of

WILLIAM HATCH,
JAMES CUDWORTH.

William Hatch testified upon oath before ye court that he did see Walter Briggs signe, scale, & declare this above written to be his last will & testament done before ye court att Plymouth this 4th June 1684.

NATHANIEL MORTON, Sec.

Children of WALTER BRIGGS and wife MARY ——:

- i. JOHN (Capt. John), b. Dec. 1644; m. Deborah Hawke.
- ii. JAMES (Lieut. James), b. 1645; m. Rebecca Tilden.
- iii. CORNELIUS (Capt. Cornelius), b. 1647; m. (1) Mary Russell, (2) Mehitable (Allyn) Annable.
- iv. HANNAH, b. about 1650; m. Samuel Winslow.
- v. JOSEPH, b. about 1652.

It is well to refer here to a few of Walter Briggs' friends and associates, who seem to have been among the more prominent settlers. We find their names repeatedly on various documents and deeds in connection with his own name; several of them were his close neighbors with whom he had many dealings.

TIMOTHY HATHERLEY was the most distinguished citizen of Scituate and probably Walter Briggs's most intimate friend. He first arrived at Plymouth 10 July 1623, on the ship *Ann*, and is entered on the passenger list as "of St. Olave's, Southwark, County Surrey, feltmaker," and was a fellow passenger with *Anthony Annable* and *Mrs. Elizabeth Warren*, wife of *Richard* of the *Mayflower*, both of whom were ancestors of mine. He built a house in Plymouth, which was soon destroyed by fire, and he went back to England in 1625. He returned to New England on the *Friendship* in 1630. He made but a short stay this time, as he again arrived in Boston, 5 June 1632, Deane says, upon the ship *Charles*, which sailed from Barnstable on 10 April of that year, carrying 20 passengers. (Another authority says upon the *William and Francis*.) Of the 20 passengers on the *Charles*, Hatherley is the only passenger whose name has been preserved; he is put down as of Barnstable, County Devon. Again he went back to England, and arrived at Plymouth on the ship *William*, in 1633.

There is a record of the marriage of Timothy Hatherley to Alice Collard or Pollard on the register of St. Olave's, Southwark, 26 Dec. 1614. She may have died before he came to America, although the journal of the Rev. John Lothrop gives a list of the members of his church at Scituate before his removal to Barnstable in 1639, and upon this list is "Mr. Hatherley and wife." There is a deed dated 1640, signed by Timothy and *Susan* Hatherley. Susan's name does not appear in the body of the deed, and if she was his *second* wife, and the one mentioned by Mr. Lothrop, she must have died early, for he married Lydia Huckstep, widow of Elder Nathaniel Tilden, in 1642.

Timothy Hatherley died in 1666. He had no children of his own. He provided liberally for all his own relations and

for his wife's children. A further account of Mr. Hatherley's family connections will be found under Edward Jenkins, in a later chapter.

Hatherley seems to have been a man who wanted plenty of elbow room. We find in the Plymouth Colony Records that in 1636 —

Mr. Hatherly, in behalf of the Church at Scituate, complained the place was too strait for them, the lands adjacent being stoney and not convenient to pass upon.

This plea for more land for the first settlers at Satuit, within two or three years after the settlement was begun, has often been commented on. To understand the demand for such a grant, it is necessary to recall that at that time all the lands north of Satuit Brook were being reserved for the interest of the colony, in settlement for its indebtedness to the four "Merchant Adventurers," one of whom was Mr. Hatherley; and the year before (1635), a large tract of land, later known as "Belle House Neck," had been laid out to Mr. William Vassal. These large grants caused much uneasiness to the earlier settlers, who thus found themselves confined to a rather narrow strip of land between Satuit Brook and the river, out of which Vassall's grant had been taken. In 1636, to satisfy the "Men of Kent," the so-called "greate lottes" along the northeast side of North River from Vassall's grant to the Third Herring Brook were assigned. These lots consisted of 60 and 80 acres each, and satisfied the demands of the "Men of Kent." But new settlers were continually arriving to whom lands must be granted, and in 1637 the Conihassett grant to the Adventurers of all the land north of Satuit Brook, extending to the Massachusetts Bay Colony's indefinite boundary, and running westerly for three miles into the woods, prevented further expansion in that direction by colony grants. The place was now "too strait for them;" consequently, Mr. Hatherley, Mr. Lothrop and 15 of the principal planters went before the Colony Court, and presented a plea for some of the broad marshlands lying on the south side of the river. The Court accordingly passed the order "That

they have libertie to seek out a convenient place for their residing within the Colonie." The Court was agreeable to their settling south of the river, and made a grant of all the land between the North and South Rivers, provided they make a township there, reside upon the lands, "compose their differences with Mr. Vassall," and establish and support a ferry across the river; but they had no desire to remove from Scituate and form another town, and their demand was not satisfied until 1640, when the Colony Court made Scituate a grant of "two miles" on the south and east of the river. The desire of acquiring the valuable salt meadows was responsible for these insistent requests. Hatherley and his friends had them at Farm Neck in the Conihassett. The uplands at that time were covered with forests, and, as I have said, the salt grass was highly prized. The grant of two miles in length and one mile in breadth along the river is the territory called to this day "The Two Miles." It was a part of Scituate until 1788, when it was ceded to Marshfield. For several generations the people of this section belonged to the South Parish of Scituate, now the First Parish of Norwell, and attended worship there.

Hatherley's various trips to and from New England were probably in connection with his business ventures. As one of the "Merchant Adventurers" who financed the original *Mayflower* Company, he came to Plymouth to see for himself the probable success or failure of the venture. Deane tells us his story as briefly as may be:

. . . We notice in the Colony records, 1633, "Ordered that the whole track of land between the brook at Scituate on the North-west side and Conihassett, (the gulph), be left undisposed of until we know the resolution of Mr. James Shirley, Mr. John Beauchamp, Mr. Richard Andrews and Mr. Timothy Hatherley." The grant was made to these gentlemen in 1637; but we find Mr. Hatherley here in 1634. This territory, as we have elsewhere remarked, was purchased of the other three by Mr. Hatherley, and sold in shares, he retaining the fourth of the whole: and by agreement that fourth consisted of 400 acres north and west of the Harbour, 200 acres at Musquashcutt Harbour, (afterwards Briggs's Harbour) and £10 in money. The first land which he cultivated was west of Great Musquashcutt Pond where he had

“a herring wear”, and where he had a house, 1638. In 1651 he sold a farm on Musquasheutt Harbour to *Walter Briggs*. He married Lydia, the widow of Elder Nathaniel Tilden, 1642, and changed his residence to Kent Street. He was ever ready to purchase the lands and houses of those who were desirous to remove, and to accommodate others who came into the settlement. He built several houses, one of which was afterwards the parsonage, and he purchased Mr. Lothrop’s house on his retiring to Barnstable, and sold it again to Mr. Chauncey. In short, he was the pillar and supporter of the plantation — always ready to advance money for the Town in times of difficulty, or to aid individuals with his wealth. His large tract of land west of Accord Pond he sold but in part, and gave the remainder to the Conihasset partners; it consisted of nine square miles and was laid out to him by order of government, 1663. The line of this land is called the “share line”. He gave a share in Conihasset lands to *Rhodolphus Ellmes* — a house lot to *Eglin Hanford* (north of Thomas Ensign’s, at the Harbour). . . . He gave the parsonage house and lands to the Church, 1654, and seven years afterward his Musquasheutt farm and buildings to the Church and Society. No man deserved so well of the plantation, and we believe he was generally considered as the guardian and patron of Scituate. . . . He was also an important member of the government, having been an assistant thirteen years, treasurer of the Colony, and a Commissioner of the United Colonies three years.

In 1658 he fell under the displeasure of Governor Prentice and his assistants by reason of his taking a firm stand against the oppression of the Quakers, and was afterwards suffered to remain in retirement from the cares of government. General Cudworth, his friend and fellow-sufferer in “persecution for righteousness sake,” lived to see the veil taken off from the eyes of government, and to find his proper station in society. Not so the venerable Hatherley. In 1666, he made over the remainder of his estate to Deacon Joseph Tilden, and took a bond in £100 “for the peaceable possession of it to himself and his wife Lydia during their lives.” He deceased the same year, leaving no children of his own, but for the children of Nathaniel Tilden he made a bountiful provision before his decease by deeds of gift.

Mr. Hatherley was a merchant of London, but it is probable that the seat of his family had been in Devonshire, there being a town of Hatherley in that shire. . . . It is a name worthy to be perpetuated.

We are particularly interested in Timothy Hatherley, not only on account of his distinction and of his friendship for Walter Briggs, but because his sister *Eglin Hatherley Hanford* was a direct ancestor of mine. She came to New England, a widow with two daughters, in the ship *Planter*, which sailed from Plymouth, England, on 16 Apr. 1635. Before her arrival, an older daughter, Lettice Hanford, was married to Edward Foster, and her brother, Timothy Hatherley, in anticipation of her arrival, had given her a house lot adjoining what was at that time the homestead of James Cudworth, north of Satuit Brook. A full account of the family of Eglin Hatherley Hanford is given under Edward Jenkins in another chapter.

On the passenger list of the *Planter*, on the same voyage with Eglin (Hatherley) Hanford and her daughters, appears the name of RODOLPHUS ELMES, age 15, another ancestor of mine. He seems to have been of the same party, and may have been a relation or connection of the Hatherleys, as his family lived in Southwark, where Timothy first married; and Timothy later gave *Rodolphus Elmes* one of the 26 shares in Conihassett lands.

GENERAL JAMES CUDWORTH, a man of property, and one of the Conihassett Partners, was a "particular friend" of Timothy Hatherley, and a friend and neighbor of *Walter Briggs*. Deane says he probably came over with Hatherley in 1632. He was called a "salter," settled in Scituate in 1634, the same year that Mr. Hatherley came, and was admitted a freeman in January 1634/5. James Cudworth came from London. He was a son of the Rev. Ralph Cudworth, D.D., of Cambridge, England, a graduate of Emmanuel College, and Rector of Aller in Somersetshire. Litchfield, in "The Litchfield Family in America," says that his wife, the mother of James Cudworth, was believed to have been Mary Machell, of the Saxon family of Machell, and the nurse of Prince Henry, son of James I of England, and heir to the English throne, who died in 1612. Rev. Ralph Cudworth died in 1624, and his widow married Rev. John Stoughton, D.D., with whom James Cudworth carried on an intimate correspondence regarding affairs in the colony.

John Cudworth (Coitsworth, meaning the place by the hill) married Margery Oldham, daughter of Richard, Mayor of Oldham, about the middle of the fifteenth century. Their great-grandson was Rev. Ralph Cudworth of Warneth, who married Jane, daughter of Arthur Ashton. A son of Rev. Ralph and Jane (Ashton) Cudworth was the Rev. Ralph Cudworth of Aller in Somerset County, England, who was Vicar of Coggshall in Essex in 1606, and later Chaplain to King James I. He died in 1624. He married Mary, daughter of John Maehell. They had two sons, Ralph, known as "Intellectual Cudworth," author of "Intellectual System," and James (Gen. James of Scituate). (From "Boston Transcript," notes by "Piedmont," in reply to inquiry, 30 Dec. 1931.)

James Cudworth's first home in Scituate was near the bridge at the Harbor. In a letter to his stepfather he described it as "but a mean one," although it was still "the biggest" one in the settlement, and was therefore used for religious services before the first Meeting House was built. In 1638, he with my ancestor *Anthony Annable* and others, on account of troubles which occurred in Mr. Lothrop's congregation, appear in a grant of land at Sippecan, "for seating of a town and congregation." This was not accepted, and instead they went to Barnstable in 1639/40. James Cudworth took with him from Scituate the son of his neighbor, Thomas Byrd, as his servant or apprentice. The control which the early settlers had over their apprentices is shown in the following record or official account:

Jan. 4, 1641, Thomas Byrd, servant to Mr. James Cudworth of Barnstable, for running away from his sd Master, and breaking a house or two in Barnstable and taking some apparrell and viettuals, is senteneed to be once whipt in Plimouth and once whipt at Barnstable, before the next Court of Assistants; and when his sd master comes, then order to be taken for the payment of his fecs, etc.

His father was undoubtedly the Thomas Byrd mentioned in Deane as "cultivating land on the Third Cliff before 1628."

On 8 June 1642, James Cudworth sold his five-acre farm near Satuit Brook to my ancestor, *Thomas Ensign*, adjoining lands of Timothy Hatherley, which may suggest that Walter Briggs also lived near there before he moved to Conihassett with his friends. Cudworth was a Deputy to the General Court at Plymouth from Barnstable, 1640 and 1642, but he was enrolled in both the Scituate and Barnstable military companies in 1643. Deane says that he returned to Scituate in 1643, and lived for a time south-east of Colman's Hills, in a house that he afterwards sold to Thomas Robinson in 1650. In 1661 this house was sold by Robinson to *John Otis*, who removed from Hingham to Scituate. In 1648 James Cudworth bought one-thirtieth share in the Conihassett grant, which his friend Hatherley had made to Rev. Charles Chauncey and others. With this as a nucleus, he bought, in 1659, the home and farm buildings of John Hoar near Mann Hill, when John Hoar moved to Concord, and sold the remaining portion of his farm to John Saffin. This farm of Captain Cudworth's is the one that became later that of Deacon Ward Litchfield.

Cudworth had a most interesting life, a description of which is found in "The Early Planters of Scituate," by Harvey H. Pratt. He rendered distinguished service to the colony, and is frequently referred to in the records as Constable, Deputy, Assistant, etc. He was selected to determine the line of the grant to Hatherley and the Merchant Adventurers, and was one of a committee in 1650 to decide between the English and the Indians as to the title to lands at Showamet and Pautuxet. In 1652 he was captain of the Military Company of Scituate, and in 1653 and 1654, one of the Council of War when an expedition was contemplated against the Dutch. He was, next to Hatherley, the most spirited and useful citizen of Scituate, but, like Hatherley, he was persecuted for years by the more narrow-minded Pilgrims on account of his tolerant attitude to the Quakers. We read in the Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. II, under date of 2 Mar. 1657/8:

Whereas this Court recieved a petition from sundry psons of the towne of Scittuate, both of the milletary companie and



BARBARA COOPER

1715-77

(MRS. FRANCIS CABOT, JR.)

Painting by Jones of Ireland, 1760 (see page 14, Cabot Genealogy)

others, therein expressing sundry grievances relateing vnto some late carriages of Capt James Cudworth, a commission officer of the milletary company of Scittuate, in reference to entertaining of such psons as are comonly called Quakers, by suffering them to meet in his house, and others with them, which said Quakers haue rendered themselues in their doctrines speeches and carriages destructous to the peace of this jurisdiction, the Court, haucing seriously wayed and considered the pmisses together with other concurrent expressions which haue come from him, the said Capt. Cudworth, which in their nature, as wee apprehend, tendeth to disturbance of the peace of this psent goument, doe order as followeth, Viz.: that the said Captaine James Cudworth by the Court is discharged of his place as capt. of the mellitary companie of the towne of Scittuate; the said Capt. James Cudworth alsoe desired the same.

[This court proceeded to appoint Lieutenant Torrey and Ensign Williams in command of the company.]

Deane's "History of Scituate" gives a detailed account of Cudworth's troubles with the authorities. He tells us that Cudworth was Deputy to the Colony Court in 1649 and for several succeeding years, and was an Assistant to the government in 1656, 1657 and 1658, and also a Commissioner of the United Colonies in 1657. In 1658 he fell under the displeasure of those Commissioners because he would not set his hand to the severe laws which that board propounded to the several General Courts to be enacted against the Quakers, and also under the displeasure of Governor Prence and the Court of Plymouth Colony for the stand which he took in favor of toleration. Occasion was sought to displace him. A letter was produced which he was said to have written to a friend, then in England, who was evidently also an Assistant in the Plymouth Colony. It was dated from Scituate, in 1658.

Deane gives a long extract, from which I quote the following:

As to the state and condition of things amongst us, it is sad and so like to continue. The antichristian, persecuting spirit is very active, and that in the powers of this world. He that will not lash, persecute and punish men that differ in matters of

religion must not sit on the bench nor sustain any honors in the Commonwealth. Last election Mr. Hatherley and myself were left off the bench, and myself discharged of my Captaincy, because I had entertained some of the Quakers at my house, thereby that I might be better acquainted with their principles. I thought it better to do so than, with the blind world, to censure, condemn, rail at and revile them, when they neither saw their persons nor knew any of their principles.

But the Quakers and myself cannot close in diverse things, and so I signified to the Court, but told them withal that, as I was no Quaker, so I would be no persecutor.

Cudworth describes in this letter, very temperately but in some detail, his own persecution by the Court. The petition against him was signed "by nineteen hands," and the resulting act of the Court was read at the head of his military company. He says:

If I had not been present and made a speech to them, I fear there would have been such actings as would have been of sad consequence.

He then describes a second petition, signed "by fifty-four hands" in his favor, but —

The Court returned the petitioners an answer, with much plausibleness of speech, carrying with it great show of respect to them, readily acknowledging with the petitioners my parts and gifts, and how useful I had been in my place, professing that they had nothing against me, only in that thing of my giving entertainment to the Quakers.

Here he cites extracts from the laws against the Quakers, and continues:

All these carnal and anti-christian ways, being not of God's appointment, effect nothing to the hindering of them in their course. It is only the word and the Spirit of the Lord that is able to convince gainsayers. They have many meetings and many adherents; almost the whole town of Sandwich. And give me leave to acquaint you a little of their sufferings, which is grievous and saddens the hearts of most of the precious saints of God: it lies down and rises up with them, and they can not put

it out of their minds when they see poor families deprived of their comforts and brought into penury and want. As for the means by which they were impoverished — they were in the first place scrupulous of an oath; why then they must put in force an old law: they must all take the oath of fidelity — this being tendered, they will not take it — then they must pay five pounds or depart the Colony in such a time; when the time comes, the Marshall goes and fetches away their cows and other cattle; another Court comes, they are required again to take the oath — they can not — then five pounds more. A poor weaver that had 7 or 8 small children had but two cows, and both were taken from him. The Marshall asked him what he would do, and the man said that, “God who gave him them he doubted not would still provide for him.”

Cudworth tells of fines imposed on Sandwich men for meetings:

. . . one hundred and fifty pounds, wherof W. Newland is twenty-four pounds for himself and wife at ten shillings a meeting — W. Allen forty-six pounds — the poor weaver afore spoken of twenty pounds. . . . What will be the end of such courses and practices the Lord only knows. . . . I am informed of three or four score last Court presented, for not coming to publick meetings: and let me tell you how they brought this about. You may remember a law once made called Thomas Hineckley’s law, “that if any neglect the worship of God in the place where he lives, and set up a worship contrary to God, and the allowance of this Government, to the publick profanation of God’s Holy Day, and ordinances, he shall pay ten shillings.” This law would not reach what then was aimed at, because he must do all things therein expressed, or else break not the law. In March last a Court of Deputies was called, and some acts touching Quakers were made, and then they contrived to make this law serviceable to them by putting out the word *and* and putting in the word *or*, which is a disjunctive and makes every branch to become a law; yet they left it dated June 6, 1651; and so it stands as an act of the Gen. Court, they to be the authors of it seven years before it was in being; and so yourselves have a share in it if the Record lie not.

We are wrapped up in a labyrinth of confused laws, that the freeman’s power is quite gone, and it was said last June Court by one, that he knew nothing the freemen had there to do. Sand-

wich men may not go to the Bay lest they be taken up for Quakers — warrants lie in ambush to apprehend and bring them before a Magistrate, to give an account of their business. Some of the Quakers in R. I. came to bring their goods, and that on far more reasonable terms than the professing and oppressing Merchants of the County — but that will not be suffered. And truly it moves bowels of compassion in all sorts, except those in place, who carry it with a high hand towards them. Through mercy we have yet among us the worthy Mr. Dunster, whom the Lord hath made boldly to bear testimony against the spirit of persecution.

Our bench now is Thomas Prince, Gov., Mr. Collier, Capt. Willet, Capt. Winslow, Mr. Alden, Lieut. Southworth, W. Bradford, Thomas Hinckley. Mr. Collier, last June, would not sit on the bench if I sat there, and now will not sit in the next year, unless he may have thirty pounds to sit by him. Our Court and Deputies last June, made Capt. Winslow Major. Surely we are all mercenary soldiers, that must have a Major imposed upon us. Doubtless the next Court they may choose us a Governor, and Assistants also: a freeman shall need to do nothing but bear such burdens as are laid upon him. Mr. Alden hath deceived the expectations of many, and indeed lost the affection of such as I judge were his cordial Christian friends, who is very active in such ways as I pray God may not be charged upon him to be oppressions of a high nature.

JAMES CUDWORTH.

For twelve years thereafter Captain Cudworth lived at Conihassett, with no public duties to harass him, but he was busy as arbitrator or umpire in land disputes of his neighbors, and was appointed by the Magistrates themselves to settle some vexed questions. When Governor Josiah Winslow succeeded Prence in 1673, the Magistrates re-established him into the “right and privilege of a freeman of this jurisdiction.” As he was loath to obey the laws in persecution of the Quakers, he was disinclined to lead his troops against the neighboring colonies of New York for the conquest of additional territory; but when called upon to engage in conflict with the treacherous enemy at home, it was without hesitation that he sought the thick of the trouble in the Narraganset country. In 1675 he was chosen “General and Commander in Chief of all the forces that are

or may be sent forth against the enemy," and continued in that office until the close of King Philip's War. At the close of hostilities he was appointed to distribute Ireland's bounty to the sufferers in that war, and was one of a committee to make sale of the Indian conquest lands and the division of those at Showamett, Assonet, Agawam and Sippecan, which were awarded to individual soldiers for their services.

On 7 June 1681, General Cudworth was chosen Deputy Governor. In September, 1681, he was made agent of the colony and dispatched to London to obtain from the Crown (Charles I) a new charter patterned after that of Connecticut. He made his will on 15 Sept. 1681, before he sailed, and *Thomas Hiland*, one of my ancestors, witnessed it. Arriving in London, he had time only to pen a letter to Governor Hinckley at Barnstable, when he was stricken with smallpox and died. His will was proved and allowed on 7 July 1682.

Deane says:

The magnanimity of General Cudworth has rarely been equalled, and when we couple it with the mildness and humanity of his demeanor, his character reaches the sublime. If he was ever reproached, it was for virtues which his coevals failed to attain.

Such was the type of man who became one of Walter Briggs's dearest friends and neighbors.

Other friends and neighbors of Walter Briggs, whose names appear in connection with his on deeds, etc., were Joseph Colman, John Saffin and Richard Garrett. Little is known of Joseph Colman, except that he was in Scituate in 1638, and that his house was on the west side of Colman's Hills, where several generations of the family dwelt. He was at one time constable of Scituate, a position to which, Pratt says, only men of the highest standing and proved integrity were elected. Deane tells us that Joseph Colman removed to Connecticut before 1690, and that most of his children belonged to the Society of Friends (Quakers).

JOHN SAFFIN, "lawyer," was another man of real distinction who appears to have been a near friend of *Walter*

Briggs. Pratt gives a very interesting biographical sketch of him in his "Early Planters of Scituate." Saffin was born in Woolverston, County Somerset, England, and appears in New England about 1645-47. His farm adjoined that of John Hoar, later that of General Cudworth, near Little Musquashcut Pond. He was a remarkable man in many ways. Although most of his acts which obtained notoriety and his service in public office were after he left Scituate, he always owned land there, was a Conihassett Partner in 1673, and even after his removal from Scituate to Boston the General Court of Plymouth granted that he and his partner, Mr. Richard Wharton, should —

have a peculiar libertie to themselves and other pynors to improve such pyne, spruce, and cedar timber as groweth on our country commons, for the producing of rosin, turpentine and mastick XXX X for the terme of ten years from June 15, 1671.

It is said that Saffin had been educated for the bar, which was not the case with most of the early "lawyers" in New England. He was a Selectman in 1653, but he was not much in the public eye during his residence in Scituate. "He was evidently intent on clearing his farm" (having added to his former holding by purchase of a part of that of his neighbor, John Hoar, in 1660) "and rearing his sturdy sons. His knowledge of law was infrequently called into use by his neighbors, and there are to be found three instruments, evidences of transactions in Scituate, which he probably drew." Pratt here refers in a footnote to these instruments, but does not mention Walter Briggs's deed. In 1660 Saffin went to Virginia for a short time, and engaged in trade there, probably in the tar and resin trade, which he afterwards conducted in Boston. He removed from Scituate to Boston in 1670-71, and it is said that, while conducting a respectable mercantile business, he engaged with other Boston merchants in importing negroes from Guinea. Pratt's story of Saffin's public services in Boston is very interesting, but too long to quote here. Deane tells us that Saffin was Representative first in 1684; Speaker of the House in 1686; Counsellor after the Union

of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies in 1692. He removed to Bristol, Rhode Island, about 1688, and was the first Judge of Probate for the County of Bristol, from 1692 to 1701, when he was appointed *Judge of the Superior Court* of Massachusetts. He died in Bristol, 29 July 1710.

Pratt says that there were but three lawyers in Scituate from the early days of Plymouth Colony to the Union in 1692. They were Edward Foster, a first comer, and John Hoar and John Saffin, neighbors at Little Musquashcut Pond.

DEACON RICHARD GARRETT was in Scituate as early as 1636, when he was the first Town Clerk of the town of Scituate, incorporated that year, and was afterwards the first "clarke" chosen by the Conihassett Partners in 1649, being a skillful penman, though not himself a partner. He served for seven years, and was succeeded in that office by James Torrey, James Cudworth and Stephen Vinal, successively. Richard Garrett was a Deacon of the First Church, and his place of residence, Deane tells us, was at what is now known as Scituate Centre, near the "Civic Centre." He says: "His land was north of the first Society's Meeting House, as it now stands" (1831, "the Old Sloop"), which was probably his house lot, also east of Eagle's Nest Swamp, where his sons John and Joseph settled. He married, about 1634, Lydia, daughter of *Elder Nathaniel Tilden*, and was listed as a householder thereafter, Deane says, "before 1646." John Saffin gave to Joseph Garrett, son of Deacon Richard, two tenths of a thousand acres of land, which land Joseph, Sr., bequeathed by his will to his only son, Joseph Garrett, Jr. Two granddaughters of Deacon Richard Garrett married grandsons of Walter Briggs.

CHAPTER IV

WHITE, INDIAN AND NEGRO SLAVES OF OUR ANCESTORS AND OTHER EARLY SETTLERS, 1632-1830

One of my earliest recollections is of being taken by my father to the old family homestead in Scituate, Massachusetts, where he was born, and of his pointing out to me the cleared fields and the many stone walls, laid with such precision that they still stand as boundaries and answer to the descriptions in deeds made two hundred years ago. He told me that these fields, originally covered with forests and rocks, had been cleared for the plow by our ancestors; and he impressed me with his own belief that all this work had been done by our ancestors themselves, fathers and sons working from sunrise until sunset, as was the custom when he was a boy. He had watched his own father working in the shipyard and his brothers on the farm until the time came for them to be apprenticed at some shipyard.

It was not until I began to make an intensive study of the genealogy of my own family that I learned that these early ancestors had not only slaves but indentured servants and undesirables, who had been transported to this country as a result of their anti-social behavior in England or Ireland, and their services sold at auction here. Also the labor of paupers was sold to the highest bidder, the men to work on the farms and the women in the households. I found that my own ancestor, Walter Briggs, had all of these forms of service, excepting that he did not employ paupers. His will, made in 1676, says:

I will that my executor allow my said wife a gentle horse, or mare, to ride to meeting or any other occasion she may have, and that Jemmy, ye neger, shall catch it for her. Also I will my said wife Mariah, ye little neger girle, to be with her so long as my wife lives.

Wm. C. A. Ward

signed and added their list of goods
and negroes to the above written
petition to the said March 1793
by the said Mary Cook in the
presence of the wife of

[illegible]

Here were at least two slaves. I find that Walter Briggs bought Mariah from one Margaret Cox (or Cock), wife of Edward Cock of Boston, mariner, for £14, 10s., as shown by the following deed:

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS that I, Margret Coek the wife of Edw. Coek of Boston in New England Marriner witnesseth that the said Margret Coek for and in consideration of the sum of fourteen pounds tenn shillings payed by Walter Briggs of Seituate in New England aforesaid unto me the said Margret Coek the receipt whereof is acknowledged by these presents; have for myselfe and husband, by vertue of a letter of attorney and power thereby given to me by my said husband; given granted, bargained and sould unto the said Briggs all our right tytle intrest claime or demand that we the said Margret Coek or Edw. Coek have in or to a negro girle called by the name of Maria: And to the only pp. use and behoof of him the said Walter Brigg his heires, executors admrs. and assigns: During her natural life. And the said Margt. Coek on the behalf of her husband and by virtue of that power and authority granted unto her by her said husband and for him herself and their heires executors, admrs. & assignes doe covenant promise and grant to and with the sd Walter Briggs his heires, executors admrs and assignes that he the said Briggs his heires, admrs and assignes may and shall from this time and at all times during the naturall life of the said negro imploy, improve and in every respect comand and improve the said negro girl as his and their propr estate without the lest mollestaion hinderance contradietion or denyall of any pson or psons whatsoever claimeing or haveing or pretending to have any right title intrest claime or demand in or to the said negro girle And that the said Coek for herselfe and husband doe covenant and promise to and with the said Walter Briggs his heires and assignes that they the said Margt Cock and Edw. Cock her husband at ye very time and instante immediately before the sealeing, signeing, and delivery of these presents weare the true and lawfull owners of the said negro girle And alsoe doe covenant and promise to defend the said Walter Briggs his heires and assignes against any pson or psons lawfully or unlawfully claimeing or pretending to have any right, tytle or intrest in the said negro girle. In witness whereof the said Margt. Cock on the behalfe of her husband and herselfe in confirmation of this bill of saile have set to her hand and seale this six and twentyeth day of Mareh one thousand six hundred seaventy & three

signed sealed & this bill of saile and negro girle above written delivered to the said Walter Briggs by the said Margt Cocke in the presence of us

the marke of
MARGRETT(N) COCK (seal)

the marke of
RICHARD (R) BENNETT
JOSHUA HOLDSWORTH.

BOND

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS that I Margret Cocke on the behalfe of my husband Edw. Cock as also for myselfe our heirs, execturs admrs and assignes have firmly bound ourselves our heirs, execturs admrs & assigns in the sum of twenty-nine pounds of currant money of New England given under my hand and seal this six and twentieth day of March 1673.

The condition of this obligation is such that if the above written Walter Briggs shall enjoye a negro girle called Maria according to the true meaning of a deed of saile beareing date with these presents then this bond is to be of noe force or otherwise to be in full power and vertue in law.

Signed sealed and delivered the marke of
in presence of us MARGRETT(Mc) COCK (seal)

the marke of
RICHARD () BENNETT
JOSHUA HOLDSWORTH

The records show that this Mariah passed to Walter's widow, then to their son John; and later that John's widow, Deborah, disposed of Mariah as follows, 1688/9:

Whereas Mariah, a negro girl, is servant to me for term of life I, Deborah Briggs, have granted to Cornelius Briggs of Barnstable, Maria, ye negro, my servant.

Capt. Cornelius Briggs died in 1693, and his will provided that his "*negro servant woman named Manria shall, thirteen years after date, be set free and at liberty, to be at her own disposing.*" In 1694, Lieut. James Briggs, executor of the will of his brother Cornelius, sold Mariah to Stephen Otis of Scituate for £11 silver money, "*she to serre the said*

To all Christian people, to whom this present writing shall
Come, I Deborah Briggs of Barnstable, in the County of New-
England, & Administratrix to my late husbands Estate, send
Greeting. Whereas I within named Maria a Negro Girl & servant
to me, for term of life by Vertue of my being Administratrix to
my said late husbands Estate, & as doth appear by this within
written Bill of Sale. Now know ye that I of said Deborah Briggs
for divers good Causes & Considerations mo^t especially moving
Have given, granted, Assigned & set over by these presents, do
fully & Absolutely give grant Assigne & set over unto Cornelius
Briggs of Barnstable in the County of Barnstable in New-England
All such Right, Title, Duty, Term, of Service to Come, Claim
Interest, Services, & Demands, whatsoever, which I of said Deborah
Briggs have of, in, or to my said within named Maria a Negro
my said servant (together with a little boy (named William)
some of my said Marias body since my within written) or which
I might or ought to have of & in them by force & Vertue
of my within written Bill of Sale. In witness whereof
I have hereunto set my hand & Seal this twenty fourth day
of January. one thousand six hundred Eighty & eight or Eighty nine

Signed, Sealed, &
Delivered in my presence
on the within

Deborah Briggs

Anthony Collins
Samuel Clap

Otis from date until eleven years shall be fully ended, — at the end of which time the negro woman is to be free and at her own disposal."

Walter Briggs also had one of the undesirables who were transported to this country, for on 26 Jan. 1676, the selectmen of Scituate sent to Governor Josiah Winslow, at his house in Marshfield, at his request, a list of the losses in King Philip's War, and in the list is the following: "*Walter Briggs lost his Irishman at the swamp, which was his Estate, where he was shot by an Indian on this raid through Scituate.*" The Court allowed Walter Briggs land for the loss of this Irishman, for whose services he had undoubtedly paid the colony.

As early as 1658/9 Timothy Hatherley was deputed to go and reason with Mary, wife of Walter Briggs, in consequence of "her unpleasantness with the contumacious apprentice, Robert Sproat [Sprout], who was stubborn and disobedient;" and Walter about this time sued Robert "Sprought" for £20, "for not serving his full time, and other debts and dues."

Later, in looking up my Cushing, Otis and Thomas ancestors, I found that they and most of my other ancestors had slaves and bound servants, some of them as many as four or five; and going further into the histories of the principal families of the immigrants, I found there was scarcely a family without two or more slaves, as well as indentured servants and undesirables. This interested me and I followed, generation after generation, the holding of slaves by Massachusetts families and also the trade in slaves. I found that slavery did not disappear in Massachusetts until 1836, and that for some years after the Revolution, when all persons, under the Bill of Rights, were supposed to be *free*, certain families still had slaves; and many of the most prominent old families in Massachusetts had ships engaged in the slave trade, from which they received a large revenue.

It was not until after the Revolution that our ancestors did more of their own work. The slaves were gradually given their freedom; indentured servants disappeared, and

about 1840 the towns gave up selling the labor of their poor.

Malcolm Cowley tells us, in his "Adventures of an American Slaver," that the great days of the slave trade began in 1442, when the explorer, Anton Gonsalvez, carried ten blackamoors to Lisbon. His purpose was to save their souls. Columbus, who opened two continents to slavery, himself shipped home five hundred Indians, suggesting that they be sold in the markets of Seville. Sir John Hawkins made three slaving voyages from Guinea to the West Indies. Sir Francis Drake and Paul Jones, the sea heroes of two nations, helped to carry black cargoes.

The first slave ship that ever entered a North American port for the sale of its human merchandise was a Dutch trading vessel, which landed twenty negroes at Jamestown, almost simultaneously with the landing of the Pilgrims of the *Mayflower* at Plymouth Rock, in 1620. However slender and dubious its legal basis, slavery existed in each and all of the colonies that united to declare and maintain their independence, though slaves were more numerous in certain portions of the South.

A recent article by Mr. P. B. Cole tells briefly of conditions under the Dutch and English in New York:

Slavery had been established in New York in the early days of the West India Company, when every kind of advantage was being offered to attract new colonists, among other inducements being the promise that "the company will use their endeavors to supply the colonists with as many blacks as they conveniently can."

From that time (1629) on the traffic in slaves had been carried on. Between the years 1680 and 1700 thousands of negro slaves were imported from Africa. By 1712 nearly half the population of New York, according to one historian, was black. Many wealthy families owned as many as forty or fifty slaves.

It is interesting to know that one of the earliest bouweries granted by the Dutch was given to one Emanuel de Groot, a giant negro, who, with his wife and ten other negroes and their wives, received their freedom and the privilege of cultivating a fine farm near old Peter Stuyvesant's famous bouwerie. They were required to pay twenty-two and a half bushels of grain and one fat hog yearly as a tax to the company.

Know all men by these presents that I Margaret Locke
on the behalfs of my husband Dr. Cork as also for my self
our heirs Executors and assigns have firmly bound
solues our heirs Executors and assigns unto Walter Briggs
of & situate in new England his heirs Executors and assigns
in the Sum of ninety nine pounds of current monny of
new England Union in my hand and seal this 8th day of
May of march 1673

The Condition of this obligation is such that if the above written
Walter Briggs shall employe and gre girl called Maria according
to the true meaning of a bill of sale bearing date with these
presents then this bond is to be of no force or otherwise
to be in full power and vertue in law

signed sealed and delivered
in presence of us:

the marks of;

Margaret Lock

Richard Bennett

Joshua Holbrook

Know all men by these presents that I Lieut James Briggs executor
to the last will and testament of my brother Capt Cornelius
Briggs late deceased have bargined and sold unto Stephen
Otis of situate and gre woman called Moriah to serve the said Otis or
his heirs or assigns from the date of this presents until above
years be fully ended and completed ~~the~~ which shalld be paid
the 22 day of april next in suing the debt of this presents at the
end of which term of time the negro woman is to be free and
at her own disposal as both are more at large by my brother's
last will and testament and I do covenant to and with the
said Otis that at the time of the above bargined presents that
I have full power to sell the said negro woman for the
termes of the years above in shew and I do hereby acknowledge
that I have received in hand of the said Otis a hundred pounds silver monny
for the said negro woman in witness whereof I have hereunto set
my hand and seal this 6th day of ~~January~~ 1674
witness
Job Otis

February James Briggs

BOND GIVEN TO WALTER BRIGGS ON PURCHASE OF MARIA

(See page 88)

JAMES BRIGGS, EXECUTOR OF CORNELIUS BRIGGS, DEEDS MARIA TO STEPHEN OTIS

(See page 88)

Although in the main the slaves were decently treated by their Dutch and English owners, they were ignorant savages and frequently made trouble, and the authorities made strict laws to govern the blacks and prevent any uprisings. Slaves were prohibited from gathering on Sundays in groups larger than four. They were forbidden to carry guns, knives or even clubs, and to go about at night without lighted lanterns.

In spite of such drastic restrictions, there were several uprisings of the negroes and numerous fires set by disgruntled slaves. The first serious uprising occurred in 1707, when a dozen or more slaves met at midnight in an orchard near Maiden Lane, armed with guns, knives, hatchets and clubs. They set fire to an out-building, and when the fire brought citizens running to fight the flames, the slaves fell upon them and brutally murdered nine white men, wounding as many more.

The punishment meted out to the slaves was even more horrible than their crime had been. Several were burned at the stake, one was broken on the wheel, and one was hung in chains to die slowly of starvation as a solemn warning to other slaves.

Even more serious was the "Great Negro Plot," which came thirty-four years later, which was really more of a panic on the part of the whites than an actual plot on the part of the negroes. It all started when a series of fires occurred in March, 1741, alarmed the citizens and convinced them that the slaves must be responsible. A proclamation was issued offering a reward to any one who would tell what he knew about the "plot."

A negress, Peggy Carey, who had been arrested for stealing, made a startling confession, probably believing that she would be given her freedom, and implicated many negroes of the town. It is now thought by many reliable historians that Peggy Carey drew largely on her imagination for the bloodcurdling details of the "plot" which she gave. However, the terrified white citizens of New York were thoroughly convinced that a wholesale plot to burn the town and kill the whites was under way, and in reprisal they dealt death ruthlessly upon the unfortunate blacks. Fourteen were burned at the stake, eighteen hanged, and many transported. The panic lasted for four or five months, and is as dark a blot on Manhattan's history as the earlier cruelties practiced on the Indians.

Oddly enough, after the panic died down, there was a growing feeling of shame over the whole affair, and popular sentiment grew in favor of the blacks, for they were given the franchise within

ten years, and in 1758 an act was passed which made all children born of slave parents free.

We find no such record of slave uprisings in New England. Chief Justice Parsons of Massachusetts wrote in 1806, in rendering a decision in the case of Edom London, "Slavery was introduced into Massachusetts soon after the first settlement and was tolerated until after the ratification of the Constitution of 1780."

The Massachusetts law of 1641, as interpreted by Moore in his "History of Slavery in Massachusetts," provided for (1) Indian slaves (captives taken in war); (2) negro slaves (the colonists' importations of "strangers"); (3) criminals (of any color) condemned to slavery as punishment for offences. It sanctioned the slave trade and the perpetual bondage of Indians and negroes, their children and children's children. It has been said that Massachusetts anticipated by many years anything of the sort to be found in the *statutes* of Virginia, Maryland or South Carolina, or those of the sister colonies in New England. As Moore says, "At the very birth of the foreign commerce of New England the African slave trade became a regular business."

The earliest mention I can find of a negro in Massachusetts is in the story told of some Indians who were frightened by the sight of a black man who had lost his way in the tangled path of the forest (given in Wood's "New England Prospect," 1634, p. 77). The Indians, "worse scared than hurt, seeing a blackamore in the top of a tree looking out for his way which he had lost, surmised he was *Abamacho*, or the devil, deeming all devils who were blacker than themselves; and being near to the plantation they posted to the English and entreated them to conjure this devil to his own place; who, finding him to be a poor wandering blackamore, conducted him to *his master*." This was in 1633. It is circumstantial evidence of a twofold nature; that is, it proves that there were negroes in the colony at a date much earlier than can be fixed by other data, and that the negroes were slaves. It is a fair presumption that

this "wandering blackamore" who was "conducted to his master" was not the only negro slave in the colony.

In the Pequot War of 1637 the Narragansett Indians joined the English and received a part of the prisoners as slaves in return for their services. Miantunnomah was given eighty, Ninigret was to have twenty. Mather says of the principal engagement:

The captives that were taken were about one hundred and eighty, which were divided between the two Colonies, and they intended to keep them as Servants, but they could not endure the Yoke, for few of them continued any comfortable time with their masters.

Prior to that time an occasional offender against the laws was punished by being sold into slavery.

Captain Stoughton, who assisted in the work of exterminating the Pequots, after his arrival in the enemy's country, wrote to Governor Winthrop as follows:

By this pinnace you shall receive 48 or 50 women and children . . . concerning which there is one I formerly mentioned that is the fairest and largest I saw amongst them, to whom I have given a cloake to cloathe her. It is my desire to have her for a servant, if it may stand with your good liking, else not. There is a little squaw that Steward Culacut desireth, to whom he hath given a coate. Lieutenant Davenport also desireth one, to wit, a small one that hath three strokes upon her stomach, thus: |||+. He desireth her if it will stand with your liking. Solomon, the Indian, desireth a young squaw, which I know not. (Letter in Massachusetts Archives.)

In 1637 Hugh Peters writes to Governor John Winthrop, from Salem:

Mr. Endicott and myselfe salute you in the Lord Jesus, etc. Wee have heard of a divdiance of women and children in the Bay, and would bee glad of a share, viz., a young woman or girle, and a boy if you think good. I wrote to you for some boyes for Bermudas, which I think is considerable. (Winthrop, Vol. I, p. 234.)

In this application of Hugh Peters we have a glimpse of the beginning of the colonial slave trade. He wanted "some

boyes for the Bermudas" which he thought was "considerable." It would seem to indicate that this disposition of Indian boys was in accordance with custom and the previous practice of the authorities. At any rate, it is certain that in the Pequot War they took many prisoners. Some of these, who had been "disposed of to particular persons in the country," ran away, and, being brought in again, were "branded on the shoulder." (Winthrop, Vol. I, p. 232.)

The first American-built slaver, according to George Francis Dow, in his "Slave Ships and Slaving," seems to have been a small ship, the *Desire*, built at Marblehead in 1636. In the summer of 1637 she went on a trading voyage to the West Indies, and part of her cargo was two women and fifteen boys, members of the Pequot tribe of Indians, who had been taken captive after the Swamp Fight, at Fairfield, Connecticut. The *Desire* came to anchor at "Providence Isle," and there the unfortunate Indians were sold into slavery. (Winthrop's Journal says that these captives were intended for Bermuda, but that Mr. Pierce missed it and carried them to "Providence Isle.") The return cargo was cotton, tobacco and *negro slaves*, and when the ship reached Boston, on 26 Feb. 1638, three of these negroes were sold to Samuel Maverick, who lived on the island in the harbor now known as East Boston. It was not long before negro and Indian slaves were owned in all of the New England settlements. (Dow evidently overlooked the account given in Wood's "New England Prospect," 1634, p. 77.)

Governor Winthrop wrote to Governor Bradford of Plymouth, 28 July 1637, an account of the successes against the Pequots and "ye Lord's greate mercies toward us in our prevailing against His and our enimies," in which he says:

The prisoners were devided, some to those by ye River (the Connecticut Colony) and the rest to us. Of these, we send the male children to Bermuda, by Mr. William Pierce, and ye women and maide children are disposed about in ye townes. Ther have now been slaine and taken in all about 700. (Massachusetts Historieal Society Collections, Vol. IV, pp. iii, 360. Compare

Boston March 14th 1734
 I promise to pay unto M^r Jeremiah Condy the
 sum of twenty five pounds on Demand it being
 for a negro Boy Named Sharpe Charles Coffin

PURCHASE OF A SLAVE IN MASSACHUSETTS IN 1734



SAMUEL¹ AND ELIZA (PERKINS) CABOT AND THEIR CHILDREN, LOUIS AND SARAH

(See Chapter XVII)

the "Order for disposing of the Indian Squaws" in Massachusetts Records, Vol. I, p. 201.)

In his Journal, Winthrop wrote, 26 Feb. 1638:

Mr. Pierce, in the Salem ship the *Desire*, returned from the West Indies after 7 months. He had been at Providence, and brought some cotton and tobacco *and negroes*, &c, from thence, and salt from Tertugos.

He adds to this account:

Dry fish and strong liquors are the only commodities for those parts. He met there two men-of-war set forth by the Lords, &c, of Providence, with letters of mart, who had taken divers prizes from the Spaniard and many negroes.

Long afterwards, Dr. Belknap, writing of the slave trade, said that the rum distilled in Massachusetts was "the main-spring of this traffic." (Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Vol. I, pp. iv, 197.) Winthrop describes the ship *Desire* as a vessel of 120 tons, built in Marblehead in 1636, one of the earliest vessels built in the colony. He says, further, in his Journal (Vol. II, p. 219):

One of our ships went to the Canaries with pipe staves in the beginning of November last (1645) returned now and brought wine, sugar, salt and some tobacco, which she had at Barbadoes, in exchange for Africoes which she carried from the Isle of Maio.

Negro slavery in Massachusetts was the safety valve to the pent-up vengeance of the Pequot Indians, according to Williams, who says that the Pequot War was the early and urgent occasion for the founding of slavery under the foster care of a *free church and a free government*. As the Pequot Indians would not "endure the yoke," would not "remain as servants," they were sent to the Bermudas and other Islands and exchanged for negroes, with the hope that the latter would "endure the yoke" more patiently. The first importation of slaves from Barbados, in exchange for Indians, was made in 1637, the first year of the Pequot War.

Besides supplying the home market, these Boston, Salem

and other Massachusetts ships took cargoes of staves, fish, etc., to Madeira and the Canaries, and touched on the coast of Guinea to trade for negroes, some of whom they sold to Barbados and the West Indies. Massachusetts Records, Vol. II, records a case in which a magistrate proved that some negroes had been stolen on a Sunday after an attack on an African village where several were killed. This magistrate petitioned the General Court, charging master and mate with "murder, manstealing, and Sabbath breaking," the first two capital offenses punishable with death by the laws of Massachusetts. The magistrates doubted their authority to punish crimes committed on the coast of Africa, and they ordered the negroes to be sent back as not having been honestly procured by purchase. It was, however, considered legitimate to ship out of the country Indian prisoners and exchange them for negroes who were less dangerous and less liable to escape.

Moore quotes a letter written by Emanuel Downing, a lawyer of the Inner Temple, London, who married Luey Winthrop, sister of the elder Winthrop, and came to New England in 1638. This letter, written to his brother-in-law, probably during the summer of 1645, is a most luminous illustration of the views of the day on the subject of human slavery. He says:

A warr with the Narragansett is verie considerable to this plantation, ffor I doubt whither yt be not synne in vs, hauing power in our hands, to suffer them to maynteyne the worship of the devill, which their paw waves often doe; 2lie, if upon a Just warre the Lord should deliver them into our hands, *we might easily haue men, women and children enough to exchange for Moores*, which wilbe more gayneful pilladge for vs than wee conceiue, for I doe not see how wee can thrive vntill wee gett into a stock of slaves sufficient to doe all our business, for our children's children will hardly see this great Continent filled with people, soe that our servants will still desire freedom to plant for them selues, and not stay but for verie great wages. And I suppose you know verie well how wee shall maynteyne 20 Moores cheaper than one Englishe servant.

The ships that shall bring Moores may come home laden with salt which may beare most of the chardge, if not all of yt. . . .

The Court of His Majesty held by Governor Winslow, 7 July 1674, made the following pronouncement:

Whereas there is an Indian called Hoken that hath bin a notorious thiefe and, besids former thefts, of late hath broken up the house of James Bursell of Yarmouth, for which hee was committed to prison, and he made an escape by breaking of prison and since stole a horse, being insolent in his carryage and an incorrigable thiefe, that will not be reclaimed, but lyeth sherking and lurking about, wherby many persons are greatly in fear and danger of him, wherfor the Court doe order Mr. Hinckley and Leiftenant Freeman, or any other magistrate that can light off the said Hoken, that they cause him to be apprehended and sold or sent to Barbadoes, for to satisfy his debts and for to free the colonie from so ill a member.

The Treasury Accounts, March 1674/5, show that this Indian was sold for £40.

After the first wars with the Indians, to which the Scituate colonists contributed their quota, a treaty of peace was signed which was effectual for thirty years. During this time the Rev. John Eliot, the Indian Apostle, was preaching to the natives and organizing his bands of praying Indians, segregating them in communities to live after the manner of the white men (see Thomas Mayhew in *Dunham Ancestry*). There were seven hundred of these Christianized Indians, Mr. Pratt tells us, living in the Plymouth Colony at the time of King Philip's War.

Moore tells us that at this time the policy and practice of the colony of Massachusetts with regard to slavery had already been settled on the basis of positive law. Accordingly, the numerous "captives taken in war" were disposed of in the "usual way." The extracts which follow, from the official records of the Colony, will be sufficient to show the usual procedure at that period.

His Majesty's Court, on 4 Nov. 1676, "rattified and confeirmed" the following:

Att a meeting of the councell of warr for this jurisdiction, held att Plymouth the fourth day of August, 1675, —

In reference unto a company of natiues now in custody, brought in to Plymouth, being men, woemen and children, in number one

hundred and twelue, vpon serious and deliberate consideration and agitation concerning them, the conclusion is as followeth: that wheras vpon examination it is found that seuerall of them haue bine actors in the late rising and warr of the Indians against vs, and the rest complyers with them therin, which they haue done contrary to engagement and couenant made and plighted with this collonie, which they haue pfidiously broken, as appears alsoe in that they doe not discouer that psisius plott which Phillip, with others, completed against vs, which hath caused the destruction of seuerall of vs, by losse of liues and estates, and still held in danger therby, the pmises considered as aforsaid, the counceell adjudged them to be sold and deuoted vnto seruitude, excepting some few of them which vpon speciall consideration are to be otherwise disposed of, and the Treasurer is appointed by the Councell to make sale of them in the countreyes behalfe.

Forasmuch as by frequent and sad experience it is found that selling, &c, of arms and ammunition to the Indians is very pnisious and destructive to the English, it is therefore ordered, decreed and enacted by the counceell of warr for this jurisdiction that whosoener shalbe found to sell, barter or giue, directly or indirectly, any gun or guns or ammunition of any kind to any Indian or Indians, and the same legally proued against them, euery such pson or psons shalbe put to death, and in defect of full and legall proffe there, the rpinted law to take place. . . .

The counceell of warr for this jurisdiction being mett together att Plymouth, the second of September 1675, to consider a certain psell of Indians lately come to Sandwich in a submissiue way to this collonie, do find that they are in the same condition of rebellion as those formerly condemned to seruitude, and doe vnanimously agree that the said Indians, being in number fifty-seuen, are condemned vnto pptuall seruitude, and therefore doe heerby order and appointe the Treasurer to make sale of them, for and to the vse of the collonie, as opportunity may psent.

The accounts of the colony of Massachusetts for receipts and expenditures during "the late war," as stated from 25 June 1675, to 23 Sept. 1676, give among the credits the following:

By the following accounts received in silver, viz:
Captives; for 188 Prisoners of War, sold 397.13.00

John Hull's Journal (p. 398), as quoted in "Soldiers and Sailors of King Philip's War," by Rev. George M. Bodge, A.M., gives the following account of the last two months' sales of Indian captives by the Massachusetts Bay Colony:

CAPTIVES CREDITED BY SUNDRY ACCPTS. VIZ.

Aug. 24, 1676

	£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.
Isaac Waldron for a Boy . . . . .	.	.	.	3	00	00
Ephriam Savage for 2 girles . . . . .	.	.	.	04	10	00
Samuel Shrimpton:						
4 Squawes, 3 girls, 2 infants	30	00	00	41	12	00
1 old man, 3 squawes & 2 for one returned by order	09	00	00			
1 man	02	12	00			
Samuel Lynd for 1 maid . . . . .	.	.	.	03	10	00
Thomas Smith:						
1 girl and 2 men	09	10	00	47	02	00
10 squawes, 8 papooses & 1 man	25	00	00			
2 lads, viz. Pomham & Matoonas	07	00	00			
1 Woman, 4 little children	05	12	00			
Samuel Symons, Esq.:						
For 1 Boy & Girl . . . . .	.	.	.	05	00	00
George Perkes:						
For 2 Boyes . . . . .	.	.	.	06	00	00
John Mors:						
For 1 Girle	02	00	00	12	00	00
For 2 Girles	07	00	00			
For 1 Boy	03	00	00			
John Mann, for 1 Girle . . . . .	.	.	.	03	00	00
Thomas Davis, for 1 Boy . . . . .	.	.	.	03	00	00
Daniel Henehman, for squawe & infant . . . . .	.	.	.	02	10	00
Samuel Mosely:						
1 Boy & Girle	06	00	00	26	00	00
13 Squawes and papooses wounded 1 sick	20	00	00			
Timothy Batt, for 1 squawe . . . . .	.	.	.	02	15	00
— Rawlings, squawe . . . . .	.	.	.	03	00	00

September 23, 1676

Thomas Smith for 41 (captives) . . . . .	.	.	.	.	82	00	00
Isaac Waldron, for 1 . . . . .	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
Richard Middlecott for 6 . . . . .	.	.	.	.	10	00	00
James Meares " 2 . . . . .	.	.	.	.	03	10	00
Samuel Apleton " 3 . . . . .	.	.	.	.	04	00	00

								£.	s.	d.
John Buttolph	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	01	15	00
William Gilbert	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
George Sphere	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
William Needham	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	00	05	00
Thomas Grant	"	5	.	.	.	.	.	08	01	00
David Waterhouse	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
James Whitcomb	"	13	.	.	.	.	.	14	15	00
John Turner	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
Ann Shepcutt	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	01	15	00
Richard Wharton	"	8	.	.	.	.	.	08	00	00
—— Rawlins	"	3	.	.	.	.	.	04	10	00
John Wait	"	4	.	.	.	.	.	04	10	00
Josiah Flynt	"	2	.	.	.	.	.	03	15	00
Samuel Leach	"	2	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
Jarvis Ballard	"	2	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
James Meares	"	2	.	.	.	.	.	02	08	00
John Mason	"	1	.	.	.	.	.	02	00	00
Benjamin Gibbs	"	8	.	.	.	.	.	5	00	00

The Rev. Mr. Bodge gives a dramatic account of Philip's capture, which ended the war.

Philip at last, being hunted down by the English and Indians on every side, retired with a few of his staunchest friends to his old retreat at Mt. Hope. Mr. Church was then in command of a scouting company of English and Indians from Plymouth, and having passed over from Pocasset, where he had left most of his company, to Rhode Island, to Major Sanford's, he there heard from the Major and Capt. Golding of Philip's condition, as reported by a deserter, whose brother Philip had killed for advising surrender. This Indian offered to pilot the English to Philip's hiding place. Major Sanford and Capt. Golding both offered to go with his company to assist in Philip's capture. They were soon back at "Trip's Ferry" with the rest of the company under Capt. *John Williams* of Scituate. Having arrived at the swamp, piloted by the deserter, Mr. Church requested Capt. Golding to lead the skirmishing party, led by the pilot, into the swamp, to "beat up the quarters" of Philip. This the Captain accepted and drew out his allotted men. Church instructed him to creep forward as silently as possible in order to encompass and surprise the Indians, but when discovered to shout and make all possible noise, as the orders to the various ambuscades were to fire upon all who came towards them silently. Mr. Church then placed the rest of the

men, with most of the Indians under Capt. Williams, so as to encompass all ways of escape from the swamp, placing an Englishman and an Indian together. Hardly had these arrangements been completed when a musket shot, followed by a whole volley, rang through the swamp, and then the general onset began. The Indians were taken completely by surprise, and Philip, springing hastily from his sleep under the rude open wigwam, seized his powder horn and gun and started from the hillside where he had made his camp, for the deeper security of the swamp. But in his flight he came face to face with two of Mr. Church's men and, the Englishman's musket missing fire, the Indian immediately shot the great chieftain through the breast, so that he fell forward upon his face with his gun beneath him, in the water of the swamp. The Indian who killed Philip was named Alderman, and is said to have been the same who betrayed his hiding-place. When this Indian ran to Mr. Church with the news of his achievement he was told to keep it secret until after the rest of the enemy had been beaten out of the swamp, or captured or killed. Their retreat and escape from the English was ably conducted by old Annawon, Philip's chief Sachem. When all the company had gathered about the place where Philip's party had bivouacked, Mr. Church told them the great news of Philip's death, and presently ordered some of the Indians to drag him out of the swamp to the solid land. There he was chopped in quarters and beheaded and left unburied; his head and one hand were given to Alderman as a reward, and in Mr. Church's account it is said that he "got many a penny" by showing the hand.

Such was the end of Philip of Mount Hope, one of the most remarkable characters in all history, whose biography has never yet been adequately written, and who, although by no means a hero or a character to be admired, was without doubt a wise and skillful leader, and more dreaded by the colonists than any man before or after him. (New England Historical and Genealogical Register, No. CLXXIV, Vol. XLIV, Apr. 1890.)

Another account tells us that Philip's head and right hand were brought to Plymouth. His head was put on a pole with the right hand under it, and so they hung at Plymouth for over two years. Dr. Cotton Mather, in 1690, after the fury of the war had subsided, wrote:

It is not long since that the hand which now writes took off the jaw from the exposed skull of that blasphemous leviathan.

This was the end of Metacom, King Philip, Sachem of the once powerful Wampanoags. His Indian club was also taken, and is now (1936) in the possession of Dr. Warren K. Morehead, head of the Department of Archaeology at Phillips Academy, Andover. It is made of maple wood, highly polished and ornamented; 22 inches long and inlaid with 104 purple and white wampum beads, representing, like notches on a pistol, the number of men it had killed, — white for white men and purple for Indians. Of King Philip, Dr. Morehead says:

He was a patriot. Now that we have a proper perspective of the man, we consider him a person of marked abilities, dying in defense of his native land.

King Philip's widow and son (who was grandson of Massasoit, the best friend the English had ever had in New England) were shipped to the West Indies where they were sold into slavery.

Deane says in his "History of Scituate," page 146:

There is reason to lament that the authorities of Plymouth yielded to the imaginary necessity of executing the brave Anawon [and at the same time, Tuspaquin] and especially that they sold into slavery Metacomet's (Philip's) youthful son.

And John Cotton writes (10 Mar. 1676/7): "Philip's boy goes now to be sold."

Great numbers of King Philip's people were sold as slaves in Moroco, Spain and the West Indies. In the beginning of the war Captain Moseley captured 80 who were confined at Plymouth. In the September following 178 were put on board a vessel commanded by Captain Sprague, who sailed with them from Plymouth to Spain. (Drake, p. 224.) In the winter of 1675, Major Waldron, Commissioner for a portion of territory claimed by Massachusetts (which included that of Maine), issued general warrants for seizing every Indian known to be a man slayer, traitor or conspirator. These precepts, which afforded any man a plausible pretext to seize suspected Indians, were obtained by several shipmasters for the most shameful purposes of kid-

napping and slave trading. One shipmaster lurked in his vessel about the shores of Pemaquid, and notwithstanding warning and remonstrance, succeeded in kidnapping several of the natives and carrying them into foreign parts, selling them for slaves. Similar outrages were committed farther east upon the Indians about Cape Sable — “who never had in the least manner been guilty of any injury done to the English.”

Many Indian warriors surrendered and great numbers of others came in voluntarily, upon the promise that they and their wives and children should have their lives spared and none of them be transported out of the country. In one instance, narrated by the famous Captain Church himself, no less than “eight score persons” were, “without any regard to the promises made them on their surrendering themselves, carried away to Plymouth, there sold, and transported out of the country.”

Easton, in his “Relation,” page 21, says:

Philip being dead, about 150 Indians came to Plimouth garrison voluntarily. Plimouth authority sould all for slafes (but about 6 of them) to be carried out of the country.

After the death of King Philip, some of the Indians from the west and south of New England, who had been engaged in the war, endeavored to conceal themselves among the Pennacooks, who had not joined in the war, and with them Indians of Ossipee and Pigwackett, who had made peace. By a “contrivance,” as Mather calls it, which savors strongly of treachery, four hundred of these Indians were taken prisoners, one half of whom were declared to have been accessories in the late rebellion; and “being sent to Boston, seven or eight of them who were known to have killed any Englishman, were condemned and hanged; the rest were sold into slavery in foreign parts.” Some of these very Indians who were thus seized and sold afterwards made their way home and found opportunity to satisfy their revenge during the war with the French and Indians, known as King William’s War. (Belknap, Vol. I, pp. 143, 245; Mather’s “Magnalia,” Book VII, pp. 55–69.)

This "contrivance" is elsewhere described thus: Major Waldron of New Hampshire, a supposed friend of the Indians, invited the Indians to see a sham battle. His plan worked; they came and he made 200 prisoners. Some were allowed their freedom, 8 were hanged and the rest sold into slavery. This happened after King Philip's War had ended. The Massachusetts General Court made an order in 1677, 24 May, that the Indian children, youths or girls whose parents had been in hostility with the colony, or had lived among its enemies in the time of the war and were taken by force and given or sold to any of the inhabitants of this jurisdiction, should be at the disposal of their masters or their assigns, who were to instruct them in "Civility and Christian Religion." (Massachusetts Records, Vol. V, p. 136.)

On 16 Feb. 1677, an Indian called Captain Amos, having "made tender to be officious in fetching off such Indians that are our enimies as are att Elizabeth Islands," the Council accepted his tender and ordered him to achieve the enterprize with —

. . . such strength of Indians as hee should think meet to improue; and for his and theirre ineurragement, it is ordered that incase they take and bring in Tatoson and Penaehason, or either of them, they may aaccept for theirre reward for each of them four coates and a coate apiece for *euery other Indian that shall proue marchantable*.

It is ordered by the Councell that all such Indians as haue or shall come into the collonie in a clandestine way, not applying themselues to the authoritie of this Jurisdiction for libertie, shall not expect the benefitt of the indemnitie formerly shewed to other Indians that did come in in an orderly way, but shalbe forthwith taken vp and desposed off, as other captiue Indians, to the colonies vse.

. . . In referenee vnto the complaint of Mr. Wharton and his ptenors concerning a psell of Indians detained in this collonie that ran away, the councell sees reason to allow unto them six Indians, not to infringe them of more, incase the commissioners of the Vnited Collonies shall see reason (on proposition of the ease) to allow more.



PORTRAIT OF HIMSELF WHICH NAPOLEON GAVE TO COL. THOMAS H. PERKINS

(See Chapter XVII)

See page 420, Cabot Genealogy

In fact, the Plymouth Records, especially about the time of King Philip's War, are full of laws and decisions concerning the Indians. The following is recorded under date of 11 Oct. 1678:

These may certify any whom it may concern, that certaine Indians, lueing in or neare Sandwich, in the jurisdiction of New Plymouth in New England, whose names are Canootus, and Symon, and Joell, being apprehended, and on theire confession being convict of feloniously breakeing open a house and the chest of Zacheriah Allin, of Sandwich, aforesaid, and stealeing from him the sume of twenty-five pounds in mony, they haueing lost or imbezelled the said mony, and noe other way appeering how hee should bee satisfied for his losse and charges thervpon arising, the authoritie of this collonie haue centanced the aboue named Indians to bee his *ppetuell slaues*, and haue and heerby doe authorize and impower him, the said Zacheriah Allin, to make sale of them, the said Conootus, Symon and Joell, to any Christian pson or psons in New England or else where, as *his lawfull slaues for terme of their naturall life*. In testimony wherof I haue heer-vnto sett my hand, and affixed the publicke seale of this goument, this 12th day of Nouember, 1678.

Marshfield, in New Plymouth.

JOSIAH WINSLOW, Gou.
JOHN ALDEN, Assistant

It is ordered by the Court that in case Zacheriah Allin can not sell them, that this record shalbe heer extant against them, the said Canootus and Symon, that if euer they be taken faulty in like respect, that then they shalbe forthwith sold out of the country.

Richards' "History of Marshfield" quotes the 'Town Records of that place:

1689. On account of some unfriendliness shown against our colonists, the Selectmen of Marshfield, as well as other towns in the Colony, do not allow the Indians within the bounds of Plymouth Colony to pass out by night or day without a certificate from them, on pain of imprisonment, and that the Indians coming from other colonies without passes be secured and examined before a military officer or magistrate and proceeded with.

Also the Court ordered that —

if any person, English or Indian apprehend and bring before the authority any man that is an Indian enemy, he shall have *ten pounds for a reward if he bring him alive, and five pounds if killed*, provided it be evident it be an enemy Indian.

John Eliot pleaded in vain to save the Indians from slavery and to prevent their being shipped to other countries and bartered for merchandise and money. That slavery was in any way contrary to their Christian principles seems not to have occurred to the early New Englanders, except to a few Quakers and other brave men who, like John Eliot and Governor Mayhew, were far in advance of their time. G. H. Moore, in his "History of Slavery in Massachusetts," from which I have extracted freely, says:

It would be to misread history and to forget the change of times to see in the Fathers of New England mere commonplace slave-mongers. To themselves they appeared to be the elect to whom God had given the Heathen for an inheritance; they were men of stern intellect and fanatical faith who, believing themselves the favorites of Providence, imitated the example and assumed the privileges of the Chosen People, and for their wildest and worst acts they could claim the sanction of religious conviction. In seizing and enslaving Indians and trading in negroes, they were but entering into possession of the heritage of the saints.

It was not until 1712 that an act was passed prohibiting the importation or bringing into the Province of any *Indian* servants or slaves. The preamble recites the bad character of the Indian slaves, "being of a malicious, surly and revengeful spirit; rude and insolent in their behavior and very ungovernable." This act has especial reference to southern Indians, the Tuscaroras and others, captives in war. Similar acts were passed by Pennsylvania in 1712, New Hampshire in 1714, and Connecticut and Rhode Island in 1715.

Many young immigrants came to America as servants, which meant, in many cases that they came as *indentured* servants; that is, white immigrants sold their own labor for a certain number of years to pay the expenses of immi-

gration. Massachusetts Colony made this order: "That no servant shall be set free or have any lot until he has served out the time covenanted." Scottish prisoners were also brought here and sold as servants at the time of the war with England in 1680.

It is a fact that white slavery, in some form or other, was not uncommon among the English at even a later date. Late in the eighteenth century the following entry was deliberately made in the toll book kept at the Bell Inn, in Egbaston Street, Birmingham:

1773, Aug. 31. Samuel Whitehouse, of the parish of Willenhill, in the county of Stafford, this day sold his wife, Mary Whitehouse, in open market, to Thomas Griffiths of Birmingham, value one shilling. To take her with all her faults.

SAMUEL WHITEHOUSE, MARY WHITEHOUSE;
THOMAS BUCKLEY of Birmingham, voucher.

As early as 1652, 270 Scotchmen, taken as prisoners by the English in the battle of Dunbar, were sent to Boston and sold for a term of years into servitude comparable with negro slavery. In London there were 20,000 negro slaves as late as 1764, and these blacks were openly bought and sold on "Change." It was then the swagger thing for a gentleman to hang a silver collar about the neck of his body servant; and Matthew Dyer, "working goldsmith at the Crown in Duck Lane, Orchard Street, Westminster," advertised that he made "silver collars and padlocks for blacks or dogs."

In this country white slavery, including indentured servants, was more or less common in all the colonies.

Dr. Cheesman A. Herrick, President of Girard College, has written a book packed with information about "White Servitude in Pennsylvania."

It comes rather as a shock to learn how heavily in early days Pennsylvania depended for its industrial progress upon this slavery of white men and women.

It is believed there were never in Pennsylvania more than 5,000 negro slaves. But the number of white slaves, or those held in servitude by law, numbered many thousands.

Pennsylvania passed the first law in America for enfranchisement. Here was abolition of slavery first recognized legally.

But at the very time Pennsylvanians were striving to abolish negro slavery they perhaps outranked all others in promoting that vicious system of servitude among the whites.

Years before even Penn arrived here there were white slaves working on the very ground upon which stands Philadelphia.

It was a favorite sport of the Swedes to sell Finns in slavery to the colony on the Delaware.

A ship passage to America sometimes cost the equivalent of \$140 in American money, and the wretch who paid for that passage in toil, in more than one case, died before he had worked out his freedom.

The ordinary term of such white slavery was four years. Often it was much longer than that.

Of the 530 new arrivals in Philadelphia's first four years, 193, says Dr. Herrick, were classed as servants.

Practically all were redemptioners or were indentured to servitude for a number of years.

The trade in and the ownership of slaves, white, black and red, was a recognized economic condition until the latter part of the eighteenth century. In writing of these years, Bancroft says:

In an age when the interests of the trade guided legislation, this branch of commerce possessed paramount attractions. . . . No public opinion lifted its voice against it. English ships, fitted out in English cities, under the special favor of the Royal Family, of the Ministry and of Parliament, stole from Africa, in the years from 1700 to 1750, probably a million and a half of souls, of whom one eighth were buried in the Atlantic, victims of the passage; and yet in England no general indignation rebuked the enormity, for the public opinion of the age was obedient to materialism.

To return to New England and the early days of the traffic. At the time of the Province Charter, "every male slave of sixteen years old and upwards" was rated "at

Twenty Pounds Estate." In 1695 "all Negros, Molattoes and Indian Servants" were rated "Males of 14 years (of age) and upwards at the rate of £20 Estate, and females at £14 Estate, unless disabled by infirmity." This was continued through 1698.

Governor Bradstreet, in his report to the "Committee for Trade," made in May, 1680, says:

We account all generally from Sixteen to Sixty that are healthfull and strong bodys, both House-holders and Servants fit to beare Armes, except Negroes and slaves, whom wee arme not.

The whipping post and the stocks were usually placed in the middle of the town, and the gag and ducking stool for female scolds were often used in the early days of the colony. Whipping men and women on the bare back did not cease until after the Revolution. As early as 1634 the General Court passed an order —

That if any boy that hath been whipt for running away from his master be taken in any other plantation, not having a note from his master to testify his business there, it shall be lawful for the constable of said plantation to whip him and send him home.

A hundred years later, 17 Sept. 1734, it was —

Voted that all negro, Indian and mulatto servants that are found abroad without leave, and not on their masters' business, shall be taken up and whipt, ten stripes on their naked body, by any freeholder of the town, and be carried to their respective masters; and said master shall be obliged to pay the sum of 2s. 6d. in money to said person that shall so do.

In the very early days the laws seem to have been very strenuously applied in Massachusetts against the white servants as well as the black, and at first the sale of convicted criminals into slavery as punishment for their offences was practised. The following entries all occur on the same day, 4 Dec. 1638, in the Massachusetts Records:

William Andrews, having made an assault upon his m^r Henry Coggan, struck him diverse blowes, & wickedly conspired against the life of his said m^r & not onely so, but did conspire also against

the peace & welfare of this whole com̄on welth, was censured to bee severely whiped and delivered vp as a slave to whom the Court shall appoint.

John Haslewood, being found guilty of severall thefts & breaking into severall houses, was censured to bee severely whiped and delivered vp a slave to whom the Court shall appoint.

The same sentence was pronounced upon Giles Player for the same crimes.

This case was capital under the law (1652), but the law prescribed no such punishment as was ordered. One Jack, a negro, was convicted of the crime of arson at the same term of the Court and ordered to be hanged and afterwards consumed to ashes in the same fire with Maria, a negro woman, who was executed by burning in 1681:

not hauing the feare of God before hir eyes & being Instigated by the diuill . . . did wittingly, willingly and feloniously set on fier the dwelling house of Thomas Swan of sd Roxbury . . . had sentence of death pronouneed against hir by the Honnoble. Gounor. that she should Goe from the barr to prison whence she came and thence to the place of execution & there be burnt. Ye lord be mereifull to thy soule sd ye Gov.

The penalties imposed upon slaves for various crimes continued for many years to be severe, out of all proportion to those inflicted upon the white men. The case of Mark and Phyllis, who were tried and condemned for murdering their master by poison, is notorious. The "Boston Evening Post" of 22 Sept. 1755, relates:

Thursday last in the afternoon, *Mark*, a Negro Man, and *Phillis*, a Negro Woman, both Servants to the late Capt. *John Codman* of *Charlestown*, were executed at *Cambridge* for poisoning their said Master, as mentioned in this Paper some Weeks ago. The Fellow was hanged, and the Woman burned at the stake about Ten Yards distant from the Gallows. They both confessed themselves guilty of the Crime for which they suffered, acknowledging the Justice of their Sentence, and died very penitent. After Execution, the Body of *Mark* was brought down to *Charlestown* Common and lauged in Chains, on a Gibbet erected there for that purpose.

The body of Mark is said by Dr. Bartlett to have remained on the gibbet "until a short time before the Revolution." Certain it is that when Dr. Caleb Rea passed through Charlestown on the first day of June, 1758, he found the body hanging, and, having examined it, recorded in his Journal that "His (Mark's) skin was but very little broken, although he had hung there near three or four years."

The breeding of slaves was not regarded with favor. Dr. Belknap says that "negro children were considered an incumbrance in a family and when weaned were given away like puppies." (Massachusetts Historical Society Collections Vol. I, pp. iv, 200.) They were frequently publicly advertised "to be given away," sometimes with the additional inducement of a sum of money, to any one who would take them.

In Quiney's Reports (quoted by Dr. Moore), in 1758 the following rather loose decision is recorded: that "the child of a female slave never married according to any of the forms prescribed by the laws of this land, by another slave who kept her company with her master's consent," was not a bastard.

The act of 1705 forbade any "ehristian" from marrying a negro, and imposed a fine of fifty pounds upon any clergyman who should join a negro and "ehristian" in marriage. It stood as the law of the Commonwealth until 1843, when it was repealed by "An Act relating to Marriage between Individuals of Certain Raees."

Free negroes were not allowed to entertain slave friends at their houses without the permission of the owner of the slaves. If a negro "presume to strike or smite any person of the English or other ehristian nation," he was publicly flogged by the judge before whom he was tried, at the discretion of that officer. The free and slave negroes were separated by law and not allowed to communicate together to any extent. Chief Justice Parker (in *Andover v. Canton*, 13 Mass., p. 550) declared that —

The slave was the property of his master as much as his ox or his horse; *he had no civil rights* but that of protection from cruelty;

he could acquire no property nor dispose of any without the consent of his master. . . . We think that he had not the capacity to communicate a civil relation to his children which he did not enjoy himself except as the property of his master.

In 1702 the Representatives of the town of Boston were "desired" to promote the encouraging and *bringing in of white* servants and to put a period to negroes being slaves. (Drake, p. 525.) This was not an anti-slavery measure, as some have wrongly supposed. It was not a resolution nor an act; it was simply a request, and one that the Representatives did not grant for nearly a century afterwards.

Humane masters in Massachusetts who desired to emancipate their slaves were embarrassed by a statute unfriendly to manumission. The act of 1703 required every master who desired to liberate his slave, before doing so, to furnish a bond to the treasurer of the town or place in which he resided, in a sum not less than fifty pounds. This was to indemnify the town or place in case the negro thus emancipated should, through lameness or sickness, become a charge; and in case a master failed to furnish such security his emancipated slaves were still considered by the law as in bondage, "notwithstanding any manumission or instrument of freedom to them given." "It is pleaded in extenuation of this Act," says Williams, "that this was intended to put a stop to the very prevalent habit of emancipating old and decrepit negroes after there was no more service in them. If this is true, it reveals a practice more cruel than slavery itself."

In 1706 an argument or "Computation that the Importation of Negroes is not so profitable as that of White Servants" was published in Boston. It shows that the motives that inspired the people who wanted a period put on the importation of negroes as slaves were grossly material and selfish. It is reprinted from the "Boston News Letter," No. 112, 10 June 1706:

By last year's bill of mortality for the town of Boston, in No. 100 NEWS LETTER, we are furnished with a list of 44 Negroes dead last year, which being computed one with another at £30

per Head, amounts to the sum of One Thousand three hundred and Twenty Pounds, of which we would make this Remark: That the Importing of Negroes into this or the Neighboring Province is not so beneficial either to the Crown or Country as White Servants would be.

For Negroes do not carry Arms to defend the Country as Whites do.

Negroes are generally Eye Servants, great Thieves, much addicted to Stealing, Lying and Purloining.

They do not people our Country as Whites would do whereby we should be strengthened against the Enemy.

By Encouraging the Importing of White Men Servants, allowing somewhat to the Importer, most Husbandmen in the Country might be furnished with Servants at 8, 9 or 10 pounds a head, who are not able to launch out 40 or 50 pounds for a Negro, the now common Price.

A Man then might buy a White Man Servant for 10 pounds to serve four years, and Boys for the same price to serve 6, 8 and 10 years; If a White Servant die, the Loss exceeds not 10 pounds, but if a Negro dies 'tis a very great Loss to the Husbandman; Three years' Interest of the price of the Negro will almost, if not altogether, purchase a White Man Servant.

If necessity calls for it, the Husbandman must fit out a Man against the Enemy; if he has a Negro he can not send him, but if he has a White Servant, 'twill answer the end and perhaps save his son at home.

Were Merchants and Masters encouraged, as already said, to bring in White Servants, there need not be such Complaint against Superiors Impressing our Children to the War, there would then be Men enough to be had without Impressing.

The bringing of such Servants would much enrich the Province, because Husbandmen would not only be able far better to manure what Lands are already under Improvement, but would also improve a great deal more that now lies waste under Woods, and enable this Province to set about raising of Naval Stores, which would be greatly advantageous to the Crown of England and this Province.

For the raising of Hemp here, so as to make Sail-cloth and Cordage to furnish but our own Shipping would hinder the Importing it and save a considerable sum in a year to make Returns for which we now do, and in time might be capacitated to furnish England not only with Sail-cloth and Cordage, but likewise with

Tar, Hemp, Pitch and other Stores, which they are now obliged to purchase in Foreign Nations.

Suppose the Government here should allow forty shillings per head for five years, to such as should Import every of these years 100 White Men Servants; and each to serve four years, the cost would be but £200 a year and £1000 for the five years. The first 100 Servants, being free the 4th year, they serve the 5th for wages, and the 6th there is 100 that goes out into the Woods and settles 100 families to strengthen and barricado us from the Indians, and also 100 families more every year successively.

And here you see that in one year the Town of Boston has lost £1320 by 44 Negroes, which is also a loss to the Country in general, and for a less loss (if it may improperly be so-called) for 1000 pounds the Country may have 500 Men in five years time for the 44 Negroes dead in one year.

A certain person within these 6 years had 2 Negroes dead, computed both at £60, which would have procured him 6 White Servants at £10 per head to have served 24 years, at 4 years apiece, without running such great risque, and the Whites would have strengthened the Country that Negroes do not.

'Twould be well that none of these servants be liable to be Impressed during their Service of Agreement at their first Landing.

That such Servants being Sold or Transported out of the Province during the time of their Service, the Person that buys them be liable to pay 3 pounds into the Treasury.

In 1716 Massachusetts contained, *by estimate*, 94,000 whites, 2,000 slaves, 1,200 Indians.

It is a curious fact that the *first census in Massachusetts* was a *census of negro slaves*. In 1754, an account of the property in the Province liable to taxation being required, Governor Shirley sent a special message to the House of Representatives, in which he said:

There is one part of the Estate, viz., the Negro Slaves, which I am at a loss how to come to the knowledge of without your assistance. (Journal, p. 119.)

On the same day, 19 Nov. 1754, the Legislature made an order that the assessors of the several towns and districts within the Province forthwith send in to the Secretary's office the exact number of negro slaves, both male and

female, sixteen years old and upwards, within their respective towns and districts. (Journal, p. 1.)

This enumeration, as corrected by Mr. Felt, gives an aggregate of 4,489. The census of negroes in 1764-65, according to the same authority, makes their number 5,779; in 1776, 5,249. Even before this, in 1742, the number of slaves in Boston alone was estimated as 1,514.

In 1708 Governor Cranston of Rhode Island reported that one hundred and three vessels had been built in that Province between 1698 and 1708, all of which were trading with the West Indies and the southern colonies. They took out lumber and fish and brought back molasses in the direct trade, but "in most cases made a slave voyage in between." Here is the advertisement of one of these Rhode Islanders taken from the 3 July 1758 issue of the "Boston Gazette:"

Just imported from Africa and to be sold on board the brig *Jenny*, William Ellery, Commander, now lying in New Boston (*i.e.*, West End of Boston), A number of likely Negro Boys and Girls, from 12 to 24 years of Age; Inquire of said Ellery on board said Brig, where constant attendance is given.

Note. The above slaves have all had the Small Pox. — Treasurer's Notes and New England Rum will be as Pay.

Such advertisements as the following were common enough in Massachusetts, and as time went on advertisements of slave property became more and more frequent:

Lately imported, several Negro Boys and Girls, to be sold by Mr. Joshua Wroe, at his house in Cold Lane.

Three Likely young Negro Men to be disposed of. Inquire at the Post Office, where you may be further advised. ("Boston News Letter," Feb. 1725.)

Negro men, women and children were often included in the "News Letter" in the notices of sales with "wearing apparel, gold watches and other goods." "Very good Barbadoes Rum" is offered with "a young Negro that has had the smallpox" in the "New England Journal," and the same paper advertises "Likely Negro Men and Women just arrived" and "Negro Men, *new*, and Negro Boys who have

been in the country for some time." The "News Letter" of 12 Aug. 1731, advertises, "Just arrived, a Choice Parcel of Negro Boys and Girls."

A likely Negro Man, born in the Country and bred a Farmer, fit for Any service. [This man was offered for sale by the widow and administratrix to the Estate of Thomas Amory, in 1731.] ("Boston News Letter.")

A Negro Woman about 22 years old, with a Boy about 5 months. (*Ibid.* July 20, 1732.)

A Likely Negro Woman, about 19 years and a child of six months of age, *to be sold together or apart.* ("New England Weekly Journal," May 1, 1732.)

A likely Negro Man, taken by execution, and to be sold by Publick Auction at the Royal Exchange Tavern in King Street, at 6 o'clock this afternoon. ("The Boston Gazette and Country Journal," Aug. 18, 1766.)

That there was considerable traffic with the Guinea Coast appears from the Customs entries, quoted in a footnote by Miss Donnan in her monumental work on the "History of Slavery in the United States:"

The Customs entries in the "News Letter" for 1739 are:

- 1739. July 12, entered in from Gambia, Robertson (master)
- July 12, entered in from Cape Verde, Mousell (master)
- Aug. 2, outward bound for Africa, Cutler (master)
- Nov. 8, outward bound for Africa, Bennet (master)

Customs items in the "Evening Post:"

- 1741. Feb. 12, cleared for Africa, Dickinson (master)
- June 29, outward bound for Africa, Stocker (master)
- Nov. 23, outward bound for Africa, Cutler (master)
- 1742. June 29, cleared for Africa, Beer (master)
- Oct. 11, cleared for Africa, Ball (master)
- Dec. 5, cleared for Africa, Ball (master)
- Dec. 5, cleared for Africa, Beer (master)

According to the "News Letter" of 7 May 1747, this Captain Beer was killed in a mutiny of negro slaves off Cape Coast Castle, 14 Jan. 1746.

The "Boston News Letter," 1 Oct. 1741, suggests one source of New England slaves:

Last Tuesday night several Black Slaves lately taken by Captain Rouse in the *Spanish Prize* and brought in here, and who have been disposed of to several Persons in Town, being join'd and assisted by other Black Servants, made their escape out of the Harbour in a Long-Boat which they stole.

"One young Man, just imported" was offered for sale in the "Boston News Letter," 4 Feb. 1742, and in the same paper at about that date, as well as in the "Boston Evening Post," Charles Apthorpe offered for sale "a parcel of both sexes," and "A parcel of Likely Negroes just imported from Guinea, and to be sold on the *Post Boy*" was advertised.

There is a curious and interesting record in Volume 98, page 361, of the Rolls of the State House in connection with the invalids at Albany (after the Canadian campaign of 1760) which seems to have escaped notice elsewhere. It is an account of a payment "to Col. Ranslow for his Battalion of Negroes to carry Small Pox people to Albany."

There is little doubt that even the Quakers held slaves in the early days. In his will, dated 1716, Edward Wanton of Seitate left to his daughter, Elizabeth Scott, "a mulatto boy called Daniel, if he can be found, he being now run away." But the Society of Friends soon realized the cruelty of this custom, and that it was contrary to their doctrines, and they were perhaps the earliest who freed their slaves. In September, 1716, the quarterly meeting recorded "that it is not agreeable to truth for Friends to purchase slaves and hold them for term of life," and the Nantucket monthly meeting passed a similar resolution.

No active stand against slavery was taken by the Quakers in Massachusetts, however, for some years. Then a tract made its appearance, entitled "A Testimony Against the Anti-Christian Practise of Making Slaves of Men, Wherein it is Shewed to be Contrary to the Dispensation of the Law, and the Time of the Gospel, and very Opposite both to Grace and Nature." (Manuscript copy in the Library of

the American Antiquarian Society.) This tract was written by Elihu Coleman, a Quaker preacher of Nantucket, in 1729-30, but it was not printed until 1733. He examined and refuted the arguments put forth in defence of slavery, charged the slaveholders with idleness, and contended that slavery was the mother of vice, at war with the laws of nature and of God.

From Miss Elizabeth Donnan's book, published by the Carnegie Foundation, I quote the following report of the case of the *Mermaid*, 1739, as an illustration of some of the horrors connected with the slave trade:

(Boston) July 10, 1739

John Robinson, Master of the Schooner MERMAID, from the Coast of Guinea, being sent for appear'd, and was Sworn by Mr. Justice Lyman, and being Examined, on oath, Declares, as follows, That he came from the River Gambo Two and Forty Days ago, with Eleven White Men on Board, and Fifty Slaves; That they had the Small Pox, Forty Leagues up the River Gambo; that he buried Two Whites and One Black; that afterwards he burnt Brimstone in the Vessel and Cleansed her with all possible care, *Vizt.* in February last, Since which no Person has been Sick of the Distemper, but that they have had the Measles and the Flux on board, that the Flux continues among the Slaves, but the measles is not now among them, That they have lost Fifteen Slaves of the Flux, in said River and in their Passage, and that they buried two in Sight of Cape Cod, Yesterday; That 3 Whites and 4 Blacks have had the Small Pox, that all the White Men on board have had the Small Pox; that the Negroes are all young, under Twenty years of age; That he took out all his Water Casks and Cleansed them, but the Ballast had not been Shifted.

The Select men having Considered the above Declaration, are of the Opinion that it is Convenient that the said Vessel be Visited, and therefore Voted, That Capt. Armitage, Capt. Forsyth, Caleb Lyman Esq^r and Mr. Clarke be and are hereby desired to take a Doctor, with them, and go on Board said Schooner, now in the Road, and to make a Strict Enquiry into the Circumstances of said Vessel, and Slaves, and that they report thereon as soon as may be.

The Gentlemen above named, accompanied by Dr. Davis and Dr. Rand having Visited the said Schooner, They Report as follows, *Vizt*,

That they found about Twelve of the Slaves on board Sick of the Fever and Flux, and that there is a very dangerous Stench on board and 'tis their Opinion It is necessary for the safety of the Town that the said Vesell be not permitted to come to the wharf for the present, but that she be sent down to Rainsford Island or some other Convenient place, in order for the Airing and Cleansing of the vessell, and Shifting of her Ballast, and for airing and taking Care of the Slaves, and that they put on Shore all their Casks.

Accordingly, a number of His Majesties Justices being present, a Warrant was drawn for carrying the said Schooner down to Rainsford Island and there to remain until further order from lawful Authority: Signed by the Hon. William Dudley and Anthony Stoddard, Esqrs. with the Select men.

In a letter of instruction from his owners to Capt. William Atkinson, from Boston, 28 Dec. 1728, he is instructed, as Master of the Sloop *Katherine*, to direct his course for the coast of Guinea, dispose of his cargo and invest the proceeds thereof —

. . . mostly in good, likely Negroes from 12 to 25 Years of Age, the Greatest part to be boys. Bring also some Chamwood, Elephant's Teeth and Gold Dust. . . .

On Oct. 7, 1729 agents of the Royal African Company at Cape Coast Castle wrote to the company that the chief mate and three men of the *Guinea Packet*, Captain Martin, had been "panyard" at St. Andrews River, "in Acco't of a Caboshier panyard by a Boston ship, Capt. Atkinson." On the 22 Oct. 1730, the agents reverted to the subject, writing, "The natives have contracted an aversion to the Sort of Vessels called Sloops since their ill treatment from Capt. Atkinson from Boston." Another version of the story of Capt. Atkinson's misdemeanors reported that he had stolen many negroes on the coast and sold them. The treasure on board had tempted his crew, who rebelled and threw him into the sea. Some of the negroes escaped and reported the mutiny, whereupon the crew were seized and were in jail in Antigua. (Weekly Journal and British Gazetteer, Dec. 13, 1729.) Several other English papers also contained the story. This is in all probability the same William Atkinson who in 1726 was captured by pirates while a passenger on a North Carolina sloop, turned the tables on the pirates and aided in bringing them into Boston as prisoners. (Library of Congress, Vernon-Wager MSS. No. 3.)

(For an account of his adventures, see "News Letter," July 7, 1726.)

Miss Donnan gives some very interesting letters and documents in connection with the snow *Jolly Bachelor*, whose master, John Cutler, and two of his crew were murdered in the "River Sierrallione by some Portugees that live there," which was finally recovered, after many adventures, by one George Burchall, "Residing at the Banana Islands on the Coast of Guiney in Africa, Mercht." and sent to Newport in charge of Captain Wickham. The owners were all Boston men: Peter Faneuil, John Jones and Capt. Cutler. The account of the sale of the snow and the slaves is as follows:

Mr Samll Vernon to 1 Negro Boy	£100
Mr John Tweedy to 1 Negro Girl	81
Mr Brinley, to 1 Negro Man	93
Col. Cranston to 1 Negro man	75
Sailes Carr to 1 Negro man	105
Mr Harte to 1 Boy	91
Mr Samll Bayley to 1 Negro Woman	106
Capt. Charles Wickham to 1 Negro Woman	74
Mr Chitenan to 1 Negro Woman	101
Mr Chaning to 1 Negro Boy	134
Colo. Cranston to 1 Negro Boy	71
Mr. Brinley to 1 Negro man	85
Mr. Brinley to 1 Negro man	94
Mr Don to 1 Negro Boy	78
Capt. Hartle to 1 Negro Girl	59
Wm King 1 Negro Girl	40
Mr Isaacs to 1 Negro Girl	69
Capt Wickham to the Snow	1300
Mathias King to 1 Negro Girl	75
Capt Robinson to 1 Negro man	41
Mr. Brinley to 1 Negro man	60

This account gives a fair idea of the prices current for slaves at that time. The women brought an average of £79, the men, £84. But slaves did not always bring good prices. Their value, of course, depended upon their age

and condition. The following shows the prices paid for slaves on the African coast: Capt. William Ellery made a voyage in the snow *Caesar*, and on 14 Jan. 1759, reported the result of his trading for natives of Annamboe (among other commodities). He said that in the hold and on board the snow *Caesar* "we have 153 adult slaves and two children." On his voyage in 1770 he says that he bought one woman slave for 110 gallons of rum, one prime woman slave for 130 gallons; one boy slave, 4 feet 3 inches, for 108 gallons; one prime man slave for 5 ounces 2 hundredweights in gold; one old man for a Lingister and .3 ounce of snuff. Dinah, one of these slaves, went to Captain Kent of Medford.

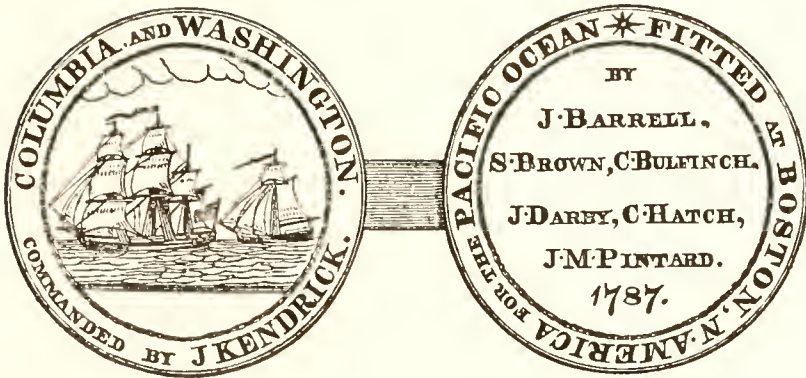
Col. Isaac Royal of Medford wrote to Dr. Tufts on 12 Mar. 1776, the eve of his departure for England (being a Tory), to sell the following negroes, Stephen and George.

They each cost 60 pounds sterling. I would take L 50, or even L 15 apiece for them. Hagar cost L 35, but I would take L 30 for her. I gave for Mira L 35, but I will take L 25. If Mr. Benjamin Hall will give the \$100 for her which he offered, he may have her, it being a good place. As to Betsy and her daughter Naney, the former may tarry or take her freedom, as she may choose; and Nancy you may put out to some good family by the year.

In the Vital Records of Scituate there are many entries of the marriages of slaves, their deaths and the births of their children. Among those of special interest to the families recorded in this volume are those of:

- Asher "Negro Servant of Nathan Cushing, Esq." and Dinah Cato, int. Jan. 25, 1777. [This entry crossed out.]
- Brister, Negro man Servt. of Dea. Samll. Jenkins, and Cloa, Negro woman Servant of Capt. James Turner, int. July 6, 1776
- Bristol, Negro of Capt. Barker and Judith, negro of Samll. Jenkins, June 19, 1740.
- Cuff, Negro, of Nantasket, and Margaret, Negro Servt. of Edward Jenkins, April 12, 1761.
- Cuffe, Negro of Jo Clap, and Flora, negro of Mr. Thos. Clap, int. Dec. 28, 1740.
- Elizabeth, Servaunt to Mr. Hatherlye, and Goeing White, Oct. 15, 1638. [By Rev. John Lothrop First Parish.]

- Fenex Negro Servt. of Mrs. Holbrook of Boston, and Lucanna Cato, a free negro, July 9, 1772.
- Gad Willis, Negro Servant of DR. ISAAC OTIS, and Letti Taylor, negro, Feb. 13, 1777.
- Glasco negro of Dce. King and Phillis negro to Mr. Jo Cushing, int. Sept. 20, 1740.
- Mark, Negro Servt. of John Codmont of Charlestown, and Ruth Rose, int. Apr. 6, 1745. [See account of Mark's poisoning of Captain Codman and his execution in this chapter.]
- Meriah, Negro of John Stevens, of Hingham, and Cuffe, Negro of Dea. Stoddard, Dec. 21, 1738.
- Meriah, Negro a free woman and Antony Sisco, my negro man, Oct. 28, 1714
- Meriah, formerly Servt. to John Barker, Esq., and Lemuel Francis, Indians, June 29, 1740.
- Phillis and Tony, Negroes Slaves to MR. EPHRAIM OTIS, Jan. 29, 1735-6.
- Phillis, negro of DR. OTIS and Jack, negro of Jos. Foster, int. Jan. 21, 1743.
- Tent negro woman of Benja. Cudworth, and Winsor Negro man of Mr. JOB OTIS, int. Nov. 9, 1745 (Content and Winsor m. Dec. 5, 1745)
- Winsor Negro of JOB OTIS and Jenny negroe of Capt. Barker, Aug. 25, 1737.
- Asher, s. Phillis Slave to DOCTR. OTIS, bp. June 2, 1754.
- Betty, ch. Phillis, Slave to DR. OTIS, bp. Sept. 3, 1749
- Cesar, negro Servt. Child of Joshua Young Baptized in sd. Young's House being dangerously sick & Sd. young's wife promising to Educated in ye fear & ways of ye D —, bp. Jan. 15, 1739.
- Elizabeth, d. Cesar, negro Servant . . . to Capt. Torrey and Sarah free Indian woman, bp. Aug. 28, 1748.
- Katherine, ch. Cuba, Negro Slave to Mr. Isaac Turner, bp. May 26, 1745.
- Lusanna, negro, d. of Cesar, Slave to Capt. Caleb Torrey, bp. Dec. 11, 1743.
- Mercy, d. to a negro of DR. OTIS, bp. Sept. 3, 1749.
- Richard, ch. Cuba Negro Slave to Mr. Isaac Turner, bp. May 5, 1745.
- Ruben, ch. Philis Negro Slave to DR. OTIS, bp. Sept. 3, 1749.
- Thomas, ch. Cuba Negro Slave to mr. Isaac Turner, bp. May 5, 1745.
- [In recording the deaths the owner's name is seldom given.]



MEDALS STRUCK OFF FOR THE SHIP "COLUMBIA"

(See page 248)



SADDLE BAGS USED BY DR. CUSHING OTIS, SCITUATE, 1794

Original in possession of L. Vernon Briggs



IRONS USED TO CHAIN UP RUNAWAY SLAVES IN SOUTH SCITUATE, MASS.

Original in possession of L. Vernon Briggs

In 1754 and 1755 there were, according to the Assessor's returns, eight male and nine female slaves in Hanover, Massachusetts. (Hanover was a part of Scituate until 1727.) The following vital statistics are quoted in the "History of Hanover, Mass.:"

Dick, James Bailey's negro, and Daphne, Col. Barker's negro, married Dec. 25, 1741.

Boston and Margaret, slaves of Elijah Cushing, married the same year.

Windsor Jonas and Mercy Red, an Indian, were married May 25, 1749.

Jack and Bilhah, Job Tilden's servants, married Feb. 8, 1751.

Newport and Kate, slaves of Nathaniel Sylvester, married May 25, 1760.

Caesar, child of Deacon Stockbridge's slave, died June 14, 1728.

Joseph Ramsdell's negro child, died April 25, 1733

Deacon Stockbridge's negro Cuffy, died Jan. 18, 1736.

Elijah Cushing's negro child, died March 5, 1736.

Fred, a negro of Matthew Estes, died Feb. 13, 1739.

Phyllis, Captain Joselyn's negro, died Feb. 9, 1742.

Captain Cushing's negro child died July 30, 1744.

A negro child of Uriah Lambert, died Sept., 1756.

A negro child of Elijah Cushing, Esq., died Feb. 1747.

Jupiter, Mr. John Curtis' negro, died Dec. 1747.

Briton, negro child of John Studley, died Jan. 23, 1749.

A negro child of Ensign John Bailey died Aug. 7, 1751.

A negro child of Lieut Job Tilden, died Dec. 25, 1754, and another Feb. 12, 1760.

Dina, negro servant of Mr. Amos Sylvester, died Feb. 1756.

Ben, and Indian slave of John Bailey, died May, 1756.

Bilhah, Joshua Barstow's negro woman, died May 21, 1757.

Jeffrey, negro of Col. Turner, was drowned in Furnace Pond, August 29, 1765.

Dick, slave of the Rev. Samuel Baldwin, died Oct. 5, 1775.

Phebe, negro slave to David Jacobs, died Jan. 8, 1769, also

Jane, a negro servant to David Jacobs died Feb. 28, 1775.

Jesse Boos, negro slave of the Rev. Samuel Baldwin, died Oct. 5, 1775.

Daphne, an old negro, probably Col. Barker's slave, died March 10, 1779

London, negro of the Widow Turner, died Jan. 15, 1786.

Diek, negro of Col. Bailey and husband of Daphne, died Jan. 20, 1786, aged 90.

Mingo, negro of Capt. Simeon Curtis, died April 7, 1791, aged 70.

It is recorded in the "History of Hanover" that "for quite a long time there was on exhibition in the Old South Church a bill of sale of a slave girl, given by Job Tilden of Hanover to Mr. Bailey of Scituate. She was described therein as nine years old, of good bodily health and with a kind disposition." Possibly the writer's memory was at fault in regard to the purchaser, or else Job Tilden sold more than one nine-year-old child of that description, for in "Old Scituate" I find the following copy of a bill of sale:

Know all men by these presents that I Job Tilden of Hanover in the county of plymouth in new england, yeoman, In Consideration of Thirty Three pounds in good silver monney to me in hand paid by Joseph Tilden, Junr. of Scituate in the county of plymouth in new england, yeoman, the Receit wherof I do hereby aeknowledge have given, granted, assigned, sett over and doe hereby give Granted said assign Sett over and deliver unto him the said Joseph Tilden, Junr. my negre garl named florow being about nine years old and is a servant for life to have and to hold said floro unto him the sai Joseph Tilden, Junr., his exesequeters and assigns and I do hereby covenant with the said Tilden his exseuters and assigns the said garl is sound and in good health and that I have good Right to make sale of her for Life as aforesaid and doe hereby warrint the said floro a servant for Life unto him the said Tilden his Exeseters and assigns witnessed my hand and seal

desember 14 1762 adomini

JOB TILDEN

Signed sealed and
delivered In the presence of

THOMAS BATES

JOSHUA BATES

The "History of Hanover" cites a number of interesting facts concerning the slave days. Mr. Bass, the first minister, owned and baptized a slave named Titus. After the death of Mr. Bass his daughter sold Titus to John Gould of Hull. The price paid was £40.8s., Mr. Gould to pay a pound down

and give notes for the balance. The bill was signed 25 Oct. 1770.

There are records now in existence showing that there were at different times nearly 100 slaves in the town of Hanover. The number not recorded must have been large.

In 1773 John Bailey of Hanover, Massachusetts, gave his son John certain real estate on condition "that he shall comfortably support my two old negroes during their natural life." Such bequests were common.

When the slaves became free they took surnames. Many took the names of their late owners, and some, to emphasize that they were free, took the name of *Freed-man*, which later became Freeman.

During the Revolutionary War, Job Tilden of Hanover sent one of his slaves named Cuffee as a soldier in the Continental Army. He was with Colonel Bailey and died at Valley Forge, and the sacrifice gave him a second name, for henceforth he was known as Cuffee Tilden, and so the printed Rolls inscribe him.

Cuffee Joselyn was a slave of Col. Joseph Joselyn's. He was captured on the coast of Africa when a boy, and died at the house of Thomas Damon about 1831, at the advanced age of more than one hundred years. He also served in the Continental Army. A memorandum made by Mr. John Tower, for many years editor of "The North River Pioneer," says:

We well remember the old slave and how he looked when we were very small and listened to his sorrowful tale of being kidnapped in his own country when he, as a child, was playing in the surf, his mother watching that no harm befall him, when the sailors landed from a large ship, seized him and carried him on board while his mother stood on the shore, wringing her hands and screaming for her little boy that she was never to see again.

Even after slavery had been abolished, many old negroes continued to live and die in the homes of their masters. There are records of the deaths of four such persons in Hanover:

May 2, 1792, Susanna, negro woman of Deacon Bass, age 73

Sept. 20, 1793, our negro woman called Bess died, aged 36. [This entry was made by the Rev. John Mellon in the Church Records.]

March 9, 1794, negro woman of Robert Estes, aged 76.

March 25, 1795, Cuba, a negro woman of Deacon Brooks, aged 84.

A number of negroes in spite of the condition of most of their race in New England, were educated and attained some distinction. The most notable case was that of one Phyllis Wheatley, who was brought from Africa and sold in the Boston slave market in 1761, a highly cultured woman who traveled abroad and in 1773 published a volume of poems in London, where she was well known and had many admiring friends. She won the admiration and recognition of Governor Hutchinson and many others among the respectable citizens of Boston of her day. She addressed a poem to General Washington which pleased him very much. He wrote her a very friendly and appreciative letter from Cambridge, dated 28 Feb. 1776, concluding:

If you should ever come to Cambridge or near Headquarters, I shall be happy to see a person so favored by the Muses, and to whom Nature has been so liberal and beneficent in her dispensations.

I am, with great respect, your obedient, humble servant,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

It was not until the beginning of our own great struggle for liberty that the inconsistency of maintaining slavery with one hand while striking for freedom with the other compelled a reluctant change of public opinion in New England. James Otis' famous speech in the cause of the Writs of Assistance, in 1761 — the first scene of the first act of opposition to the arbitrary claims of Great Britain — declared the rights of man inherent and inalienable. In that speech the poor negroes were not forgotten. None ever asserted their rights in stronger terms. John Adams was greatly astonished at the ideas expressed by Otis; nor was he alone in his astonishment. These ideas were new as they

were startling to the people of Massachusetts of that day. President Adams' report of this speech states that —

Not a Quaker in Philadelphia or Mr. Jefferson of Virginia ever asserted the rights of negroes in stronger terms. Young as I was and ignorant as I was, I shuddered at the doctrine he taught; and I have all my life shuddered and still shudder at the consequences that may be drawn from such premises. Shall we say that the rights of masters and servants clash and can only be decided by force? I adore the idea of gradual abolitions! but who should decide how fast or how slowly these abolitions should be made? (See "President Adams' Letters.")

A resolve, passed by the General Court, appears in the printed volume of Resolves, page 14:

LXXXIII. Resolve forbidding the sale of two Negroes brought in as Prisoners; Passed September 14 [16] 1776.

Whereas the Court is credibly informed that two Negro Men lately taken on the High Seas on board the Ship *Hannibal* and brought into the State as Prisoners, are advertized to be sold at Salem, the 17th inst., by Public Auction:

Resolved, That all persons connected with the said Negroes be, and they are hereby, forbidden to sell them, or in any manner to treat them otherwise than is already ordered for the treatment of prisoners taken in like manner; and if any sale of the said Negroes shall be made, it is hereby declared null and void; and that whenever it shall appear that any Negroes are taken on the High Seas and brought as prisoners into this State, they shall not be allowed to be sold, nor treated any otherwise than as prisoners are ordered to be treated who are taken in like manner.

But resolves against slavery passed by the Massachusetts Legislature had little effect on the buying and selling of slaves, as the following advertisements from journals immediately after this resolve and for some time later will prove:

To be SOLD — A stout, hearty, likely Negro Girl, fit for either Town or Country. Inquire of Mr. Andrew Gillespie, Dorchester. ("Independent Chronicle," Oct. 3, 1776.)

A hearty Negro Man, with a small sum of money, to be Given Away. (*Ibid.* Oct. 10, 1776.)

To Sell — A hearty likely Negro Wench, about 12 or 13 years of age, has had the Small Pox, can wash, iron, card & spin, &c., for no other fault but for want of Employ. (*Ibid.* Nov. 28, 1776.)

WANTED a Negro Girl, between 12 and 20 years of age, for which a good price will be given if she can be recommended. (*Ibid.* Feb. 27, 1777.)

To be SOLD — A likely Negro Man, 22 years old, has had the Small Pox. Can do any sort of business. Sold for want of employment. ("Continental Journal," Apr. 3, 1777.)

To be SOLD — A large, commodious Dwelling House Barn and Outhouses, with any quantity of Land from 1 to 50 acres, as the Purchaser shall choose, within 5 miles of Boston. Also a smart, well-tempered Negro Boy 14 years old, not to go out of the State and sold for 15 years only if he continues to behave well. (*Ibid.* May 8, 1777.)

To be SOLD for want of Employ — A likely, strong NEGRO GIRL, about 18 years old, understands all sorts of household business and can be well recommended. ("Independent Chronicle," May 8, 1777.)

To be SOLD Very Cheap, for no other Reason than for want of Employ, an Exceeding Active Negro Boy, aged 15, also a likely Negro Girl, aged 17. (*Ibid.* March 30 and April 6, 1780.)

To be SOLD — A likely Negro Boy. ("Continental Journal," Aug. 17, 1780.)

To be SOLD or LETT for a Term of Years, a strong, hearty, likely Negro Girl. (*Ibid.* Aug. 24, 1780.)

To be SOLD — a likely Negro Boy, about 18 years of age, fit to serve a Gentlemen. Inquire of the Printer. (*Ibid.* Oct. 26, 1780.)

A Negro Child, *soon Expected*, of good breed, may be owned by any Person inclined to take it, and Money with it. (*Ibid.* Dec. 14, 21, 28, 1780.)

To be SOLD — A Hearty, Strong, Negro Wench, about 29 years of age, fit for Town or Country. (*Ibid.* Dec. 21, 1780.)

To be SOLD, an extraordinary likely Negro Wench, 17 years old. She can be warranted to be strong, healthy and good-natured, *has no notion of Freedom*, has been always used to a Farmer's Kitchen and Dairy, and is not known to have any failing but being with Child, which is the only cause of her being sold. (*Ibid.* March 1, 1781.)

We now come to the Declaration of Rights in Massachusetts, and the Constitution of 1780. The Declaration of

Rights was drawn by John Adams. The first Article of this Declaration reads as follows:

ARTICLE 1. — All men are born equally free and independent, and have certain natural, essential and unalienable rights: among which may be reckoned the right of enjoying and defending their lives and liberties; that of acquiring, possessing and protecting their property, in fine, that of seeking and obtaining their safety and happiness. (Report, p. 7.)

This Declaration of Rights was embodied, with but slight and unimportant verbal amendments, in the Constitution of Massachusetts. The Constitution was adopted by popular vote in June, 1780, but there is much evidence to prove that neither John Adams himself nor the other framers of the Constitution had the least idea of its application to the negro, who evidently was not to be included in "all men," but was merely a "property" to be defended.

Mrs. Power says, in her paper on Chief Justice Cushing (in "Old Scituate"):

Slavery had been abolished in the province, and when Massachusetts became a state, a phrase of the Constitution adopted in 1780 omitted the words which disfranchised "negroes, Indians and Mulattoes," and gave the right of suffrage to "every male person being twenty-one years of age and possessed of a certain amount of property *being free*," etc. A Negro by the name of Quaco, otherwise known as Quork Walker, born in slavery, put this to the test. He had been sold at the age of nine months, together with his father and mother, to a Mr. Caldwell, who promised Quaco his freedom at the age of twenty-five, while his widow promised it earlier, when Quaco should be twenty-one. The widow Caldwell married Nathaniel Jennison, of Barre, Mass., and after his wife's death the husband claimed Quaco as a part of her estate. When Quaco came of age he ran away from Jennison, was overtaken, beaten and imprisoned for two hours. John Caldwell, a brother of his first master, in whose employ he was when seized, came to his assistance, and Quaco was given legal advice. The case was first tried in the Court of Common Pleas, and the jury awarded the negro a verdict of £50. The case was appealed and finally came before the Supreme Court. The full bench of Chief Justice and three Associate Justices presided over

the trial. Chief Justice Cushing's (of Scituate) charge to the Grand Jury is on record. He said in part:

As to the doctrine of slavery and the right of Christians to hold Africans in perpetual servitude, and sell and treat them as we do our horses and cattle, that (it is true) has been heretofore countenanced by the Province laws formerly, but nowhere is expressly enacted or established. It has been a usage which took its origin from some European nations, and the regulations of the British Government respecting the then Colonies, for the benefit of trade and wealth. But whatever sentiments have formerly prevailed in this particular or slid upon us by the example of others, a different idea has taken place with the people of America, more favorable to the natural right of mankind, and to that natural, innate desire of Liberty with which Heaven (without regard to color, complexion, or shape of noses, features) has inspired all the human race. And upon this ground our Constitution of Government, by which the people of this Commonwealth have solemnly bound themselves, sets out with declaring all men are born free and equal — and that every subject is entitled to liberty — and to have it guarded by the laws, as well as life and property — and in short is totally repugnant to the idea of being born slaves. This being the case I think the idea of slavery is inconsistent with our own conduct and Constitution; and there can be no such thing as perpetual servitude of a rational creature, unless his liberty is forfeited by criminal conduct, or given up by personal consent or contract.

Soon after the Declaration of Rights in Massachusetts, and the Constitution of 1780, which freed the slaves, their owners not only set many of the able-bodied negroes adrift, but they turned loose on the community the old, the halt and the blind, and even infants and young children. These latter, having nobody to take care of them, had to be accepted in the poorhouses of the towns and cared for at the expense of the inhabitants. The poorhouses were soon overcrowded, and the burden of expense too much for the towns to bear. "An Act for suppressing and punishing of Rogues and Vagabonds, Common Beggars and Other Disorderly and Lewd Persons" was therefore presented in the Senate on 6 Mar. 1788. It went through the usual stages of legislation with various amendments, and was finally passed on 26 Mar. 1788. It contains the following very remarkable provision:

V. Be it further enacted by the authority of the aforesaid (The Senate and House of Representatives in General Court Assembled)



DRAWING ROOM, 64 BEACON STREET, RESIDENCE OF L. VERNON AND MARY CABOT BRIGGS

(SOUTH VIEW)

(See Chapter XXVI)



DRAWING ROOM, 64 BEACON STREET, RESIDENCE OF L. VERNON AND MARY CABOT BRIGGS

(NORTH VIEW)

(See Chapter XXVI)

that no person being an African or a Negro, other than a subject of the Emperor of Morocco or a citizen of some one of the United States (to be evidenced by a certificate from the Secretary of the State of which he shall be a citizen) shall tarry within this Commonwealth for longer than two months, and upon complaint made to any Justice of the Peace within this Commonwealth that any such person has been within the same more than two months, the said Justice shall order the said person to depart out of this Commonwealth; and in case that the said African or Negro shall not depart as aforesaid, any Justice of the Peace within this Commonwealth, upon complaint and proof made that such person has continued within this Commonwealth ten days after notice given him or her to depart as aforesaid, shall commit the said person to any House of Correction within the County, there to be kept to hard labor, according to the rules and orders of the said House, until the sessions of the Peace next to be holden within the said county; and the Master of the said House of Correction is hereby required and directed to transmit an attested copy of the warrant of commitment to the said Court on the first day of their said Session, and if upon trial of the said Court it shall be made to appear that the said person has continued within the Commonwealth contrary to the tenor of this Act, he or she shall be whipped, not exceeding ten stripes, and ordered to depart this Commonwealth within ten days, and if he or she shall not so depart, the same process shall be had and the same punishment inflicted, and so *toties quoties*.

In the "Massachusetts Mercury," Boston, 16 Sept. 1800 (No. 22, Vol. XVI), the following notice occupies a conspicuous place, filling a column of the paper:

NOTICE TO BLACKS

The following officers of Police, having made return to the Subscriber of the names of the following persons, who are Africans or Negroes, not subjects to the Emperor of Morocco nor citizens of the United States, the same are hereby warned and directed to depart out of this Commonwealth before the 10th day of October next, as they would avoid the pains and penalties of the law in that case provided which was passed by the Legislature March 26, 1788.

CHARLES BULFINCH, *Superintendent*.

Then follows a list of the names of negroes in Massachusetts from Portsmouth, Providence, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New London, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Halifax, West Indies, Cape François, Aux Cayes, Jamaica, Bermuda, New Providence, Liverpool, Africa, France — sixty-four names in all; and of mulattoes from some of the same places as well as from Albany, New Jersey, Maryland — seventy-one of these.

Rather than to be whipped every ten days if they remained in Massachusetts more than two months, the negroes flocked into the neighboring States, which in self-defence passed laws to the same effect as those in Massachusetts, until the poor blacks had no refuge left. The families from which they had been discharged were allowed to take them back, providing that the able-bodied returned as well as the helpless. Again they became virtually slaves but were called servants, working without wages. The authorities shut their eyes and encouraged their return rather than that the State should be burdened with their care, and it was not until about 1830 that a law was passed which made it absolutely impossible for slavery to exist in Massachusetts.

We cannot excuse our ancestors for their treatment of the Indians and their traffic in slaves. They evidently felt justified by the fact that the leading men of the colonies held slaves, indentured servants, etc. It was the custom, and the law of the land recognized it. Even after the Revolution, we read in Warfield's travels that when he visited President Washington at Mount Vernon, in 1788, Washington had 300 slaves distributed in log houses in different parts of his plantation, which consisted of 10,000 acres in that neighborhood. And from Washington's Diary and other sources we learn that he had 40 domestic slave servants attached to his household, and several thousand other slaves in different parts of the country on his estates, which then amounted to over 200,000 acres.

Richard Parkinson published his "Tour in America" in 1805. He describes the cultivation of tobacco and continues:

The management of negroes was a great obstacle, for notwithstanding the great inhumanity so generally spoken of by those who are acquainted with them, they will not do without harsh treatment. Only take General Washington for an example [he visited Washington in 1798]. I have not the least reason to think it was his desire, but the necessity of the case; but it was the sense of all his neighbors that he treated them with more severity than any other man. He regularly delivered weekly to every working negro two or three pounds of pork and some salt herrings, often badly cured, and a small portion of Indian corn. They are so lazy by nature that they would do little or nothing in fine weather but take pleasure, cook victuals and play on music and dance all winter if they had no master. I think them as unfit to conduct themselves as a child — thoughtless in the extreme and therefore requiring a severe master. . . . The first time I worked with General Washington among his negroes, when he spoke to them he amazed me by the utterance of his words. He spoke as differently as if he had been quite another man, or had been in anger. . . . If land and negroes make a man rich, he was so; but I do not think them good property. The General had four hundred negroes and only 70 working on his farm. . . . I think a large number of negroes to require as severe discipline as a company of soldiers, and that may be one and the great cause why General Washington managed his negroes better than any other man, he being brought up in the army, and industrious beyond any description, and in regularity the same. . . . I am of the opinion that the General never knowingly did anything wrong, but did to all men as he would that they should do to him. Therefore it is not to be supposed that he would injure the negro.

In the “History of Santo Domingo” we find that in 1790 General Lafayette sold his plantation, situated on one of these islands, together with 70 slaves, attaching no conditions in the sale of the slaves as to their future use or freedom. And Lafayette was at that time a prominent member of the anti-slavery Society in France, *Les Amis des Noirs*.

It may interest the reader to see the sort of instructions given by respectable Massachusetts merchants to the captains of their slave ships. I copy from Felt’s “Salem,” Vol. II, pp. 289–290, the following letter, which Moore says “is probably the only specimen extant.” [There are other

“specimens,” for which see my “History of the Cabot Family,” Vol. I, pp. 385–400.]

Capt. —

Nov. 12, 1786.

Our brig, of which you have the command, being cleared at the office and being in every other respect complete for sea; our orders are that you embrace the first fair wind and make the best of your way to the coast of Africa, and there invest your cargo in slaves. As slaves, like other articles when brought to market, generally appear to the best advantage; therefore too critical an inspection can not be paid to them before purchase, to see that no dangerous distemper is lurking about them, to attend particularly to their age, their countenance, to the straightness of their limbs, and as far as possible, to the goodness or badness of their constitution, &c, &c, will be very considerable objects.

Male or female slaves — whether grown or not — we can not particularly instruct you about, and on this head shall only observe that prime male slaves generally sell best in any market. No people require more kind or tender treatment to exhilarate their spirits than the Africans; and while on the one hand you are attentive to this, remember that on the other hand too much circumspection can not be observed by yourself and people, to prevent their taking advantage of such treatment by insurrection, etc. When you consider that on the health of your slaves almost your whole voyage depends, for all other risques, but mortality, seizures and bad debts, the underwriters are accountable for; — you will therefore particularly attend to smoking your vessel, washing her with vinegar, to the clarifying your water with lime or brimstone, and to cleanliness among your own people as well as among the slaves.

As the factors on the craft have no laws but of their own making, and of course such as suit their own convenience, they therefore, like the Israelites of old, do whatever is right in their own eyes; in consequence of which you ought to be very careful about receiving gold dust, and of putting your cargo into any but the best hands, or if it can be avoided and the same dispatch made, into any hands at all, on any credit. If you find that any saving can be made by bartering rum for slops and supplying your people with small stores, you will do it; or even if you can not do it without a loss, it is better done than left undone, for shifts of clothes, particularly in warm climates, are very necessary. As our interest will be considerable, and as we shall make insurance thereon, if

any accident should prevent your following the track here pointed out, let it be your first object to protest publicly why, and for what reason, you were obliged to deviate. You are to have four slaves upon every hundred, and four at the place of sale; the privilege of eight hogsheads, and two pounds eight shillings per month; — these are all the compensations you are to expect from the voyage.

Your first mate is to have four hogsheads privilege and your second mate two, and wages as per agreement. No slaves are to be selected out as privileged ones, but must rise or fall with the general sales of the cargo, and average accordingly. We shall expect to hear from you by every opportunity to Europe, the West Indies, or any of these United States; and let your letters particularly inform us what you have done, what you are then doing and what you expect to do. We could wish to have as particular information as can be obtained respecting the trade in all its branches on the Coast; to know if, in any future time, it is probable that a load of N. E. Rum could be sold for bills of exchange on London or any part of Europe, or for gold dust, and what dispatch in this case might be made. . . .

We are in want of about five hundredweight of cam wood and one large elephant's tooth of about 80 pounds, which you will obtain. If small teeth can be bought, from 15 to 30 lbs., so as to sell here without a loss, at 3 shillings, you may purchase 200 lbs. Should you meet with any curiosities on the Coast of small value, you may expend 40 or 50 gallons of rum for them. Upon your return, you will touch at St. Pierre's, Martinico, and call on Mr. John Mounreau for your further advice and destination. We submit the conducting of the voyage to your good judgement and prudent management, not doubting of your best endeavours to serve our interest in all cases, and conclude with committing you to the Almighty Disposer of all events.

We wish you health and prosperity, and are
Your Friends and Owners,

Although the slave *trade* was finally abolished by law in Massachusetts in 1788, this did not prevent Massachusetts vessels from carrying slaves to the West Indies and southern ports. (See "History of the Cabot Family.")

Warfield, in his "Travels," wrote from Boston in the latter part of that year:

The rum distilleries are on the decline since the suppression of the slave trade in which this liquor was employed, and since the diminution of the use of strong spirits by the country people. This is fortunate for the human race, and the American industry will soon repair the small loss it sustains from the decline of the fabrication of poisons.

But this decline must have been temporary, or at least relatively small, for we find that the merchants of Boston, Salem and other Massachusetts ports continued the manufacture of rum and the profitable trade in slaves until a law was passed which made the ships employed in the slave trade subject to confiscation by the government.

In 1790 the census of slaves in the United States was 697,697 (for which numbers our New England slave traders were largely responsible). The census of 1830 gives the total population of the United States as 12,856,154. Of these, 10,526,058 were free whites, 2,010,629 were slaves, and 319,467 were "free colored persons" — nearly one sixth of the population being slaves, although slavery had been abolished in a majority of the States. There were at that time 7,045 colored persons in Massachusetts. Four of these were reported as slaves, but the compilers stated that "as it is admitted on all hands that slavery cannot legally exist" in this State, "we have thought it would be misrepresentation" to report any slaves as existing in it.

It was not until 1842 that, by the Webster-Ashburton Treaty, a provision was made whereby the United States and Great Britain agreed to send to the coast of Africa a naval squadron, of not less than 80 guns, to suppress the slave trade. This treaty was signed by Daniel Webster for the United States and by Lord Ashburton for Great Britain. The Hon. Albert Smith, a Hanover, Massachusetts, man was influentially concerned in making it.

Moore points out also that negroes were not eligible to the militia until the passage of chapter 193 of the Acts of 1863, and he further states that, so far as can be found, the existence of slavery was never formally prohibited by legislation in Massachusetts until 1866, at which time the amendment

to the United States Constitution prohibiting slavery became effective. (As a matter of fact, this amendment, the 13th, was declared to have been ratified on 18 Dec. 1865.)

A review in the "Literary Digest" of 27 Apr. 1929, tells us that —

It is estimated that four or five million human beings are yet in bondage in various parts of the world; in Abyssinia the proportion of slaves is said to be one in five of the population, and in parts of China one in 150; slave importation to Arabia rates 2,000 a year, according to data furnished to League headquarters. The most notable progress reported by the League during the past year was the freeing of 200,000 natives of Sierra Leone, on the west coast of Africa next to Liberia, a British protectorate, on January 1, 1928.

CHAPTER V

QUAKERS

THE ANCESTORS OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY, THEIR FRIENDS AND ASSOCIATES, DEFEND THE QUAKERS, WHO ARE PERSECUTED BY BOTH THE PURITANS AND THE PILGRIMS

George Fox, the founder of the Society of Friends, began to preach in England in 1647. None of his followers found their way to this country until 1656, when Mary Fisher and Ann Austin arrived in Boston from Barbados. In 1657 eight Quakers came to Boston through Rhode Island. The general feeling of intolerance toward the Quakers was so strong in the Massachusetts Bay Colony that many of them left Massachusetts, and they soon spread through the Plymouth Colony. Here they met with less severity, owing to the teachings of gentle John Robinson, their former pastor in Leyden.

Massachusetts Bay was the first of the United Colonies to take action against the Quakers. In 1656, almost immediately after the first arrivals, the Massachusetts General Court addressed a memorial to the Commissioners of the United Colonies, who met at Plymouth in September of that year. A brief extract will serve to show its character and design:

Here hath arrived among us several persons professing themselves Quakers, fit instruments to propagate the kingdom of Sathan. For the securing of ourselves and our neighbors from such pests, we have imprisoned them until they be dispatched away to the place from whence they came.

They then request that certain laws be propounded by the Commissioners to the General Courts of each of the United Colonies.

Accordingly, the Commissioners, at their meeting held in New Plymouth, 4 Sept. 1656, after a long preamble, went on record as follows:

We further propose to the several General Courts that all Quakers, Rantors and other notorious hereties be prohibited coming into the United Colonies, and if any shall hereafter come or arise amongst us, that they be forthwith censured or removed out of all the Jurisdictions.

The following year, in September, 1657, at their meeting held in Boston, the Commissioners sent a letter to the government of Rhode Island:

. . . being informed that divers Quakers are arrived this summer at Rhode Island and entertained there, which may prove dangerous to the Colonies . . . therefore make our request that you, as the rest of the Colonies, take such order herein that your neighbors may be freed from the danger; that you remove those Quakers that have been received and for the future prohibit their coming amongst you. . . .

Captain James Cudworth of Scituate was one of the Commissioners from Plymouth Colony; he refused to subscribe to this instrument and himself suffered much persecution in consequence.

At their meeting in Boston, on the 23d of September, 1658, the Commissioners addressed a circular to the governments of all the United Colonies, propounding laws against the Quakers:

Whereas there is an accursed and pernicious sect of hereties lately risen up in the world who are commonly called Quakers, who take upon them to be immediately sent of God and infallibly assisted; who do speak and write blasphemous things, despising government . . . and whereas the several Jurisdictions have made divers laws to prohibit and restrain the aforesaid cursed hereties from coming amongst them; yet notwithstanding they are not deterred thereby, but do arrogantly and presumptuously press in several of the Jurisdictions and there vent their poisonous and devilish opinions, which being permitted manifestly tends to disturbance of our peace . . . it is therefore propounded

and seriously commended to the several General Courts upon the considerations aforesaid, to make a law:

That all such Quakers formerly convieted and punished as such shall, if they return again, be imprisoned and forthwith banished or expelled out of the said Jurisdiction under pain of death, and afterwards if they presume to come again into that Jurisdiction to be put to death as presumptuously incorrigible, unless they shall plainly and publicly renounce their cursed opinions; and for such Quakers as shall come into any Jurisdiction from foreign parts, or such as shall arise within the same, after due conviction that either he or she is of that cursed seet of hereties, they be banished under pain of severe corporal punishment and if they return again then to be punished accordingly and banished under pain of death, and if afterwards they shall yet presume to come again, then to be put to death as aforesaid except they do then and there plainly and publicly renounce their said cursed opinions and devilish tenets.

In October, 1658, the General Court of Massachusetts passed a law which was published "in seuerall places of Boston by beate of drumme," in which a penalty of £100 was imposed upon —

. . . the master or commander of any ship, barque, pinnace or eatch or any other vessel that shall henceforth bring into any harbor, ereek or cove within this Jurisdiction any known Quaker or Quakers, or any other blasphemous hereties.

And it is hereby further ordered and enacted that what Quaker soever shall arrive in this country from foreign parts, or come into this Jurisdiction from parts adjacent, shall forthwith be committed to the house of correction, and at their entrance be severely whipt, and by the master thereof be kept constantly at work.

A heavy fine was imposed for importing or concealing Quaker writings, or for defending the "heretical opinions" of the Quakers.

This law against the Quakers was strengthened by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, on 14 Oct. 1657, by one even more drastic than that propounded by the Commissioners. A fine of forty shillings was imposed for entertaining or concealing a Quaker; and it was further ordered that if any Quaker or Quakers should presume —



MARY PERRY

DAUGHTER OF ICHABOD THOMAS AND SISTER
OF MRS. CUSHING O. BRIGGS

(See pages 729-759)



LUTHER BRIGGS

1822-1905

(See page 584)



ISAIAH HANSCOM, CHIEF OF BUREAU,
YARDS AND DOCKS



MRS. ISAIAH HANSCOM

LLOYD BRIGGS BOARDED WITH ISAIAH AND MRS. HANSCOM AT KITTEERY WHEN
ENGINEER AT PORTSMOUTH NAVY YARD

. . . after they have once suffered what the law requireth, to come into this Jurisdiction, every such male Quaker shall, for the first offense, have one of his ears cut off and be kept at work in the house of correction until he can be sent away at his own charge; and for the second offense shall have his other ear cut off, and be kept in the house of correction as aforesaid; and every woman Quaker that suffered the law here that shall presume to come into this Jurisdiction shall be severely whipt and kept at the house of correction . . . and for every Quaker, he or she, that shall for the third time herein again offend, they shall have their tongues bored through with a hot iron. . . . And it is further ordered that every Quaker arising from amongst ourselves shall be dealt with and suffer the like punishment as the law provides against the foreign Quakers.

The first order against the Quakers that we find in the Plymouth Colony Records was passed on 3 June 1657, six months after the first recommendation of the Commissioners of the United Colonies:

In case any shall bring in any quaker rantor or other Notorouse Heretiques either by land or water into any pte of this Gourment, [he] shall forthwith upon order from any one Majestrate returne them to the place from whence they came or clear the Gourment of them on the penaltie of paying a fine of twenty shillings for every week that they shall stay in the Gourment After warninge.

Other laws were rapidly enacted, as follows:

1657. Whereas there hath severall psons come into this gou^r-ment comonly called Quakers, whose doctrine and practises manifestly tends to the Subversion of the fundamentalls of Christian Religion Church order and the Ciuell peace of this Gour^rment as appears by the Testimonies giuwn in sundry depositions and otherwise; It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that noe Quaker or pson comonly soe called bee entertained by any pson or psons within this Gour^rment vnder the penaltie of five pounds for every such default or bee whipt; and in case any one shall entertaine any such pson Ignorantly if hee shall Testify on his oath that hee knew not them to bee such hee shalbee freed of the aforesaid penaltie provided hee vpon his first decerning them to bee such doe descouer them to the Constable or his deputie;

It is alsoe enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof that if any Rantor or Quaker or pson comonly soe called shall come into any towne within this Gou'ment and by any pson or psons bee known or suspected to bee such the pson soe knowing or suspecting him shall forth with acquaint the Cunstable or his deputie of them on paine of Presentment and soe lyable to censure in court who forthwith on such notice of them or any other Intelligence hee shall haue of them; shall dillegently cndeauor to apprehand him or them and bring them before some one of the majestates whoe shall cause him or them to bee committed to Goale there to bee kept Close prisoners with such victualls onely as the Court aloweth vntil hee or they shall defray the charge both of theire Imprisonment and theire Transportation away; Together with an Ingagement to returne into this Gou'ment noe more or else to bee continewd in close durance till further order from the Court; And forasmuch as the meetings of such psons whether Strangers or others proueth desturbing to the Peace of this Gou'ment it is therfore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That henceforth noe such meetings bee assembled or kept by any pson or in any place within this Gou'ment under the penaltie of forty shillings a time for the owner of the place that pmits them soe to meet together;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

That noe Quaker Rantor or any such corrupt pson shalbee admitted to bee a freeman of this Corporation.

1658. It is enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof, that if any pson or psons that are or shalbee freemen of this Corporation that are Quakers, or such as are manifest Incurragers of them and soe Judged by the Court as such as shall contemptuously speake of the Court or of the Lawes therof and such as are Judged by the Court grosly seandaleuse as lyers drunkards Swearers &c shall lose theire freedome of this Corporation.

. . . That all such as refuse to take the oath of fidelitie as quakers or such as are manifest encurragers of them shall haue noe voat in any place of trust while they continew such.

Wheras sundry psons both Quakers and others wander vp and downe in this Jurisdiction and follow noe lawfull calling to earne theire owne bread and alsoe vse all Indeaucers to subvert Ciuill State and to pull downe all Churehes and ordinances of God, to thrust vs out of the wayes of God notwithstanding all former lawes provided for the contrary —

Bee it enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof that with all convenient Speed a work house or house of correction bee

erected that all such vagrants as wander vp and downe without any lawfull calling and alsoe all Idle psons or rebellious children or servants that are stuborne and will not worke to earne their own bread and yett haue not wherewith to maintain themselves may bee put to this house of Correction and there bee Employed in such worke as shalbee there provided for them. . . .

In 1659 the proceedings of the Court were somewhat less severe against the Quakers. We find in the Records of that year:

It is enacted by the Court that a proposition bee made to the Quakers that such of them as will promise and engage to remoue their dwellings out of this Gourment within six monthes after this psent Court and pforme it; that noe fine bee exacted of them as soe engage; and such as whose estates are soe Impouerished as they are disabled to remoue they shall haue some supply made them out of the Treasury to healp them;

It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever pson or psons shall frequently absent or neglect vpon the Lord's day the publicke worship of God that is approued by this Gourment shall forfeit for euery such default ten shillings.

Also:

Wheras some haue desired and others think it meet to pmit some psons to frequent the Quaker meetings to endeauer to reduce them from the error of their wayes the Court considering the pmises doe pmitt John Smith of Barnstable Isaac Robinson John Chipman; and John Cooke of Plymouth or any two of them to attend the said meetings for the ends aforesaid att any time betwixt this Court and the next October Court.

Fines, whippings and imprisonment were the extent of the persecution of the Quakers in the Plymouth Colony. The voices of many of the most prominent and influential men in that colony were raised in strong opposition to repressive action. The names of such men cannot be too often rehearsed nor too long perpetuated. Capt. James Cudworth, the venerable Timothy Hatherley, Rodolphus Elmes and Isaac Robinson, son of the preacher to the Pilgrim Church in Leyden, were especially strong and constant in their opposition.

Timothy Hatherley, who was one of the magistrates, was firmly opposed to the cruelty of these laws and to the whole policy in such proceedings. It was necessary to get rid of such opposition, and accordingly, in 1658, he was left out of the magistracy. Hatherley has been called "the guardian and patron of Scituate." He was an important member of the government, having been an Assistant for thirteen years, Treasurer of the colony and Commissioner of the United Colonies for three years. After being dropped from the magistracy he remained in retirement from public office until his death in 1666. (See chapter on "Walter Briggs and His Friends.")

Of the prosecutions of those who defended the Quakers, none equalled in interest or importance the case against James Cudworth, which has already been recounted in another chapter. In his disputations over the Quaker question with the men who sat on the magistrates' bench with him, Cudworth was well aware of the unpopularity of his position. He wrote:

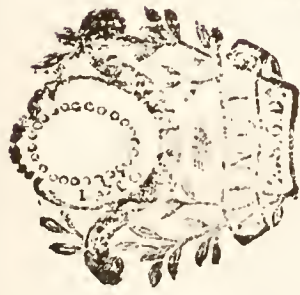
This spirit of intolerance did work those two years that I was in the Magistracy, during which time I was, on sundry occasion, forced to declare my dissent in sundry actings of that nature; which altho' done with all moderation of expression, together with due respect unto the rest, yet it wrought great dissatisfaction and prejudice in them against me.

As Pratt tells us, Cudworth frankly told his fellow magistrates that he had entertained Quakers at his house, giving as his reason —

. . . thereby that I might be better acquainted with their principles I thought it better to do so than, with the blind world, to censure and condemn, rail at and revile them, when they neither saw their persons nor knew any of their principles. But the Quakers and myself can not agree on divers things, and so I signified to the Court, but told them withal that, as I was no Quaker, so I would be no persecutor."

Pratt says:

It was due, perhaps, to the firm stand taken by Cudworth, the wisdom of Henry Dunster and the sagacious counsel of Hatherley



je recommande d'abord ceux de m^r Perkins de Boston

Les hommes de deux mille quatre-vingt ans. Les uns en ont

que je promets leur remettre à leur volonté, pour ce présent

Le vingt huit germinal leur trois de la dépe française

un en indivisible —

mais, admettez française,

noailles de la Fayette

Memorandum one half of the above is on

Account of Mr J^r Perkins son of Boston

RECEIPT GIVEN COL. T. H. PERKINS FOR MONEYS HE ADVANCED TO THE MARQUISE DE LAFAYETTE TO JOIN HER HUSBAND, THE MARQUIS, WHO WAS THEN IMPRISONED IN AUSTRIA. COLONEL PERKINS TOOK THEIR SON INTO HIS OWN HOME IN BOSTON

that the "Old Colony" was not committed to the drastic and cruel punishments with which the members of the sect were treated by the government of Massachusetts Bay, led by John Endicott. Mr. Dunster was the second Minister of the First Church in Scituate, succeeding Mr. Chauncy. This position he had accepted after his retirement as first President of Harvard College; he was one of the learned men of New England. Besides the good name which he had earned as President of the College, he had become well known for his work with Richard Lyon in revising the New England version, 1640, of *The Psalms, Hymns and Spiritual Songs of the Old Testament, Faithfully Translated into English Meter*.

He came to Scituate, not as an ordained preacher of the Gospel, but as a *Teacher* — an office of the Church provided by the Congregational churches of the time. He continued to act in this capacity until his death in Scituate in 1659. Just before this occurrence the Colony was in a state of upheaval over the presence of the Quakers in its midst, and their activities in denouncing the religious doctrines which the Forefathers had come here to establish. Unlike the majority of his fellow Congregationalists, Dunster was extremely tolerant of the Quakers. James Cudworth, at the time he was being ostracised for his attitude toward the sect, wrote of him, "Through mercy we have yet among us the worthy Mr. Dunster, whom the Lord has made boldly to bear testimony against the spirit of persecution."

Doubtless there were many fanatics, especially among the Ranters, who were often ignorantly called Quakers. As a matter of fact, the Quakers were a quiet, peace-loving people, whose main tenet was a belief in the "inner light," that is, in the guidance of their consciences rather than in the dicta of the church or the government. The Quakers refused to take an oath, their *yea, yea* and *nay, nay* being considered sufficient, and their refusal to take the oath of fealty to the King was looked upon as seditious, though in the main they were loyal, law-abiding subjects.

The Ranters were of quite another sort, a group of noisy, lawless fanatics. Rufus Jones tells us, in his "Quakers in the American Colonies," that there are many indications in the Friends' journals and contemporary documents that Ranters abounded in many parts of the

colonies during the seventeenth century. Fox found them in considerable numbers in Rhode Island, and labored to make them see that he had no sympathy with their moral and spiritual chaos. He complained in his *Journal* that they had been rude at a Friends' meeting. Many of the disorders attributed to the Quakers were doubtless of their making. As the two sects were almost invariably coupled in the records, it is difficult to distinguish between them, and some of our historians, as Justin Winsor, in his "*Memorial History of Boston*," have made little effort to do so. This same historian names some of the wildest and most frantic disorders attributed to Quakers, and relates for a fact that two women, Lydia Wardwell and Deborah Wilson, were adjudged to the whipping post "for coming into our assemblies entirely divested of their clothes." He commends the "wise and prudent counsellor in Plymouth Colony who propounded that a law be made for the Quakers to have their heads shaved . . . for which we thank him and would have thanked him more," says Deane, "had he informed us who that facetious counsellor was. Nothing will soften the fury of fanaticism like this; and the government of Rhode Island fairly outwent the age and stepped forward nearly a whole century, when they were meek and politic enough to let the Quakers 'say over their revelations' without molesting them."

Deane tells us that in 1657 Humphrey Norton was sentenced to depart from Plymouth Colony. In 1658 he came back with John Rowse, and being taken before the Court for examination, Norton repeatedly used such language to Governor Prenee as, "Thou lyest." Christopher Winter of Scituate appeared as an accuser and "deposed to a paper containing sundry notorious errors expressed by said Norton." The oath of fidelity to the government being tendered to them, and they refusing to take it, they were publicly whipped, and on their refusing to pay the fee to the Marshal for whipping them, they were remanded to prison; but having satisfied the Marshal, they were soon after liberated on condition of leaving the jurisdiction. After retiring, Norton addressed letters to Governor Prenee and John Alden, one

of the Assistants, "which surpass the ravings of madmen." They are dated from Rhode Island, 16 Apr. 1658, and filled with such railings as the following:

Thomas Prence, thou hast perverted justice and hast defrauded the poor and needy. John Alden is to thee like a pack horse, wherupon thou layest thy beastly bag; cursed are all they that have a hand therin. The cry of vengeance will pursue thee — the anguish and pain that will enter thy reins will be like gnawing worms lodged between thy heart and liver. When these things come upon thee, in that day and hour thou shalt to thy grief know that prophets of the Lord God we are, and the God of vengeance is our God. (See Hazard's Collections.)

His letter to Alden was alike furious:

John Alden, if there be in thee any expectation of mercy do thou follow the example of Timothy Hatherly, and withdraw thy body forever appearing at that beastly bench where the law of God is cast behind your backs; let the cursed purse be cast out of thy house, wherein is held the goods of other men, lest through it a moth enter thy house and a mildew upon thy estate; for in keeping it thou art no other than a pack horse to Thomas Prence. Thou art set in the midst of a company that's like a hedge of vipers; the best of them is not worthy to hew wood in the house of our God.

Such attacks naturally inflamed the opposition of the authorities.

There are many instances in the Records of Quakers being punished for the breach of the laws. The charges against them were often trivial, as in the General Court held by Governor Prence at Plymouth, on 2 Feb. 1657/8:

William Braind, one of those called Quakers, being found to be a man of turbulent spirit, and being forward to abuse men with his tongue, is required to depart the Government within eight and forty hours from this present; and in case he shall be found in the Government hereafter, to be publicly whipped.

8 February.

These aforesaid Quakers, coming through the town of Plymouth on the eighth day of February were apprehended and whipped according to the aforesaid sentence.

1657-8.

On March 2, 1657-8 Mr. Arthur Howland is sentenced to find sureties for good behavior or else to pay a fine of four pounds, for permitting a Quaker meeting in his house and inviting "such as were under government, children and others" to come to the meeting; at the same time he is fined five pounds for resisting the Constable of Marshfield and abusing him by threatening speeches; and on a third charge, that of "presenting a writing into the Court, which said writing, on the perusing thereof, appeared to be of dangerous consequence," was again sentenced to find sureties for his good behavior. At the same Court Henry Howland was fined ten shillings for entertaining a meeting in his house; and Zoeth Howland for "speaking opprobriously of the ministers of God's word" was sentenced to sit in the stocks for the space of an hour, or during the pleasure of the Court; "which accordingly was performed, and soe released, paying his fee."

The General Court of Plymouth Colony, 1660, passed laws similar to those of 1658, but more specific, regarding the entertainment of Quakers, the arrest and detention of all "Rantors or Quakers" and their banishment under pain of public whipping, — for which they must pay the fees, — and as to the breaking up of all Quaker meetings. As in the earlier law, the penalty is forty shillings for every speaker, ten shillings for every listener who is the head of a family, and forty shillings for the owner of the place where the meeting is held, and it is added that —

All such as shalbe found at any such meetings as are vnder the Gourment of others, as wives, Children or seruants, &c, The Cunstable of a Towne of where such meeting is shall forthwith carry them either into the stockes or Cage whoe shall remaine there according to the discretion of the said Cunstable provided if hee put them in the stockes they shall not continew there aboue two houres if in the winter nor aboue four houres if in the summer; and if hee put them Into the Cage they shall not continew there longer than vntill night if in the winter; and not longer than the next morning if in the summer; and for all young psons who are att their own dispose and shalbee found att any such meetings that the same course bee taken with them either by puting them in the Cage or stockes.

1660. It is enacted by the Plymouth Court that there shalbee in the seuerall Townships of this Jurisdiction a Cage erected, especially att Sandwich Duxburrow Marshfield and Scitteate and that the charge of them shalbee defrayed out of such fines as shall arise out of the said Townships soe that the said charge exceed not three pounds;

Whereas by a former order of Court all psons were required to giue notice to the Cunstables of their seuerall precincts of all such psons as were knowne to bee foraigne Quakers; Now this p'sent Court doth enacte that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant within this Jurisdiction vpon their knowlidge; and hauing opportunitie to vse all endcauers to Apprehend all such Quakers and to deliuer them to the Cunstable or bring them before the Gou^r or one of the majestrates;

Wheras wee find that of late the Quakers haue bine furnished with horses and therby they haue not onely the more speedy passage from place to place to the poisoning of the Inhabitants with their cursed Tenetts; but alsoe therby haue escaped the hands of the officers that might otherwise haue apprehended them It is therfore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That if any pson or psons whatsoever in this Gou^rment doth or shall furnish any of them with horse or horse kind the same to bee forfeited and seized on for the vse of this Gou^rment; or any horse that they shall bring into the Gou^rment or shalbee brought in for them and they make vse of shalbee forfeited as aforesaid; and that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant to make seizure of any such horse and to deliuer him to the Cunstable or the Treasurer for the vse of the Countrey. . . .

It is enacted by the Court that any one that shall bring in any Quaker or Rantor by land or water into this Gou^rment viz: by being a guide to them or any otherwise shalbee fined to the vse of the Gou^rment the sune of ten pounds for euery such default.

There were probably few, if any, Ranters in Scituate. Pratt tells us that among the first disturbances to come to the Plymouth Court was that made by Joseph Allen, who was one of the conspicuous group called "Rantors" at Sandwich. He had been haled before the Court several times for refusing to take the oath of fidelity, and each time had to pay a heavy fine; but this did not deter him. On a Sunday morning in 1660 he appeared in Scituate at a Quaker

meeting, at the house, probably, of *Rodolphus Ellmes*, who was a sympathiser, if not actually a Quaker. After worshipping among the Quakers, he went to the Meeting House of the Congregationalists, who were engaged in their own devotions, and there proceeded to revile both them and their religion. Subsequently, being arraigned before the Court, he was fined ten shillings for being at a Quakers' meeting and forty shillings for "making a disturbance on the Lord's Day at Seituate."

The religious activities of the Quakers in Scituate at this time seem to have centered about the homes of James Cudworth and *Rodolphus Ellmes*. Although Cudworth himself never became a Quaker, his daughter Mary appears to have adopted that faith. She was married to Robert Whiteomb (brother-in-law of *Rodolphus Ellmes*) according to the manner of the Quakers, without a clergyman or civil magistrate being present, although Henry Hobson of Rhode Island was invited to "guide the youthful couple in the observance of the true form." The contracting parties stood up in the presence of their friends and mutually promised to live together faithfully as man and wife. This, of course, was rank heresy, and they were arraigned before the Court, of which the bride's father had formerly been an Assistant, and were sentenced to pay ten pounds fine and be imprisoned during the pleasure of the Court, for "disorderly coming together without consent of parents and lawful marriage." They went to jail, but four days' confinement together with a thieving Indian, in the rude building on Summer Street, convinced them that it was better to bow to the will of the magistrates, and on 9 Mar. they announced that they desired "to bee orderly married," and this being accomplished, they were released. A year later the Court decreed that —

. . . having since been orderly married and living orderly together and following their calling industriously and attending the worship of God diligently, as is testified by some of the neighbors of good report, the Court have seen good to remit five pounds of the said fine; in respect also of their poverty, the Treasurer is ordered likewise to be slow in demanding the remainder.

The Court was obviously in error concerning the whole of the offence charged. It could not have been “coming together without consent of their parents,” for this approval was as necessary to the legality of a Quaker ceremony as to a Puritan one; and where in Scituate (asks Mr. Pratt) if not in the home of her father, who was a sympathizer, could such a marriage have been consummated? It is probable that the clerk, in drawing the presentment, strictly followed the words of the statute in which this clause appears, without reference to the real fact.

The magistrates were at least impartial in their prosecutions for violations of the anti-Quaker law. Isaac Robinson, the son of the Leyden pastor, was suspected of abetting the “disturbers;” he was summoned before the Plymouth Court, and on the 6th of June, 1660, he was disfranchised. But “their being some mistake in this” says the Record, “att his request, hee, the said Isaac Robinson, is reestablished and by general voat of the Court accepted againe into the association into the body of the Freemen of this corporation.”

They dealt leniently, also, with *Ensign John Williams*, one of my ancestors, who lived in and maintained the garri-son house at Cedar Point, Scituate, and who trained the military company:

1660. 1 May. Ensign John Williams, for entertaining a for-aigne Quaker, fined forty shillings, according to order; and in reference to the offense given by him by his countenancing or adhering to the Quakers, in hopes of (his) reformation, the Court have suspended what might have bine imposed, in disgrading him of his place for the present.

In the same year my ancestor *Rodolphus Ellmes* of Scituate was fined ten shillings for being at a Quaker meeting, and William Parker was fined forty shillings for permitting a Quaker meeting at his house and five pounds for “entertaining a strange Quaker called Wenlocke into his house.” This was the year in which James Cudworth was tried before the Court for “a scandalous letter” sent to England. Major Josiah Winslow and Mr. Thomas Southworth were appointed

to implead him. John Browne testified "that he had heard a printed letter read, which was supposed to have been sent to England from Capt. Cudworth — Released for the present." At the next Court, same year, Capt. Cudworth being found a manifest opposer of the laws of this Government, as appears in sundry expressions in a letter to the Governor, is sentenced accordingly to be disfranchised of the freedom of this Commonwealth. (See chapter containing Cudworth.) Such was the undeserved punishment meted out to one of the wealthiest men and most public-spirited citizens of Scituate!

Nevertheless, the efforts of such men as these served to prevent the authorities from going to extremes in Scituate. A few instances of the punishments of Quakers in the Massachusetts Bay Colony will show how much greater was the cruelty shown the Quakers there. In the Plymouth Colony, in spite of their bigotry, they at least put no Quaker to death.

In 1659 William Brand, Samuel Shattuek, Lawrence Southwick and Cassandra, his wife, Nicholas Phelps, Joshua Buffum and Josiah Southwick were banished. The same Court decreed that —

Whereas Daniel and Provided Southwick, son and Daughter of Lawrence Southwick have been fined by the county courts of Salem and Ipswich, pretending they have no estates, resolving not to work, and others have been fined and more like to be fined for siding with the Quakers and absenting themselves from the public ordinances — in answer to a question what course shall be taken for the satisfaction of the fines, the Court, on perusal of the law . . . resolve that the Treasurers of the several counties are and shall hereby be impowered to sell the said persons to any of the English Nation at Virginia or Barbadoes.

In the same year, 1659, Edward Wharton was sentenced to be whipped and committed to prison because he "pilatted Quakers from one place to another." The feeling against the Quakers seems to have run higher in 1659 than at any other time; on the 18th of October of that year the Massachusetts Bay Court ordered —

That William Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson and Mary Dyer, now in prison for their rebellion, sedition and presumptuous obtruding themselves upon us, notwithstanding their being sentenced to banishment on pain of death . . . shall be brought to tryall tomorrow morning. The next day the above sd. were sent for and acknowledged themselves to be the persons so banished, and were sentenced to be hanged.

Edward Michaelson, the Marshal, was to see them executed on Boston Common, "by the aid of Capt. James Oliver, with one hundred souljers, taken by his order proportionably out of each company in Boston, compleately armed with pike, & musketteers wth. poudder & boulett" The Rev. "Mr. Zachary Simes of Charlestown & Mr. John Norton of Boston . . . to tender theire endeavors to make the prisoners sensible of theire approaching dainger by the sentence of the Court & prepaire them for theire approaching ends."

Mary Dyer, on petition of her son William, was dismissed on condition that she depart the colony, but was ordered to be present when the others were executed and stand with a rope around her neck. The next year she returned and offered herself to the government, with the zeal of a martyr, and she was hanged on Boston Common in June, 1660, her husband having petitioned in vain for her life. This is the same Mary Dyer who was at one time in jail in Scituate, we believe, as a "vagabond Quaker," as we have no record that she was ever a resident there. Hers was perhaps the saddest example of the persecution of her day. We first hear of her at the close of the trial of Ann Hutchinson (see "History of the Cabot Family"), who was sentenced to be excommunicated and ordered to leave the colony. Ann Hutchinson rose and passed sadly down the aisle of the church without a look of sympathy from any one, when Mary Dyer rose from her seat and took her hand, and these two passed from the building with hands clasped. "Five hundred years will not forgive the death of Mary Dyer." As for William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson, no charge is shown against them beyond that of heresy

and their reiterated statements of their faith from the gallows.

Mr. Justin Winsor, in his "Memorial History of Boston," says "somewhere beneath the soil of Boston Common lie the ashes of four so-called Quakers, — three men and one woman, — who were cast into their rude graves after they had been executed on the gallows "between the years 1659 and 1661." He adds in a footnote:

The crowd of North-enders was so great, returning from two of these executions, Oct. 27, 1659, when William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson were hung, that the drawbridge on Ann Street, now North Street, over the canal which made the North End an island, fell through under the weight. Strange to say, the execution brought not a few Quakers into the town, "bringing linen wherein to wrap the dead bodies," and "to look the bloody laws in the face." There is in the *Massachusetts Archives*, X., a characteristic letter addressed to the Governor from two women, and dated "from your house of correction, where we have been unjustly restrained." It was on the occasion of this execution that Mary Dyer sat on the gallows with a rope about her neck while the others were swung off. . . . It is noted in the Sewell Papers, i, 82, 91, that in 1685 the Quakers asked permission "to enclose the ground the hanged Quakers were buried in, under or near the gallows, with pales." It was denied them as "very inconvenient," but nevertheless "a few feet of ground was enclosed with boards."

One of the most cruel of all the laws against the Quakers was passed in May, 1661, by the Massachusetts Bay Court. It is known as the "Cart and lash Law." With modernized spelling it reads as follows:

This Court, being desirous to try all means, with as much leniety as may consist with our safety, to prevent the intrusions of the Quakers, who, besides their absurd and blasphemous doctrine, do, like rogues and vagabonds, come in upon us, and have not been restrained by the laws already provided, have ordered that any such vagabond Quaker found within any part of this jurisdiction shall be apprehended by any person or persons, or by the constable of the town wherein he or she is taken, and by the constable or, in his absence by any other person or persons, conveyed before the next magistrate of that shire wherein they

are taken, or commissioner invested with magistratical power, and being by the said magistrate or magistrates, commissioner or commissioners adjudged to be a wandering Quaker, viz., one that hath not any dwelling nor orderly allowance as an inhabitant of this jurisdiction, and not giving civil respect by the usual gestures thereof, or by any other way or means manifesting himself to be a Quaker, shall, by warrant under the hand of said magistrate or magistrates, commissioner or commissioners, directed to the constable of the town wherein he or she is taken, or in absence of the constable or any other meet person, be stripped naked from the middle upwards, and tied to a cart's tail and whipped through the town, and from thence immediately conveyed to the constable of the next town towards the borders of our jurisdiction, as their warrant shall direct, and so from constable to constable till they be conveyed through any the outward most towns of our jurisdiction. And if such a vagabond Quaker shall return again, then to be in like manner apprehended and conveyed, as often as they shall be found within the limits of our jurisdiction. . . .

The order provides that upon the third offence such offender shall be branded with the letter "H" on the left shoulder and be severely whipped and sent away as before; and if he return he shall be subject to banishment on pain of death, according to the law of 1658. The penalty is extended to "such Quakers as shall arise from amongst ourselves," who, if they return after banishment under the law of 1658, "shall be proceeded against as those that are strangers and vagabond Quakers."

On 28 May 1661 the Record tells us that —

Judah Browne and Peter Pierson, having been indicted at the last Court of Assistants, for Quakers, and there standing mute, refusing to give any answer, being bound over to this Court to answer their contempt, and here standing mute also, the Court judgeth it meet to order that they shall, by the Constable of Boston, be forthwith taken out of prison and stripped from the girdle upwards by the executioner, and tied to the cart's tail and whipped through the town with twenty stripes, and then carried to Roxbury and delivered to the constable there, who is also to tie them, or cause them in like manner to be tied to a cart's tail and again whipped through the town with ten stripes, and then carried to Dedham and delivered to the constable there. . . .

At the next Court, in the month of June, Wendlocke Christopherson — or *Winlock Christison*, as he signed himself — was given his liberty on condition that he immediately depart the government, and —

It is also ordered that Wendlocke Christopherson, and all the Quakers now in prison, be forthwith acquainted with the new law made against them, and be forthwith released from prison and sent from constable to constable out of this jurisdiction, Judah Browne and Peter Pierson being, for their contempt in Court, tied to the cart's tail by the executioner and whipped through Boston with twenty stripes apiece, and then sent with the rest; and if any of them be found after twelve hours within this jurisdiction, he or they to be proceeded against according to the law made this present Court. (See Records of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay.)

Such instances are most interesting as showing the greater liberality of our ancestors in the Plymouth Colony. Reviewing the language of the government and that of the Quakers, we can scarcely decide which had the advantage in "railing accusations." While the government of Massachusetts Bay Colony was proceeding against the Quakers, they seem to have felt some anxiety as to how the story would sound in history, and therefore they entered upon their Records a kind of justification of their proceedings, 18 Oct. 1659, of which the following is an extract (spelling modernized):

A law was made and published prohibiting all masters of ships to bring any Quakers into this jurisdiction, and themselves from coming in, on penalty of the House of Correction, till they could be sent away. Notwithstanding which, by a back door, they found entrance and the penalty inflicted on them (proving insufficient to restrain their impudent and insolent obtrusions) was increased; which also being too weak against their impetuous and fanatic fury, necessitated us to endeavor our security; and upon serious consideration a law was made that such persons should be banished on pain of death, according to the example of England in their provision against Jesuits; which sentence being regularly pronounced at the last Court of Assistants against these parties, and they either returning or continuing presumptuously in this Jurisdiction after the time limited, were apprehended, and

owning themselves to be the persons banished, were sentenced by the Court to death, which hath been executed upon two of them. Mary Dyer, upon the intercession of a son, had liberty to depart, and accepted it. The consideration of our gradual proceedings will vindicate us from the clamorous accusations of society. Our own just and necessary defense calling upon us (other means failing) to offer the points which these persons have violently and wilfully rushed upon, and thereby become *felones de se*, as well as the sparing of one upon an inconsiderable intercession, will manifestly evince we wish their lives absent rather than their deaths present.

There must have been some influential persons in Massachusetts Bay Colony who objected to the acts of the government. On 12 Nov. 1659 the Court ordered:

That the thanks of this Court be returned to the Reverend Mr. John Norton (by the honored Governor) for his great pains and worthy labors in the tractate which he drew up, and by order of this Court hath been printed, wherein the dangerous errors of the Quakers is fully refuted and discovered, and to acquaint him that this Court hath given him five hundred acres of land . . . to be laid out in one or two places at his choice, as a small recompense for his pains therein.

The last law against the Quakers which we find in the Plymouth Colony Records was passed 6 June 1661. This law provided, first, that all persons within the Court's jurisdiction should take the oath of fidelity on pain of a fine of five pounds; secondly:

That if any person or persons commonly called Quakers or other suehlike vagabonds shall come into any town of this Government, the Marshal or Constable shall apprehend him or them and upon examination so appearing he shall whip them or cause them to be whipt with rods, so it exceed not fifteen stripes; and to give him or them a pass to depart the Government; without their pass, or not acting according therunto they shall be punished again as formerly; and in case any Constable of this Jurisdiction shall be unwilling or can not procure any to inflict the punishment aforesaid, that then they shall bring such persons to Plymouth to the under Marshal and he shall inflict it. . . .

It is enacted by the Court that the Marshal, George Barlow, shall have liberty to apprehend any foreign Quaker or Quakers

in any part of this jurisdiction, to be prosecuted according to order provided in that case;

It is enacted also that any person who permits a meeting of Quakers in his house shall be publicly whipped or pay a fine of five pounds.

The monthly meeting of Quakers generally held in Duxbury, being attended by "Quakers from divers places and in great numbers, which is very offensive and may prove greatly prejudicial to this Government," the Court desires and appoints Mr. Constant Southworth and Mr. William Payboddy, accompanied by the Constable of the town, to repair to such meetings and "use their best endeavors by argument and discourse to convince or hinder them."

The severities against the Quakers were happily checked soon after the restoration of Charles II. The King's Mandamus which follows was addressed to Governor Endicott and all the other Governors of New England. It is worthy of a place in the history of these times:

CHARLES REX

TRUSTY AND WELL BELOVED, we greet you well. Having been informed that several of our subjects among you have been and are imprisoned by you, whereof some of them have been executed, and others (as hath been represented to us) have been in danger to undergo the like, we have thought fit to signify our pleasure in that behalf, for the future; and do hereby require that if there be any of these people called Quakers amongst you now, already condemned to suffer death or other corporal punishment, or that are imprisoned and obnoxious to the like condemnation, you are to forbear to proceed any farther therein: but that you forthwith send the same persons (whether condemned or imprisoned) over to our kingdom of England, together with the respective crimes or offenses laid to their charge, to the end that such courses may be taken with them here as shall be agreeable to our laws and their demerits; and for so doing these our letters shall be sufficient warrant and discharge.

Given at our Court at White Hall the 9th day of September, 1661, in the 13th year of our reign.

By His Majesty's Command.

WILLIAM MORRIS.

The action of the Massachusetts General Court in response was prompt, though reluctant. After due perusal and consideration of the King's letter, the Court recorded on 27 Nov. 1661:

The just and necessary rules of our Government and condition for preservation of religion, order and peace hath induced the authority here established from time to time to make and sharpen laws against Quakers, in reference to their restless intrusions and impetuous disturbance, and not any propensity or inclination in us to punish them in person or estate, as is evident by our gradual proceedings with them, releasing some condemned and others liable to condemnation, and all imprisoned were released and sent out of our borders, all which, notwithstanding their restless spirits have moved some of them to return, and others to fill the royal ears of our sovereign lord the King with complaints against us, and have by their wearied solicitations in our absence, so far prevailed as to obtain a letter from His Majesty, to forbear their corporal punishment or death. Although we hope, and doubt not, but that if His Majesty were rightly informed, he would be far from giving them such favor, or weakening his authority here, so long and so orderly settled, yet, that we may not in the least offend His Majesty, this Court doth hereby order and declare, that the execution of the laws in force against the Quakers, as such, so far as they respect corporal punishment or death, be suspended until this Court take further order.

From this time on, although the feeling continued to run high, the persecution of the Quakers gradually subsided.

The law against vagabonds was re-enacted in 1663, omitting the word "Quakers." The Quakers being a very orderly people, there are few records after this of their being brought before the courts.

In 1675 *Lieut. Robert Barker* of Duxbury, a Quaker and one of my ancestors, "broke away from the army when they were on the march, in a mutinous way, and by his example allured others to come away." Barker was deprived of his commission. That this mutiny was the result of Quaker principles of non-resistance we judge from the circumstance that of the fifteen others whom he "allured away" five were Scituate men and Quakers, viz., Zechariah Colman, Joseph Colman, Thomas Colman, John Rance and

John Northey, who were fined from one pound to eight pounds, according to their respective offenses.

Previous to 1700, according to Deane, the principal Quaker families in the town of Scituate were Wanton, Coleman, Ewell, Booth, Chamberlain, Cudworth and Rogers.

The Quaker faith may be said to have been fostered in Scituate by Edward Wanton. He arrived in Boston from England before 1650, and appeared in Scituate in 1660, a year before the persecution of the Quakers was ended by King Charles. While in Boston Wanton had become a convert to the faith of the Quakers; he was an Officer of the Guard and was present at more than one of the executions on Boston Common. He became deeply sensible of the cruelty, injustice and impolicy of these measures, and was greatly moved by the firmness with which the Quakers submitted to death. He was won entirely by their addresses before execution, and returned to his house, saying, "Alas, Mother! we have been murdering the Lord's people," and taking off his sword, he put it by, never to wear it again. From this time he conversed upon every opportunity with the Friends, and soon resolved to become a public teacher of their faith. In Scituate he soon gathered a considerable audience, and may be said to have been a successful builder up of the sect in Scituate.

In 1661 he purchased a farm of 80 acres of William Parker. He became a shipbuilder and held a distinguished place among the settlers of the town. (See Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding on the North River.")

The only record we find against Wanton in the Plymouth Colony Records is that in 1678: "Edward Wanton (of Scituate) for disorderly joining himself to his now wife in marriage, in a way contrary to the order of Government, is fined ten pounds."

Wanton was held in great esteem by the Plymouth Colony. The Court appointed him guardian for Ralph Chapman, and he served in at least one instance on the colony jury. Several of his sons were leaders in the Quaker faith. Later, two of them, William and John, gave up the faith and became fighters against the French. The venerable Edward



APPROACH TO SKATUTAIKKEE HOUSE, RESIDENCE OF
DR. AND MRS. L. V. BRIGGS, HANCOCK, N. H.



MARY CABOT BRIGGS, DOUGLAS A. THOM AND L. CABOT BRIGGS AT DUNOTTAR
CASTLE, ON THE NORTHERN COAST OF SCOTLAND, 1927

(See page 1102)

endeavored to dissuade them from this enterprise as unlawful, but finding their determination fixed, he said, "It would be a grief to my spirit to hear that ye had fallen in a military enterprise; but if ye will go, remember that it would be a greater grief to me to hear that ye were cowards!"

In 1678 Henry Ewell sold a small piece of land to Edward Wanton, John Rance (who later moved to Barbados) and others, for the site of a small Meeting House. "This site," says Deane (who wrote in 1831), "is now enclosed in the garden of the late Judge William Cushing, at the northeast end." The Meeting House was sold to the Cushing family many years after, and converted into a stable, according to tradition. Another Meeting House was built in 1706, which is now (1935) standing, in Pembroke, a half mile south of Barstow's bridge. This place was selected because the Society in Scituate had diminished. Deane adds, "It is a curious fact that this sect in Scituate, which had been shielded rather than persecuted, and which was numerous in Wanton's time, had become almost extinct in one century," and in his own time it has become reduced to two families, — the respectable families of Daniel Otis and Adam Brooks.

There were several marriages in the Quaker form recorded in the Town Records of Scituate: Richard New and Sarah Colman, 1702; Daniel Cogshall and Mary Wanton, daughter of Michael Wanton, in 1726; and Thomas Colman of Newport and Mary New of Newport in 1702. Edward Wanton, from 1660 to 1710, and his son Edward, from 1710 to 1740, were distinguished Quaker preachers. Deane says:

It now gives us much pleasure to acknowledge that this sect, having softened into a distinguished mildness, and having manifested a peculiar generosity in maintaining and assisting the poor and unfortunate of their own Society, beside bearing a part in the common burden of supporting the poor, have well earned the name of Friends, by which they have lately chosen to be known.

Pratt quotes a petition drawn by Edward Wanton of Scituate, stating the case of the Quakers, which is too long

to give here. This plea is signed by Edward Wanton, Joseph Colman, Nathaniel Fitzrandal and William Allen. It is written in a scholarly manner, and cites referenees to learned books, etc. I do not know much of the history of these men, excepting Wanton, nor why they came to Plymouth Colony, but their appeal seems to me not an unjust nor an unreasonable one.

Tracts nearly 300 years old, describing the torturing and hanging of Quakers on Boston Common in 1659 and the following year, were on exhibition in the treasure room of the Widener Memorial Library at Harvard University in connection with the Tercentenary Celebration of the Common, in 1935. Torments suffered by the early Quakers in New England are graphically described in a pamphlet shown there, which was printed in London in 1660, "A Declaration of the Sad and Great Persecution and Martyrdom of the People of God, Called Quakers, in New England." The author tells that "22 have been Banished upon paine of Death; 03 have been Martyred, 03 have had their Right Ears cut off, 01 have been burned in the Hand with the letter *H*, 31 persons received 650 stripes, and 01 was beat while his body was like a jelly." Throughout all the period of the excitement over the Quakers there was only one account of this religious persecution which appeared in the London papers. This account, which was included in the Widener display, appeared in the "Publick Intelligencer" for 21-28 Feb. 1659, and was in the form of a letter written to London from Charlestown, Massachusetts. A rare item in the exhibit was a small book, "A Call from Death to Life," printed in London in 1660, containing the posthumous publication of several letters and religious pieces, written by two of the condemned Quakers while in a Boston prison awaiting execution. Also included in the exhibit was a pamphlet entitled "The Heart of N-England rent at the Blasphemers of the Present Gencration," printed in Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1659, and written by the Rev. John Norton, teacher of the Church of Christ, Boston, and a leader, as we have seen, in the persecution of the Quakers

— a very rare tract. “New England’s Ensigne,” published in London in 1659, and written by Humphrey Norton, tells of one of the Quakers having an “H” branded on his hand; and of a Royal order from King Charles II, written in 1661, commanding that the persecutions cease.

CHAPTER VI

SECOND GENERATION

CAPT. JOHN², LIEUT. JAMES², CAPT. CORNELIUS² (ALLYN FAMILY), HANNAH², AND JOSEPH² BRIGGS

2. CAPT. JOHN² BRIGGS (1. WALTER¹) was born in Scituate, Massachusetts, in 1644, and conducted the farm with his father and brothers. He was *captain of a company in King Philip's War*, of which his brother James² was *lieutenant* and his brother CORNELIUS² was *ensign*. In 1686 he was a *captain under Sir Edmund Andros, Governor of "the Dominion of New England."*

The King, in an attempt to strengthen the British control over New England, as well as to erect a strong barrier against the French, consolidated the New York, the New Jersey and the New England Colonies into the Dominion of New England, and placed them under the Vice-Regal authority of Sir Edmund Andros as Governor General. His rule was very unpopular and was fortunately of short duration. The news of the Revolution in England in 1688 caused an uprising in Boston, and in Apr. 1689 Andros was seized and imprisoned.

John² Briggs was Constable of Scituate, 3 June 1668; Juror at an inquest on the body of Thomas Totman, 6 June 1678; member of "Grand Enquest," 1678, 1682, 1684; and on 6 Mar. 1682/3 he was appointed to "fix bounds of lands." There are records of lawsuits between Capt. John² Briggs and Edward Jenkins concerning "huen timber."

On 31 Jan. 1677 Walter¹ Briggs deeded to his eldest son John² lands at Shawamet, on the western side of Taunton River "at the Neck." At his father's death, in 1684, Captain John² was left the homestead, as of that date, with land and buildings belonging to it, and two thirds of the profit of sundry other undivided lands during the lifetime

of his stepmother Franees, who survived him for a short time.

Capt. John² Briggs married, about 1683, Deborah Hawke of Hingham, baptized 2 Mar. 1651, the youngest daughter of Matthew and Margaret Hawke, and sister of Sarah Hawke, wife of John Cushing, Esq., of Belle House Neck, Scituate. (See Cushing chapter for account of Hawke family.)

Capt. John² Briggs later moved to Boston, where he died 22 Mar. 1687 aged 42 years 3 months. On 13 Oct. 1687 letters of administration upon his estate were granted to his widow, Deborah Briggs. (Suffolk County Records, Vol. 10, p. 133, on file 1602.) An inventory of the estate, amounting to £340, was presented on 14 Apr. 1688 by Samuel Clap and John Cushing, which included pewter, brass, liquors and "negro servants £19." In the account of the estate there is an item of payment to his stepmother, Franees Briggs, due her by an item in his will.

Franees Briggs' first husband, John Rogers of Marshfield, is believed to have been buried in 1661 in the Wanton-Rogers burying ground, South Scituate (now Norwell), near the old Wanton shipyard on North River. (See Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding on the North River.") Edward Wanton, the Quaker, whose sons William and John became Governors of Rhode Island, 1732-41, is also buried here. One John Rogers married Franees Littleton, 1640, in Stepney, County of Middlesex, England. He may well have been the above John, who came to America with the Rev. Mr. Witherell about that date.

After the death of Franees, widow of Walter¹ Briggs, John and Joseph Rogers, her sons by her first husband, made an inventory of her estate to the amount of £39 14s. 3d. This inventory was sworn to by Joseph Rogers before the Inferior Court of Common Pleas at Plymouth, 14 Mar. 1687/8, and registered by Nathaniel Thomas, Clerk.

The following record is in Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. 1, p. 244:

Whereas there has been a controversy between James Briggs ye son of Walter Briggs of Scituate on one part, and Deborah

Briggs of same, administratrix on ye estate of John Briggs her late husband deceased ye eldest son of said Walter Briggs on the other part about and concerning the division of lands of Walter Briggs which he left to be divided between the said John and James Briggs or ye heirs of John Briggs. Therefore to avoid trouble Deborah Briggs makes an agreement of division between herself and her brother-in-law James Briggs. (24 Jan. 1688.)

In 1689 "ye little neger girle" Maria, of Walter Briggs' will, after the death of widow Frances Briggs, fell to John's estate, and Deborah, John's widow, as administratrix, disposed of Maria by the following document:

To all Christian people to whom this psent writeing shall come I Deborah Briggs of Scittuate in ye County of New Plimouth in New England &c. and administratrix to my late husband's estate: send Greeting: Whereas ye within named Maria a negro girl is servant to me for terme of life by virtue of my being administratrix to my sayd late husbands estate & as doth appear by this within written bill of sale. Now know ye I ye sayd Deborah Briggs for divers good causes & considerations me especially moving have given granted assigned & set over & by these psents do fully and absolutely give grant assign & set over unto Cornelius Briggs of Barnstable in ye County of Barnstable in New England all such right title, duty, term of servitude to come claime intrest service and demand whatsoever which I ye said Deborah Briggs have of, in or to, ye sayd within named Maria ye negro my sayd servant (together with a little boy named William borne of ye said Maria's body since ye within written) or which I might or ought to have of & in them by force and virtue of ye within written bill of sale. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seale this twenty fourth day of January one thousand six hundred eighty & eight or eighty nine.

(signed) DEBORAH BRIGGS (Seal)

Signed, sealed & delivered

in ye psence of us witnesses

JOHN — [worn; probably John Cushing, her brother-in-law]

ANTHONY COLLAMER

SAMUELL CLA- [Clap]

This Maria, as stated in the chapter on Walter Briggs, was purchased from Robert Cock (a name also later spelled



CASTELLO DE TREVANO, ON LAKE LUGANO, ITALY, OF LOUIS LOMBARD, ESQ., VISITED
BY DR. AND MRS. L. V. BRIGGS AND THEIR SON CABOT IN 1924

(See page 1102)



Château de BELLIGNIES (Nord)

VISITED BY L. VERNON AND MARY CABOT BRIGGS IN 1936 AS GUESTS OF PRINCESS
MARIE DE CROY, NORD, FRANCE

Photograph by L. V. Briggs

Cox or Cook). Deane says that one Robert Cock was in Scituate in 1690 and had descendants in Hanover in 1726. Edward Cock, mariner of Boston on 6 Feb. 1672, appointed wife Margaret his attorney. They resided near Halsell's Wharf, Boston, next Capt. Samuel Scarlett.

Widow Deborah (Hawke) Briggs married 15 June 1699 Deacon Thomas King of Scituate, as his second wife. They resided on the Rawlins farm, beside Stony Cove Brook, in a house which he built before 1680, now (1936) partly standing in ruins. It is still known as the King house, and was later owned by Deacon John James, Col. James Curtis and Turner Hatch. Both Deacon Thomas and his wife Deborah died in 1711, the latter on 15 May.

Children of Capt. John² and Deborah (Hawke) Briggs:

7. i. HANNAH, b. 8 May 1684; m. Col. John Alden.
8. ii. DEBORAH, b. 8 Oct. 1685; m. Deacon George King.
9. iii. JOHN, Jr., b. 28 Apr. 1687; m. Deborah Cushing.

3. LIEUT. JAMES² BRIGGS (1. WALTER¹) was born in Scituate in 1645. He resided at Conihassett on a part of his father's farm, which part, with the house standing upon it, was conveyed by gift to him by his parents in 1673, a few days before his marriage. It is thought that the house mentioned in the deed of gift was that named in the deed from Timothy Hatherley in 1651 to Walter¹ Briggs, who built a new house upon the farm. This deed of gift in 1673 was confirmed by Walter's will dated 1676. (See chapter on Walter Briggs.)

Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. 3, p. 293

July 1, 1673. To all christian people to whom this deed of gift shall come. Know ye that Walter Briggs and Frances his wife of Scituate, for the natural affection we bear to James Briggs, son of said Walter & Frances his wife, a third share of our farm lying at Conihasset, and also our dwelling house as it now standeth in the field where the sheepfold standeth.

Witnesses —

RICHARD BENNETT
JOSHUA HOLSWORTH

WALTER BRIGGS

James² Briggs served in King Philip's War with the rank of lieutenant. In Scituate he was Surveyor of the Highways, on 6 Mar. 1676 he was made Constable, and in June 1689 Selectman. On 1 June 1680 he was fined for refusing to assist the Marshal. On 20 May 1675 James Briggs sued Edward Jenkins (in the Court held at Scituate) for 15 shillings damages. The cause of this suit is summed up in a second suit, this time against John Cushing, in the Plymouth Court, 6 Mar. 1676/7, as follows:

James Briggs of Scittuate, complaineth against John Cushen, celect man, in the behalfe of himself and the rest of his maties Celect Court of Scittuate that were with him, the said Cushen, concerned in an action on the case, to the damage of three pounds siluer mony for not deliuering to or possessing off the said James Briggs, with an execution of a judgment of his maties Court held att Scittuate the 29th May, 1675, in which action James Briggs of Scittuate, complaineth against Edward Jenkins, constable, of Scittuate, in an action on the case, to the damage of fifteen shillings siluer mony, for that the aboue said Jenkins, under couller or pretense of his constables office, came in to the said Briggs his house, sometime this instant May, and did then and there illegally take away a pewter bason of the said Brigges, not makeing legall demand for seizure, and for illegall disposing of the said Brigges bason, without legall presure after seizure, wherby the plaintiffe comes to be demnified.

In this case the Court found for the plaintiffe his bason sued for in this action, or seuen shillings siluer mony sixpence damage and the cost of suite. The cost allowed in this action is sixteen shillings siluer mony and eight shillings currant mony, of the aboue said John Cushen, celectman Not deliuering the aboue said complainant an exection of this judgment of Court aboue mentioned, the complainant comes to be damnified.

Non suited.

	£ s. d.
The cost allowed to the defendant is	01 : 04 : 06

James² Briggs married 8 June 1673 Rebecca Tilden, born Feb. 1654, daughter of Deacon Joseph and Elizabeth (Twisden) Tilden, and granddaughter of Elder Nathaniel. (See *Tilden*, under 16. James³ Briggs.) She died 1 Apr. 1740. Lieut. James Briggs died 18 Aug. 1703 in his 58th year.

Children of Lieut. James² and Rebecca (Tilden) Briggs:

10. i. JOSEPH, b. 19 Feb. 1678; m. Deborah Holbrook.
11. ii. MARY, b. 14 May 1682; m. Josiah Litchfield.
12. iii. JAMES, b. 2 Feb. 1687; m. (1) Hannah Bailey; (2) Margaret Stetson.
13. iv. BENJAMIN, b. 20 Jan. 1695/6; m. (1) Leah Merritt; (2) Anna Doane.

4. CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS (1. WALTER¹), was born in Scituate in 1647. At the time he made his will, in 1693, he called himself "forty & four years of age or thereabouts." He died in 1694, and his age, as given on his gravestone, was 47 years. (For account of the finding of his gravestone see reference in index.) He is referred to as a "boatman." On 1 July 1673 his father, *Walter¹ Briggs*, gave lands to sons Cornelius² and Joseph² by the following deed:

Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. 3, p. 292

July 1, 1673. To all Christian people to whom this deed of Gift shall come Know ye that Walter Briggs and Frances his wife of Scituate for the natural affection we bear unto Cornelius Briggs & Joseph Briggs of the said Scituate sons of the said Walter Briggs — I the said Walter Briggs & Frances his wife grant and convey to our two sons land lying East side Taunton River, granted by the Court of New Plymouth to the freemen of New Plymouth, Duxburrow, Marshfield & Scituate lately bought of Timothy Foster son & heir of Edw. Foster by deed of Tim^{thy} Foster to Walter Briggs etc.

Witness

Signed

WALTER BRIGGS

RICHARD BENNETT

his mk

JOSHUA HOLDSWORTH

CORNELIUS² BRIGGS was an *Ensign in King Philip's War*, in the company of which his elder brothers were officers, John as Captain and James as Lieutenant, and in which his father Walter was enrolled.

Cornelius² Briggs served in the *war against the French and Indians in 1693 as Captain of a company in an "Expedition to the Eastward,"* as appears in the following writ:

To Thomas Collsman, Constable of Scituate, Greeting: These are in their majesties names to Require you to Impress ten Abele men such as may be fit to serve their majesties as Soldiers under the command of CAPT. CORNELIUS BRIGGS In an Expedition to the Eastwards. And warn them to appear at the house of Capt. Anthony Collamer on Wednesday morning the 19 instant about Eight of the Clock fit for a marche and that you warne them to appear *Compleat in Armes* wel acoutered fit for sayd service whereof you are not to fayle as you will answer the neglect upon your peril and have you there this writ at time and place with Return of your doings. Dated April 18, 1693

per me ANTHONY COLLAMER *Capt.*

The house of Captain Collamore was at Belle House Neck, and was the customary meeting place for the militia for expeditions against the Indians. Peter Collamore, from Northam, County Devonshire, England, settled here as early as 1650, when he purchased his dwelling and lands from Samuel Fuller, a nephew of Dr. Samuel Fuller of Plymouth. It adjoined William Vassall's land, and is known, even today, as "the Collamore place." Peter Collamore had no children to inherit his property at his death, and tradition says that he sent to England for some near relative to come to Scituate for that purpose. The first to come was a nephew named William Blackmore, but Collamore insisting that his heir should bear the name of Collamore, his nephew, Anthony Collamore, came in 1665. Blackmore settled in the South Parish, on land now (1936) included in "The May Elms" farm. He was killed by the Indians in the Indian raid of Apr. 1676, and his house burned. Capt. Anthony Collamore lost his life in a snowstorm 16 Dec. 1693, when his coasting vessel sailing from North River to Boston was wrecked on a ledge off North Scituate beach, within sight of the old home of Walter¹ Briggs. The ledge has since that time been known as "Collamore's Ledge."

Before "going forth against the French and Indian enemies" Cornelius² Briggs made his will, which will be found later in this chapter.



CHATEAU OF MARQUIS DE MORTEMART IN BRITTANY, WHERE COLONEL AND MRS.
L. V. BRIGGS AND THEIR SON CABOT HAVE BEEN GUESTS AT DIFFERENT TIMES

(See page 1099)



CASTLE OF DUC DE BEAUFORT, PETSCHAU PAR CARLSBAD BOHÊME,
CZECHOSLOVAKIA

VISITED BY DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS IN 1936

Woodrow Wilson, in his "History of the American People," says:

The coming of King William to the throne in England brought war in its train, a long war with the French, as every one had foreseen it must; and war with the French meant fear and massacre on our northern borders, where the French were but too apt at stirring the Indians to their fierce attacks, even in times of peace. . . . King William's War (1689-1697), with its eight years of conscious peril, set new thoughts astir. It made America part of the stage upon which the great European conflict between French and English was to be fought out. . . . Colonial interests began to seem less local, more like interests held in common, and the colonists began to think of themselves as part of an empire. . . . Sir William Phipps, that frank seaman and adventurer, led an expedition against Acadia in 1690, took Port Royal and stripped the province of all that could be brought away His second expedition was made the same year against Quebec. Count Louis de Frontenac had been made the Governor of New France the very year William established himself as King in England (1689), and had come instructed, as every Englishman in America presently heard rumor say, to attack the English settlements at their very heart. The Governor of New York called a conference of the colonies to determine what should be done for the common defense. Massachusetts, *Plymouth* and Connecticut responded, and sent agents to the conference (1690), the first of its kind since America was settled. It was agreed to attempt the conquest of New France; Sir William Phips should lead an expedition by sea against Quebec, and another force should go by land out of Connecticut and New York, to attack Montreal, the only other stronghold, taking their Iroquois allies with them. But the land expedition was in every way unfortunate, and got no farther than Lake Champlain. Frontenac was able to devote all his strength to the defense of Quebec; and Sir William Phips came back whipped and empty handed. . . . But that was not the end of the war. Its fires burned hot in the forests. Frontenac prosecuted the ugly business to the end as he had begun, . . . by sending his Indian allies to a sudden attack and savage massacre at Schenectady, where sixty persons, men and women, old and young, saw swift and fearful death (1689); and *year by year the same acts of barbarous war were repeated*, — not always upon the far-away border, but sometimes

at the very heart of the teeming colony, — once (1697) at Haverhill, not 35 miles out of Boston itself. . . . The colonists knew that the French must be overcome before there could be any lasting peace, or room enough made for English growth in the forests. . . . King William's War was but the forerunner of many more of the same meaning and portent.

Bancroft's "History of the United States" says:

Repulsed from Canada, the exhausted colonies attempted little more than the defense of their frontiers. Their borders were full of terror and sorrow, of captivity and death, but no designs of conquest were formed. Acadia was once more a dependence of Canada. In January, 1692, a party of French and Indians, coming in snowshoes from the east, burst upon the town of York, offering its inhabitants no choice but captivity or death. The fort, which was rebuilt at Pemaquid, was at least an assertion of English supremacy over the neighboring region.

James Otis, son of John, was also in this expedition.

CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS married, for his first wife, 20 Mar. 1677, Widow Mary (Doughty) Russell, born in Seitate 23 June 1650, daughter of James Doughty and granddaughter of Humphrey Turner. James Doughty was a soldier in King Philip's War, and was paid by the town in 1678 for nine weeks' campaign in 1676. His wife was Lydia, daughter of Humphrey Turner, whom he married 5 Aug. 1649. Mary (Doughty) Russell Briggs died between 1680 and 1683. She inherited the Russell house at Greenbush (see Samuel Russell's will below), and continued to reside in it after her marriage to *Capt. Cornelius² Briggs*. The Samuel Hatch house, now (1936) the residence of Albert Garceau, stands on the site of the Russell house. In 1688 Cornelius Briggs sold the Russell house to David Jacob from Hingham, whose mother was Mary Russell, a half sister of Samuel.

On 8 Mar. 1676 Samuel Russell made his will (recorded in Plymouth Colony Records, Wills, Vol. 3, p. 168) as follows:

Those ye presents witnesseth that on eight day of March last being the day before Captain Pearce went last against the Indians,

Samuel Russell of Scituate being pressed and under his command, came into a house of John Turner Jr. a son of Humphrey Turner, deceased, and desired that the said John Turner, and my son Joshua . . . and my son Israel to go a little . . . with him, which we did when he desired. John Turner Jr. and friend Joseph Turner and Israel Turner to take notice and be witness to what he should . . . as his last will and testament which was that if he should be cut off in that . . . that then he did dispose and give unto his loving wife Mary Russell his whole estate, his household goods cattle and his debts coming due both by bills and bonds, and whatsoever also named and unnamed to be at her own disposing. John Turner Jr., son of Humphrey Turner, deceased, aged about 54 years and Joseph Turner aged about twenty five and Israel Turner aged about 21 years, both sons unto the aforesaid John Turner came all to give their joint testimony, and he declared it unto them to be his last will and testament. (1 June 1676.)

Samuel Russell was killed in the Rehoboth battle, in Apr. 1676. An inventory was made of his estate 1 May 1676. On 1 June 1676, Mary Russell, wife of Samuel, deceased, gave oath that the inventory, amounting to £133 8s. 3d., was correct.

George Russell of Hingham came into Scituate in 1646, and purchased from Isaac Stedman his farm and sawmill at "the green bush." He lived on South Street, nearly opposite Thaxter's bridge, and had been twice married. The name of his first wife, the mother of his son Samuel Russell, is not on the Hingham Records. On 14 Feb. 1640 George Russell married, for a second wife, Jane James, widow of Philip James, who came with wife Jane, four children and two servants from Hingham, England, and settled in Hingham, New England. He operated the mill at Greenbush until 1656, when he sold half his interest in it to John Stockbridge, and built the gristmill now standing there in company with Stockbridge. In 1665 he sold his half of the mill to Charles Stockbridge, and returned to Hingham, where he lived for the remainder of his life on Main Street, South Hingham. He died 26 May 1694, aged 99 years. His wife Jane died 22 Feb. 1688/9, aged about 83 years. Mary Russell, daughter of George and his second wife, Jane James, married Capt. John Jacob. (For Jacob see Otis chapter.)

CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS was a large landholder in Swanzev and vicinity. The Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. 2, p. 485, give a list of names of "persons who are the Proprietors of the Gore of Land that lyeth between Rehoboth and Taunton, and Taunton North and South Purchase, and the number of Lotts that fell to each person," among others, "*Cornelius Briggs 38*;" "John Briggs and Richard Winslow 96;" "*Cornelius Briggs 114*." It seems reasonable to think that the 38 lots were those that had been given and bequeathed to Cornelius² by his father Walter¹, and that later he had purchased a second number of lots, or had acquired them by marriage. After the death of Cornelius² Briggs a division agreement, dated 1711, was made (on record in Fall River) whereby his children, Joseph³, Cornelius³, James³ and Hannah³ Briggs, divided this land in the Shawomet Neck, in which their deceased brother John had had an interest. In the Taunton Records (A 129) Hannah Briggs of Boston, spinster, only sister of John Briggs, late of Scituate, one of the sons of Cornelius, late of Scituate, boatman, deceased, grants, 20 Nov. 1710, lands in Shawomet to Isaac Chace of Shawomet in the township of Swanzev.

CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS married 6 May 1683, as his second wife, WIDOW MEHITABLE (ALLYN) ANNABLE of Barnstable, baptized at Barnstable 28 Aug. 1648, daughter of Thomas Allyn. Her first husband was Samuel Annable, born in 1648, died in 1678, son of Anthony, Jr., and Ann (Clark) Annable. Samuel left sons who were half brothers of my ancestor, James³ Briggs, son of Captain Cornelius² and Mehitable.

Although Thomas Allyn referred to himself in a document as coming from near Taunton, England, I have had Mr. Bower Marsh make a careful search of the records in Taunton, both parish and town, and also in the surrounding towns, and he found there no mention of a Thomas Allyn. Bower Marsh says of Allyn's English ancestry:

THOMAS ALLYN of Barnstable was a near relative of Matthew Allyn of Cambridge, Mass. The English ancestry of these Allyns is to be sought at Braunton, near Barnstable, Devon.

Thomas possessed a house and garden in Barnstaple, Devon, and refers to father-in-law John Marke of Braunton and brother Richard Allen of Braunton.

Will of Richard Allen the elder of Braunton, dated 29 Nov. 1647, proved 10 May 1652 (198 Bowyer), mentions sons Thomas, Matthew and Richard. The latter Richard was called "of Braunton." His will, dated 12 May 1662, was proved 17 June 1662 (P. C. C. 78 Laud). Wills of Braunton were proved in the Peculiar of the Dean of Exeter. Braunton Parish Registers begin in 1538. The conclusion is that both Thomas Allyn of Barnstable N. E. and Matthew Allyn of Cambridge, Mass., were sons of Richard Allen (the elder) of Braunton (near Barnstaple), Devon. (Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England," p. 932.)

There was a Richard Allen, 1596, at Chedulhampton, and a Thomas Allen of Abbotsham, 1619. This is taken from the records of the "Archdeaconry of Barnstaple." There was also a Mathew Allen, 1617, at Chedulhampton, and a Mathew at Fremington, 1618, also 1619.

MR. THOMAS ALLYN, my ancestor, was one of the first settlers in Barnstable. We do not know the date of his coming to New England, but he speaks, in Mar. 1654, of a visit that he made to England in 1649 on business of his own and as the agent of "divers friends" as "at my last being in Ould England." His name was proposed as a freeman of Plymouth Colony, 1 Mar. 1641/2, but he was not admitted as such until 1652. In 1644, 1651 and 1658 he was Surveyor of Highways; in 1648, 1658 and 1670 Constable; in 1653 Juryman.

Mr. Allyn was one of the wealthiest of the early settlers of Barnstable. His house lots were in the central part of the village as it was first laid out. The records of the laying out of lands in Barnstable are all lost, and the records of Mr. Allyn furnish the best information that we have. In 1654 Mr. Allyn owned six of the original house lots, containing from six to twelve acres each, laid out on the north side of the highway west of Rendez-vous Lane, and part of this land is still, in 1936, owned by his descendants. He also owned meadowland at Sandy Neck, and in 1647 he owned

the land on the north of the Hallett Farm, adjoining the bounds of Yarmouth. Besides these he had rights in the common lands and other large tracts.

The "Genealogical Notes of Barnstable Families" gives an interesting account of this family, and says that the Court, in passing up and down the county, often stopped at Mr. Allyn's house, a fact which indicates that he set a good table and was well supplied with provender for man and beast.

THOMAS ALLYN married for his first wife WINNIFRED ——. His second wife was Widow ——. He named in his will, dated 28 Feb. 1675, proved 5 Mar. 1679/80, his daughters-in-law (probably stepdaughters), Sarah, wife of William Clark; Martha, wife of Benjamin —; and Rebecca, wife of Samuel Sprague. He names his sons Samuel and John, his daughter MEHITABLE ANNABLE, and Samuel's oldest son Thomas. After disposing of a part of his estate by legacies he ordered the rest to be equally divided between his three children, giving his daughter Mehitable an equal portion with her brothers, an unusual circumstance in those days.

Children of THOMAS and WINNIFRED (—) ALLYN:

- i. SAMUEL, b. 10 Feb. 1643/4; m. 1664 Hannah, dau. of Rev. Thomas Walley.
- ii. JOHN, b. 1646; m. 1673 Mary, dau. of John Howland.
- iii. MEHITABLE, b. 1648; bpt. 28 Aug. 1648; m. (1) 1 June 1667 Samuel Annable; (2) 6 May 1683 CAPT. CORNELIUS BRIGGS.

After CORNELIUS² BRIGGS' second marriage, in 1683, to MEHITABLE (ALLYN) ANNABLE he continued to live for a time in the Russell house, where his son JAMES³ was born in Mar. 1683/4. Later he removed to Barnstable, where the rest of his children were probably born. He sold the Russell house in 1688 to DAVID JACOB. He was admitted a freeman in Barnstable in 1689. Before 1693 he removed from Barnstable back to Scituate, where he died 2 Oct. 1692, aged 47 years. The will of his nephew, Richard Winslow, dated 1697, called him "of Conihassett, deceased," from



GRAVESTONE OF CORNELIUS² BRIGGS FOUND ON WILSON HILL, SITUATE, THE SITE OF THE FIRST MEETING-HOUSE AND GRAVEYARD

which we infer that he resided on the Conihassett lands at the time of his death. He was buried, however, in the burial ground beside the meeting house of the Second Parish at Wilson Hill, where a fragment of his gravestone was found many years after. On this fragment are his name and the date of his death.

My friend Mr. George C. Turner, editor of an interesting little magazine of the local history of Scituate, called "Historia," learned through Mr. John Turner that when the latter was a young man he came across a piece of a gravestone while gunning in the vicinity of Wilson Hill. When he returned home he asked his father, the Hon. Samuel A. Turner, why such a stone should be in that vicinity, and was told that the place where he had found it was near the site of the first meeting house of the Second Church in Scituate. He was much interested, and the stone was brought to the Turner homestead, where it lay for many years. When Mr. George Turner heard this, he asked that a search be made for the stone. Mrs. Phebe Turner, widow of the Hon. Samuel Turner, and her nephew, Edward Humphrey, who were living in the old homestead, finally found the stone, and through the kindness of Mr. George C. Turner it came into my possession, and I have passed it on to my son, L. Cabot Briggs. The Second Church set aside a burying ground at Wilson Hill in 1644, but in 1680 the Society removed to a new location; families who had burial lots there used them for some years afterwards. Early in the 1800's, the burial ground having become neglected, vandals destroyed all traces of the cemetery, making the spot a level field, and using the stones for walls and to put under old corn barns.

Mr. William Witherell, born in England in 1600, was the first pastor of the Second Church in Scituate. He came to New England in the ship *Hercules* of Sandwich, 200 tons, John Witherly, master, from Maidstone, England, with his wife Mary, three children and one servant, on certificates dated Mar. 1634. He had formerly resided in Suffolk. His house stood a few rods southeast of the meeting house, which was "fifty rods east of Stony Cove Brook," on the crest of Wilson Hill, and was his

residence during the thirty-nine years of his ministry. He died in 1684. Persons from neighboring towns brought their children to him for baptism, probably because their own ministers were opposed to infant sprinkling. Among them were the families of Rogers of Marshfield, Nathaniel and Josiah Winslow (the Governor), and Kenhelm Winslow (Governor Edward Winslow's brother) from Yarmouth. In this burying ground at Wilson Hill were buried the earliest generations of the Cushings, the Kings, the Torreys, the Hatches, the Robinsons and the Briggses, with Mr. Witherell, their first pastor. It is very possible that it was while attending this church that Walter Briggs met the widow of John Rogers of Marshfield, whom he married as his second wife.

As I have previously said, CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS headed "an Expedition to the Eastward" against the French and Indians under an order of Capt. Anthony Collamer, dated 18 Apr. 1693, and the will he made before starting on this expedition is dated 21 Apr. 1693.

THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF CAPT. CORNELIUS
BRIGGS OF SCITUATE BEING AGED FORTY & FOUR YEARS
OR THEREABOUTS.

I CORNELIUS BRIGGS being *now going forth into their Maj^{ties}* service against their french and Indian enemies do briefly make this my last will & Testament that is to say It is my mind & I do order will & appoint All my just debts to be paid in convenient time by my Exeeutor hereafter named and for the remainder of my Estate which God hath betruſted me with both real and personall It is my mind and I do will ordain and appoint that immediately after my Decease my Loving Brother James Briggs in whome I do put great confidence do take all my poor fatherless and motherless children into his care and management ordering and disposing for their present and future good And also that my said Dear Brother do also take my whole estate into his trust care and management for the good and Benefit of my said children as is hereafter expressed as near as may be that is to say It is my mind and will and I do order will and ordain that my estate be kept together as much as may be for the good of my children but if my sd brother shall see great occasion for it rather than extrame much of personal estate should be expended for the Bringing up of my children I do Impower my said Brother James

Briggs to make sale of my forty five acre Lott lying at Showāmet near to the land of William Chase for the Bringing up my children and if still necessity calls for it to sell some more small Quantities of lands at Showāmet for the end aforesaid and it is my mind and will And I do will and ordain that when my youngest child shall be eleven years old that then there shall be a division of my whole estate that then is remaining both real & personall, that is to say there shall be first ten pounds taken out of my estate for the further bringing up my daughter and as for the remainder that there be a just & equall apprizement made of my whole estate both real and personall by Housemen thereunto chosen by my executor and that my eldest son Joseph Briggs shall have two shares of my said estate and the other four shares to be disposed of to my other four children in equall portions and in case any of my children die without issue his or her part to be equally divided amongst the rest of my surviving children and my Daughter to have the ten pounds aforementioned to be added to her part And further *it is my will that thirteen years after the date hereof my Negro Servant woman named Maria shall be set free and at liberty to be at her own disposing* And lastly I do make ordain constitute and appoint my loving Brother James Briggs to be my whole and sole Executor of this my last will & Testament In testimony hereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty-first Day of April 1693

Signed Sealed and Declared CORNELIUS BRIGGS (seal)

In the presence of us

The mark of R W ROBERT WHITCOMB

JAMES WHITCOMB

JOHN BARKER

Mr. John Barker and Robert Whitcomb two of ye witnesses to ye within written will appeared before William Bradford Esq Judge of Probate in Scituate the 15th day of November 1694 and made oath that they were present and saw and heard Capt Cornelius Briggs the testator within named signe seal and declare the within written Instrument to be his last will and testament and that to the best of their judgment he was of sound disposing mind and memory when he did ye same. Also James Whitcomb the other Witness soone after made oath to ye same effect.

Attest: SAM^l. SPRAGUE Regist^r.

Will allowed Nov. 15, 1694

He died 2 Oct. 1694, and the following is the inventory of his estate:

An inventory of ye Goods and Chattels of Capt. Cornelius Briggs late of Scituate Deceased taken ye 30th of October 1694 by us whose names are underneath expressed.

	£	s.	d.
Item his purse and Apparrell	24	14	1
2 cows 2 swine 31 sheep	11	15	—
2 Beds and Bedsteads coverlets & cords	9	—	—
One half of a sloop and rigging	30	—	—
<i>Maria the Negro woman</i>	11	—	—
<i>Will Tomas Ye Negro Boy</i>	16	—	—
Pewter platters Basons and other sorts	5	8	—
Brass kettles and other Brass	6	2	—
Iron Pots and kettle other Iron worke	5	4	—
Sheets, Napkins table linnen pillow beers	12	4	—
his wives apparrell	3	14	—
one childs Blanket other small linnen	1	8	—
his Plate	—	14	—
Coverlets and Blankets	5	8	—
his Books	1	—	—
<i>Armes and Ammunition</i>	3	4	—
12 chairs and 5 chests	1	18	—
3 beds 2 bedsteads & cords	5	2	—
Cotton wooll & flax and yarne	—	10	—
hay and stalks	—	10	—
fishing line and lead & staff	—	7	—
3 wheels and a pair of scales	—	15	—
one looking glass 3 bottles 2 jugs	—	9	—
2 tables & a Cubbert	—	9	—
3 trunks one mare	1	1	—
2 candlesticks & old barrells	—	9	—
Bils and Book debts	15	15	—
	174	0	1
The Dwelling house and barn & lands in Scituate	30	—	—
and two shares of land lying in ye township of Swansey at a place called Showamet	120	—	—
	324	0	1

STEPHEN OTIS

ISRAEL CHITTENDEN

Appraisers

November ye 15th 1694 James Briggs Executor of ye last will of Capt Cornelius Briggs Deceased made oath before Wm. Bradford Esqr Judge & that ye above written is a true Inventory of Ye Goods Chattels rights & credits of sd deceased so far as he knoweth and when more shall be discovered to him he will make it knowne

More added to above written Inventory April 16th 1695

By ye sd Exeeutor	one Cow at 35s	.	.	.	.	01	15	0
To a debt due to ye estate from Sam ^l Allin		.	.	.	.	01	10	0

Whether CORNELIUS² BRIGGS died as a result of wounds received during this "Expedition to the Eastward," or from illness contracted during the expedition, we have no means of knowing. The fact that his gravestone, which is shown in an illustration in this book, was found on Wilson Hill in Scituate, where was located the graveyard of the first meeting house of the Second Church erected on this hill, proves that he died in 1694 and was buried in Scituate, and that he was not killed in action, though he may have been fatally wounded.

Cornelius' will was allowed 15 Nov. 1694. His brother, Lieut. James² Briggs, as executor in settling the estate in 1703, sold Cornelius' negro servant, "*Will tomas*," son of "*Maria*," to Jabez Wilder of Hingham for £35. Jabez' great-great-grandson, the late Edwin Wilder, had this bill of sale in his possession in 1901. Jabez Wilder built the "Rainbow Roof" house on Main Street, South Hingham, in which the widow of the above-mentioned Edwin Wilder now resides (1936).

In accordance with the will of Cornelius² Briggs, which provided that his "negro servant woman named Maria shall be 13 years after date set free and at liberty to be at her own disposing," brother James as executor sold her under these conditions, as the following deed shows:

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS that I, Lieut. James Briggs, exeeutor to the last will and testament of my brother Capt. Cornelius Briggs lately deceased have bargained and sold unto Stephen Otis of Scituate a negro woman ealled Moriah, to serve the said Otis or his heirs or assigns from the date of these presents until eleven years shall be fully ended and completed which eleven

years begins the 22d day of April next insuing the date of these presents at the end of which term of time the negro woman is to be free and at her own disposal as doth appear at large by my brother's last will and testament; and I do covenant to and with the said Otis that at the time of the above bargained presents that I have full power to sell the said negro woman for the term of the years above mentioned. I said Briggs do acknowledge that I have received in hand of the said Otis eleven pounds silver money for the said negro woman. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 6th day of February 1694.

Witness,
JOB OTIS

JAMES BRIGGS (Seal)

This was the same Maria mentioned in the will of Walter Briggs, left to his wife Frances, and next owned by Walter's son, Capt. John² Briggs, whose widow sold her to Cornelius². (See chapter on Slavery.)

Lieut. James² Briggs did not live to complete the settlement of his brother Cornelius' estate, and on 21 May 1716 his nephew, Cornelius³ Briggs, Jr., was appointed administrator.

Children of CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS and Mary Russell:

14. i. JOSEPH, b. 29 Apr. 1679; m. (1) Mary Garrett; (2) Judith Litehfield; (3) Sarah Morey.
15. ii. CORNELIUS, b. 10 Dec. 1680; m. Ruth Barker.

Children of CAPT. CORNELIUS² BRIGGS and MEHITABLE (ALLYN) ANNABLE:

16. iii. JAMES³, b. Seitate 2 Mar. 1684; m. (1) ELIZABETH GARRETT; (2) Hannah Stowell.
- iv. JOHN, b. probably in Barnstable; in 1710 called "late of Seitate, deceased, boatman."
- v. HANNAH, b. Barnstable, was unm. in 1710.

In 1709 Hannah deeds 3 acres at Conihasset to Job Otis with dwelling formerly of Thomas Nichols, the shipbuilder who lived near Hobart's Landing on the North River, where he was succeeded, says Deane, by his son Thomas. This was not "at Conihasset" but in the South Parish, near the burial place of Capt. Cornelius Briggs.

20 Nov. 1710. Hannah Briggs of Boston, spinster, only sister of John Briggs, late of Seitate, boatman, dec'd, deeds

to Isaac Chase of Shawamet in the township of Swansea, land in Shawamet, also, 8 July 1712, deeds to Thomas Turner of Shawamet in Swansea, land in Shawomett.

5. HANNAH² BRIGGS (1. WALTER¹) born about 1650 in Seituate; married in 1675 Samuel Winslow, born in 1641, son of John Winslow, who arrived in the *Fortune* in 1621, and who married Mary Chilton (*Mayflower* 1620).

Little is known of James Chilton and his family, with the exception of his daughter Mary, who came into notice by her marriage to John Winslow, a brother of Governor Edward Winslow. James Chilton, with his wife and daughter Mary, "a young girl," were passengers in the *Mayflower*. He was about 40 years of age when he embarked, and died within a few months of his arrival in Plymouth. One writer has given the name of his wife as Susanna, but it has not been clearly proven. The age of his daughter Mary was between 14 and 20 years in 1620. It is claimed that *Mary Chilton* was the first person to set foot on Plymouth Rock, and this tradition has become so firmly believed that it is generally stated as an established fact. (She was an ancestor of Mary Cabot Briggs and therefore also of L. Cabot Briggs.) She was married to John Winslow before 1627. The Chiltons have been regarded as of the Leyden Company, and according to Bradford left a married daughter behind them in England.

John Winslow, father of Samuel, resided for a time at Marshfield on the estate at Careswell, but removed to Boston in 1657, where a little later he purchased a house on Spring Lane. The building on the south corner of Devonshire Street and Spring Lane, that formerly housed the Second National Bank until its removal to its present location (1936), stood upon the site of John Winslow's house. John Winslow died in 1674, and when his son Samuel married Hannah Briggs in 1675, Samuel was called "of Careswell." When Hannah married, her father, Walter Briggs, who must have been in extremely good circumstances, settled upon her a generous sum, as the records show:

Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 9, p. 212

22 June 1675. Whereas there was an agreement formerly made between Walter Briggs of Scittuate in the Colony of New Plymouth in New England yeoman on the one part, and Samuel Winslow of Boston, whereby said Walter Briggs obliged himself to pay to Samuel Winslow the full sum of £200, as part of his the s^d Samuel Winslow's wife portion, on condition that the said Winslow should purchase some house and land to the value of £200, and make over the same to Hannah, now wife of s^d Samuel Winslow, for the term of her natural life, and to be at her the s^d Hannah disposal to such child or children as between them should be lawfully begotten, & whereas the said Walter Briggs has pd to sd Winslow the sum of £200, and sd Winslow has purchased the house and lands in Boston according to the conditions, and has discharged the sd Walter Briggs, and in accordance with the agreement has agreed that the said Hannah Winslow his wife, is and hereafter shall stand and be seized of his now dwelling house Situate in sd Boston, bounded Southwest by the street that leads from the Second Meeting house towards Century house, north-westerly by the land of Esdras Read, Northeasterly by the land of Richard Bennett, Southeasterly by the land of John Williams.

Dated the twenty second day of June in the year of our Lord one thousand Six Hundred Seventy and five

In presence of us
JOHN HAYWARD
JAMES COUCH

SAMUEL WINSLOW

(and a Seal)

The only child of Hannah² Briggs and Samuel Winslow was Richard Winslow, born about 1676. When he was two years of age his grandfather, *Walter¹ Briggs*, made him a generous gift of land, as seen by the records (Plymouth Colony Deeds, Vol. 4, p. 192):

Walter Briggs, Yeoman of Scituate "for love and affection of my grandchild Richard Winslow the eldest son and first born of my daughter Hannah Winslow wife of Samuel Winslow of Boston, Merchant" the whole share of Showamett . . . & 1 moiety & ½ share of the afores^d being on the westerly side of Taunton River.

Witness
EDWARD JENKINS
THOMAS WADE

WALTER BRIGGS
10 July 1678
before JAMES CUDWORTH

On the same date *Walter*¹ *Briggs* conveyed to his son-in-law, Samuel Winslow —

. . . for a consideration of £25 13s 4d of current silver money of New England one whole share of Showamett Neck and outlet which said Neck and outlet being considered and cast into one and thirty parts or shares this is a whole one and thirtieth part of the said Neck and outlet . . . lying and being on the westerly side of Taunton River. Before James Cudworth, Assistant, in the presence of Edward Jenkins and Thomas Wade. 16 July 1678. (Plymouth Colony Records, Deeds, Vol. IV, p. 194.)

Samuel Winslow died in 1680, and his widow Hannah² (Briggs) married, second, Capt. Thomas Jolles. Her son Richard Winslow's will, dated 1697, refers to mother Hannah Jolles and to children of his uncles John² and James² Briggs of Cohasset (Conihassett); children of "uncle *Cornelius*² *Briggs*, late of Cohasset, deceased." Capt. Thomas Jolles died before July 1710, as on 18 July 1710 Robert Jolles of Bristol, yeoman (perhaps a stepson), discharges Hannah Jolles of Boston, New England, widow, and sells her a parcel of land in Black Horse Lane (afterwards called Prince Street), Boston. On 4 Nov. 1714 Hannah Jolles, in consideration of £300, conveys to her nephew John³ Briggs the property on Prince Street, Boston, "which said land her husband, Samuel Winslow, formerly bought of John Winslow and Elizabeth his wife" 14 Feb. 1673, together with furnishings, including "three good feather beds," other household stuff and other estate both real and personal. (Suffolk County Deeds, lib. 28, p. 180.) This property is described as a dwelling house situated in Boston, being butted and bounded southwest by the street that leads from the Second Meeting House toward Century Haven, also bounded by land of Esdras Read, Richard Bennett and John Williams. (See chapter on *Walter Briggs*.)

On 7 Aug. 1718 John³ Briggs "formerly of Scituate, now of Boston," in consideration of "six pounds in current money of New England," sold "a triangular piece of land," formerly the land of Samuel Winslow of Boston, deceased, "which he the said John Briggs lately bought of Hannah

Jolles of Boston, formerly the widow of Samuel Winslow of Boston, aforesaid," to Capt. John Charnock of Boston. (Suffolk Deeds, lib. 33, p. 122.) The remainder of this property descended to John Savage and his sister Hannah Savage by inheritance from their mother, Deborah Savage, the daughter of John³ Briggs; and William Thompson of Boston, guardian of the said Hannah, sold her third portion of it to James Leach of Boston, broker. (See Suffolk County Deeds, lib. 1764, p. 156, June 28, 1793.)

6. JOSEPH² BRIGGS (1. WALTER¹) was born in Scituate about 1652, and would have been 21 years of age in 1673, the year in which his father, Walter¹ Briggs, gave to his sons Cornelius² and Joseph², lands on the east side of Taunton River. (See Cornelius² Briggs.) No further mention of him has been found. In view of the service rendered by his father and brothers in the campaigns against the Narragansetts, it is possible, even probable, that Joseph lost his life in one of the expeditions. Of the swamp fight in Dec. 1675 Deane says, "Scituate had twenty men in this battle; but we are unable to give any perfect list of their losses and sufferings," and he then gives a short account of those who returned desperately wounded. Son Joseph was not mentioned in the will of his father, Walter¹ Briggs, in 1684, although all his other children were not only mentioned, but received generous portions of his estate; consequently it seems a fair assumption that Joseph², the youngest son of Walter¹ Briggs, died before 1684.

CHAPTER VII

GRANDCHILDREN OF WALTER BRIGGS

GENERATION III

7. HANNAH³ BRIGGS (2. *Capt. John*², *Walter*¹) was born in the Briggs homestead at Conihassett, Scituate, 8 May 1684. She married 12 Jan. 1709/10 Col. John Alden of Duxbury, son of Capt. Jonathan and Abigail (Hallett) Alden, and grandson of John and Priscilla Mullins (Molines) Alden of the *Mayflower* Company. Colonel John inherited from his father the old Alden estate at Duxbury, upon which he resided. Captain Jonathan built the house now standing on the property, in which both John and Priscilla Alden are said to have died.

The following deeds are on record in Windham County, Conn., for lands in which Hannah Briggs was interested at Ashford, Conn.:

Sept. 1, 1707. James Fitch of Canterbury in the County of New London deeded 9,600 Acres of land to several persons, including Hannah Briggs & Deborah Briggs Gentlewomen of Scituate in the County of plymouth in her Maj^{ty} Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England — unto Hannah Briggs & Deborah Briggs each one sixteenth part. (Windham Co. Deeds, A 18.)

June 14, 1708. James Corbin of Woodstock deeds 21,440 Acres of land to several persons including Hannah Briggs Gentlewoman of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in her Maj^{ty}s Province of the Massachusetts bay in New England — Hannah Briggs proportion being 1,658 Acres. (Liber A. p. 10.)

Nov. 26, 1726. Nath^l fuller Survey for James Briggs & Capt. John Alden five hundred & Eighty acres of Land in Ashford which is the full of the proportion of Land Due to said Briggs & sd John Alden in right of Hannah Briggs his now wife Steven Lincoln, James Lincoln & Hatherly foster for what they purchased of James Corbin of Woodstock & *allowed them by the Committee of the General Assembly for settling the land in said Ashford.* (Folio 90.)

Children of Hannah³ Briggs and Col. John Alden:

- i. JOHN ALDEN, b. 10 Oct. 1710; bpt. in Second Church, Scituate, 10 Dec. 1710.
- ii. SAMUEL ALDEN, b. 7 Nov. 1712; bpt. in Second Church, Scituate, 17 May 1713; m. in England, Edith —; d. 1744.
- iii. JUDAH ALDEN (Capt. Judah), b. 10 Aug. 1714; m. — Row of Boston.
- iv. ANNA ALDEN, b. 13 June 1716; m. Benjamin Loring of Duxbury, 1741.
- v. DEBORAH ALDEN, b. 16 May 1721; d. 2 Oct. 1730.
- vi. BRIGGS ALDEN (Col. Briggs), b. 8 June 1723; m. Mercy Wadsworth 1741.
- vii. ABIGAIL ALDEN, b. 27 Feb. 1727; m. Col. Anthony Thomas of Marshfield. (See Thomas, Chapter XIV.)

8. DEBORAH³ BRIGGS (2. *Capt. John*², *Walter*¹) was born at Conihassett, in the Briggs homestead, 8 Oct. 1685. Her mother, Deborah (Hawke) Briggs, had married 2 Dec. 1699, as her second husband, Deacon Thomas King, and on 12 July 1710 Deborah Briggs, the daughter, married George King, her mother's stepson, born in Scituate in Aug. 1682, son of Deacon Thomas and his first wife Elizabeth (Clap). George King succeeded his father as Deacon of the Second Church, and inherited the family home at Stony Cove Brook, which had been built by Deacon Thomas King before 1680, on the site of the house of Thomas Rawlins, which had been burned by the Indians in the raid of 1676. The land on which it stood was the "greate lott" along the North River granted to Anthony Annable in 1636. (See Annable.)

Thomas Kinge, son of George Kinge of Cold Norton, Essex, Eng., was born in 1614, and came to New England in the ship *Blessing* from London 17 June 1635, in company with Mr. William Vassall and family, whose wife was Anna Kinge, Thomas's sister. He married his first wife, Sarah —, about 1637, and resided near Mr. Vassall on the north, on the slope of the hill at Belle House Neck, which has sometimes been spoken of as "King Hill." His wife Sarah, the mother of his six children, died in 1652, and he married, second, 31 Mar. 1653, Jane (Young) Hatch,

widow of Elder William Hatch, and was chosen Elder of the Second Church to succeed Elder Hatch. Jane (Hatch) King died on 8 Oct. 1653, the year of her second marriage, and Elder King married Anne Sutcliffe as his third wife. He had property in both New and Old England. His will, dated 1691, gives "to wife Anne — to daughter Sarah Bisby land at Gravelly beach" in the "Two Miles;" "to grandsons John & Thomas Rogers £10 each." An item in the will reads, "it is my will that *Robin, my negro, be set free*, and receive of my estate a bed and 5 £ in money." Item: "To son Thomas all my property not otherwise disposed of in New and Old England." His daughter Rhoda King, born 11 octo. 1639, married John Rogers, Jr., of Marshfield. (See Chapter III, Walter Briggs.)

Thomas King, born 21 June 1645, married, first, in 1669, Elizabeth Clap, daughter of Deacon Thomas. They resided on the north side of Rotten March, but before 1680 Deacon King purchased Nathaniel Rawlins' farm at Stony Cove Brook, and built the house now (1936) standing in ruins. Nathaniel Rawlins succeeded his father Thomas, and had married Lydia, daughter of Richard Sylvester. She married, second, Edward Wright in 1664, and after the Indian raid, in which their house was burned, they moved away.

Elizabeth (Clap) King died 18 Mar. 1698, and he married, second, in 1699, Widow Deborah (Hawke) Briggs.

On the death of Elder Thomas King in 1691, the office of Ruling Elder was allowed to lapse, the duties of that office being merged with those of deacon. The Elder's son, Thomas King, had been a deacon of the church since the death of Deacon Thomas Robinson, in 1676.

Deacon Thomas King and his wife died the same year, 1711. His will, dated a short time before his death, gave to his son Daniel the homestead of his father at Belle House Neck, "he allowing daughter Anne to live in the house." To son George (the youngest son) "the farm where I now dwell, also a lot adjoining my brother Samuel Clap's land."

Deacon George King purchased in 1723 and 1724 land in Ashford, Conn., as shown by the following deed:

Oct. 12, 1725. George King of Scituate in the County of plymouth in New England decded land in Ashford to James Briggs of Scituate in the County, afore^{sd} Cord Wainer, — land pur-

chased partly of John Alden of Duxbere in the county of Plymouth afore^{sd} yeoman by Deed under his hand & seall Dated ye Ninth day of February 1723 — and the rest of John Alden & hannah his wife by Deed under there hands & Sealls Dated July the first 1724. (Windham Co., Conn., Deeds, A 184.) (See *Alden*. Hannah³ Briggs.)

Deacon George King died in Scituate 16 June 1754 in his 72d year. His wife Deborah survived him nearly four years, and died on 17 May 1758, in her 73d year. The King house and lands passed into the possession of their grandson, Deacon John James, 3d, the only son of their daughter Rhoda, and was owned by three generations of his descendants.

Children of Deborah³ Briggs and Deacon George King:

- i. DEBORAH KING, b. 7 Apr. 1711; d. 9 Jan. 1724.
- ii. RHODA KING, b. 27 July 1713; m. 1730, Deacon John³ James, Jr., b. 5 June 1709, son of Deacon John² and Eunice (Stetson) James, who lived on Winter Street (Norwell), where the house of Albert Merritt now (1936) stands. The old James house was demolished in 1899. It had been the home for many years of Lemuel and Nancy Jacob, unmarried children of Capt. Lemuel Jacob of the Revolution. Deacon John² James, Sr., was a grandson of Jonathan and Mary (Brewster) Turner, his mother having been Lydia, their daughter, who had m. John James, who d. from wounds received in the Indian raid of 1676, a few days after the birth of his son John³. Deacon John² James, Sr.'s, wife, Eunice Stetson, was a daughter of Capt. Benjamin and Bethia (Hawke) Stetson, and a granddaughter of Cornet Robert Stetson. (See Stetson chapter.) Deacon John³ James, Jr., and Rhoda King had but one child, John⁴, b. 1731 (Deacon John, 3d), whose mother d. not long after his birth. Deacon John⁴ James, 3d, m. Sarah Jacob. Major John⁵ James of Medford was their son.
- iii. LYDIA KING, b. 26 Dec. 1716; m. Deacon Joseph Cushing, Jr., 1732. They had a family of fifteen children, one of whom was Judge Nathan Cushing. (For a further account of her family, see *Cushing* under *Otis* family chapters.)
- iv. SARAH KING, b. 6 June 1719; d. 4 May 1723.

9. JOHN³ BRIGGS, JR. (2. *Capt. John², Walter¹*), gentleman, was born 25 Apr. 1687 in the homestead at Conihassett, shortly after his father's death. He was twelve years old when his mother married Deacon King and removed to the King homestead in the Second, or South, Parish. The estate of John's grandfather Walter¹, bequeathed to his sons Captain John² and Lieutenant James², remained undivided during their lifetime, although an agreement had been made in 1688, the year following the death of Captain John², between the latter's widow, Deborah, and her brother-in-law, Lieut. James² Briggs. When John³, Jr., came of age in 1708, an equal division of the estate was made between his cousin Joseph³ Briggs (known as Senior), the eldest son of John's uncle, Lieutenant James², and himself. (See this indenture among the Plymouth County Deeds on a succeeding page.)

John³ Briggs, Jr., married 2 Dec. 1712, Deborah Cushing, daughter of Judge John Cushing, the first, of Belle House Neek, and his first wife, Deborah Loring. (See John Cushing line, chapter on Cushings.) John³, Jr., and Deborah (Cushing) Briggs resided at Scituate until 1714, when he sold his part of the old estate at Conihassett to his cousin Joseph³ Briggs (known as Junior to distinguish him from Joseph³, son of Lieutenant James²), the eldest son of Capt. Cornelius² Briggs, and purchased from his aunt Hannah² Jolles the house on Prince Street, Boston, which had been given to her by her father, Walter¹ Briggs, on her marriage to Samuel Winslow. (See Hannah (Briggs) Winslow chapter.) An item in an early Boston paper says: "John Briggs paid a third part of the paving on Prince St. where he lived in 1721."

Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 28, p. 180. Rec^d Nov. 11th 1714

Hannah Jolls of Boston in the County of Suffolk in the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England in consideration of Three hundred pounds of current money of New England paid by *John Briggs* of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in New England Yeoman, sells him lands situate Lying & being towards the said Town of Boston in the lane formerly called Blackhorse lane, since that Prince Street which said land *Samuel Winslow*

her husband formerly bought of John Winslow & Elizabeth his wife as may appear by deed under the hands of said John Winslow and his wife bearing date the 14th day of February 1673, said land measuring in breadth upon the front Thirty and three foot & on the rear Sixty and three foot or thereabouts and in length on the Southeasterly side one hundred and twenty foot and on the Northeasterly side thereof, one hundred thirty and eight foot or thereabouts being butted and bounded by the street or common way that leadeth to Centerhaven, Southwesterly and Northeasterly upon the land formerly in the possession of Richard Bennett now in the possession of Richard Sherren or his heirs, upon the northwesterly side upon land formerly in the possession of Esdras Read now in the possession of Obediah Read Southeasterly upon the land in the possession of John Williams now in the possession of Richard Sherren said Hannah Jolls doth also sell unto the said John Briggs his heirs & assigns three good feather beds with furniture belonging to the same, one Brass Copper and all other of her household stuff and other estate both real and personal.

Dated Fourth day of November in the year of our Lord One thousand seven hundred & fourteen.

In the presence of — HANNAH JOLLS and a Seal.
CHARLES CAMPBELL
SARAH HEUGHES

In 1718 John Briggs sells to Capt. John Charnock a triangular piece of the above land on the northeasterly side, as described in the following deed:

Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 33, p. 122. Reg^d Oct. 25, 1718

John Briggs late of Situate in the County of Plymouth in New England but now of Boston in the County of Suffolk in New England aforesaid, in consideration of six pounds in current money of New England paid by Capt. John Charnock of Boston aforesaid sells him a certain Triangular piece of land lying and being in the North end of Boston afors^d being the Northeasterly end of a certain piece of land formerly the land of Sam^{ll} Winslow of Boston afors^d dec^d which s^d John Briggs lately bought of Hannah Jolls of Boston afore^{s^d} formerly the widow of Sam^{ll} Winslow of Boston afore^{s^d} dec^d which s^d triangular piece of land is twelve feet wide at the Northwesterly end thereof and

nothing at the Southeasterly end thereof sixty three feet or thereabouts in length, it is bounded Southwesterly on the lands now in the possession of him the s^d John Briggs, Northeasterly upon the lands now in the possession of him the s^d Capt. John Charnock, Northwesterly on lands in the possession of Doreas Peggy and Southeasterly upon the lands of Capt. John Charnock afore^{sd}.

Dated 7th day of August 1718

In presence of
WILLIAM PELL
JER. CONDY

JOHN BRIGGS and a seal

(See Thomas, Chapter XIV.)

John Briggs died between Oct. 1721 and Feb. 1721/22. His will, dated 24 Oct. 1721, was proved 12 Feb. 1721/22. An inventory of the estate was made 13 June 1722, amounting to more than £3,500. A final account was allowed 14 Dec. 1727. The will gave to aunt Hannah Jolles £100; to wife Deborah Briggs his house in Boston and other real and personal estate; if wife married she was to have only the use of the house and the use of £500 until daughter Deborah arrived at the age of 18 years, but not longer, viz., to educate, clothe and properly provide for daughter; to children of sister, Deborah King, each one half moiety in case daughter dies. His father-in-law, John Cushing, and wife, executors.

Feb. 6, 1729, the Rev. Charles Chauncey, minister of the First Church, Boston, great-grandson of the Rev. Charles Chauncey of Scituate, later the second President of Harvard College, married "*Will, negro servant of John Briggs, and Pegg, servant to Latle Gee.*" Will was undoubtedly the child of Maria, slave to Walter, then John, then Cornelius Briggs, then to Stephen Otis. Latle Gee was a son of a prominent Boston family.

The Rev. Charles Chauncey, Sr., was born 1592 at Yardley, Hertfordshire; A.B. 1613, A.M. 1617, B.D. 1624 at Trinity College, Cambridge, England, where he was lecturer in Greek. In 1627, while he was Vicar of Ware, he was arrested because of his expressed views, imprisoned, and not released until he had made a recantation in Latin; Pastor at Leyden, Plymouth Church three years; arrived Plymouth, New England, 1638; settled in Scituate 1641; died 1672.

The following deeds relate to John³ Briggs, Jr., of Scituate, later of Boston:

Indenture made between John Briggs of Scituate, son and heir of Capt. John Briggs late of same, and Joseph Briggs, eldest son of James Briggs both of Scituate. "Whereas Walter Briggs late of Scituate deceased, father of said Capt. Briggs and Lieut. Briggs stood seized of a certain farm of 200 acres, one half upland and one half marsh all lying and being in Cohasset (Conihasset), and also same called the *Glaidd Island*, and he did by his last will bequeath unto Capt. Briggs and Lieut. Briggs each certain tracts of land for a homestead act. Dated 16 Jan. 1676." The heirs then make an equal division act. A dower is set aside for Rebecca Briggs wife of James Briggs aforesaid. Saving also for Deborah, the wife of Thomas King, who was sometime the wife of Capt. Briggs her right and dower. Etc. Dated 24 Feb. 1708. (Plym. Co. Records, Vol. 8, p. 136.)

1708, March 1st. John Briggs grants to Stephen Bryant Jr. lands called "Ye Major Purchase" in consideration of £10, land that he bought of Joseph King lying and being between Herring Brook and ye road to Bridgewater. (Vol. 9, p. 157.)

1710, Dec. 5. "John Briggs of Scituate in consideration of £19 paid by David Jacob of same, deeds land which was part of a lot laid out to David Jacob & Deborah Briggs, widow, in behalf of the heirs of Capt. John Briggs; — also another lot laid out to David Jacob & Deborah King, alias Briggs' (widow of Capt. John)" in behalf of her son John Briggs. No location given. (Vol. 8, p. 151.)

John Briggs of Scituate in consideration of £20 paid by John Bailey Jr. of same, deeds land on the western sides of John Hiland's land, at a place called Merritt's Brook. Aug. 30, 1712. (Vol. 11, p. 236.) [Merritts Brook is an eastern branch of Bound Brook, and falls into Bound Brook above the Lincoln Mills. It crosses High Street, Scituate, near Merritt's Corner, where Conihasset Hall stood.]

12 Sept. 1709. Name of John Briggs Jr. and ten others found in a petition to the General Court praying that "the whole of the North Purchase and that part of Taunton which belongs to the Military Company be made into a Township, and that the Meetinghouse be set where it may be servisable for the whole town," and protesting against another location for same, and other division into precinct as proposed by a committee heretofore appointed. (Vol. 11, p. 301.)

Among a list of names of persons who are the proprietors of the Gore of land that lyeth between Rehoboth & Taunton, and Taunton North & South Purchase, and the number of Lotts that fell to each person &c. are, —

Cornelius Briggs 38

John Briggs & Richard Winslow 96

Cornal (Cornelius?) Briggs 114. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 42, p. 468.)

Transfers of Above Lands, from Bristol County Deeds at Taunton, Mass.

2 April 1711. John Briggs of Scituate deeds to John Reed Jr. of Freetown, land at Shawamet Great Neck. Also on same date, he deeds to William Slead of Shawamet, County Bristol, land in Little and Great Neck.

— April 1711. John Briggs of Scituate deeds to Isaac Chase of Shawamet, land in Shawamet.

28 Feb. 1711/12. John Briggs of Scituate deeds to William Chase of Shawomet-Swansey, land in Shawomet.

Petition of John Holbrook of Scituate, in the County of Plymouth; showing that whereas he was sued by one John Briggs of Scituate at an Inferior Court at Plimouth on the third Tuesday in December 1713 to be ejected from six acres of land of which land the Petitioner and his Predecessors have had quiet possession for thirty years. That at the last Tryal, viz; on a Review at the Superiour Court held at Plimouth in March 1716 a jury was obtained who either thro' Interest or Prejudice gave the case against the Petitioner and Praying therefore that the Court would enable him to bring on his said Case anew. In Council Read & Dismissed. (Vol. 10, p. 230.)

1714, Dec. 14. John Briggs, yeoman, deeds for £1700 to Joseph Bailey all his lands in Cohasset (Conihassett) bounded partly by Joseph Briggs.

1717, Feb. 24. John Briggs late of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £145 paid by Joseph Wade of same, yeoman, deeds lands in same, adjoining the lands of John Booth. (Vol. 15, p. 142.)

1719, Feb 16. John Briggs of Boston, gent, in consideration of £30 paid by William Mellucs of Scituate, husbandman, deeds a certain parcel of land in Cohasset (Conihassett) near land of Joseph Bailey. 5 acres which said Briggs recovered (20 acres

recovered) by judgement of Court from John Holbrook of Scituate. (Vol. 25, p. 24.) (See Petition, Vol. 10, p. 230.)

1720, March 13. John Briggs of the North End in Boston, gent, gives bond to Josiah Cushing of Pembroke, in consideration of £2000 paid by said Cushing, whereby he agrees to deliver to Cushing a certain estate in Pembroke which John Briggs sold to Cushing formerly if Cushing pays £2000 before a certain date he may hold the estate. (Vol. 15, p. 209.)

John Briggs late of Scituate & now of Boston deeds one acre of land laid out to John Briggs in right of Walter Briggs of Scituate, land in Cohasset (Conihassett), to Joseph Clap of Scituate, 13 July 1720. (Vol. 15, p. 65.)

John Cushing Esq. of Scituate, one of the executors of Will of John Briggs, late of Boston, gent. deceased, settled in full with Joshua (Josiah?) Cushing of Pembroke for sum of £639. Oct. 10, 1722. (Vol. 15, p. 228.)

Deborah Briggs, widow, of Boston conveys for £15 her share of undivided lands, which was allowed to John Briggs in 1723. Lot No. 287. Dec. 2, 1726. (Vol. 23, p. 97.)

Children of John³ Briggs, Jr., and Deborah Cushing:

17. i. DEBORAH⁴, b. 1713; bpt. 20 Feb. 1714 (First Church, Scituate); m. Thomas Savage.
- ii. JOHN, bpt. 25 Oct. 1714 (Second Church, Scituate); probably d. before 1721, as no mention was made of him in his father's will of that date.

AN INVENTORY OF THE REAL AND PERSONAL ESTATE OF JOHN BRIGGS LATE OF BOSTON, GENTLEMAN, DECEASED WITHIN THE COUNTY OF SUFFOLK TAKEN & APPRIZED BY US THE SUBSCRIBERS AT BOSTON ON THE 28TH DAY OF JUNE ANNO DOMINI 1722.

Imp ^{rs} Wearing Cloaths & Arms	£10	10	0
Item. Beds, Bedsteads, Bedding & ffurniture	35	—	—
Window Curtains, Table Linmen, Sheets & Linnen of all sorts	13	6	—
3 looking glasses £9.1. 1 Chest of Drawers & 3 Tables £8.15	17	16	—
chairs 56/ Earthern Ware & Glasses, Lanthorn & Pictures 54/	5	10	—
Iron, Brass & Tin Ware	11	8	6
Pewter 47 £3.19.2, Wooden Ware 4/ Plate 42 oz @ 12/25.10	29	13	2
2 Gold Rings pr. Gold Buttons	3	5	—

One old brass Sector & burning glass	—	7	—
Books	28	6	9
It. One dwelling house & land in Prince street, Boston .	475	—	—
Thomas Cushing, Peleg Wiswall, Joshua Gee	£630	2	5

And the executors to the last will & testament of the said deceased further give and amount that they have received in of the estate of said deceased in Paper bills of this Province of persons from whom it was due the sum of £210. 10. 11. £27 thereof being p^t earnings of ye sloop *Spermaciti* £210 10 11

Item. For the $\frac{1}{4}$ part of the sloop <i>SpermaCeti</i> sold to			
M. Waters	92	10	—
And from Henry Brightman	71	—	08
	£1004	4	—

And further that there is yet outstanding & due to said estate in bills of credit of this Province from Sundry persons by bills & bonds with the interest thereupon to the time of the death of the said John Briggs which was on the 5th day of November last past the several sums hereafter expressed viz^t

From John Cushing Sen ^r	562	18	8
From Joshua Thomas	151	5	9
From James Cushing	37	1	7
From Captain John Alden	75	6	—
From John Cushing, Jun ^r	27	7	—
From Elisha Bisby & Jacob Cushing	128	13	—
From Elisha Bisby	21	8	—
From William Mallows & Thomas Chittenden	65	19	—
From <i>Cornelius Briggs</i>	5	15	7
From Thomas Howland & John Savel	21	12	5
From Mr. Nathaniel Pitcher	96	16	—
From Samuel Daggett	54	6	9
From Thomas & Francis Barker	181	19	5
To Mr. Wright the barber	—	16	6
To Thomas Millens for Carpentry Work	1	8	—
To Mr. James Pecker, Constable for Dates anno 1721 .	3	11	11
To Mr. Grant	8	13	7
To Joseph Corledge of Watertown for Cyder Apples .	2	4	—
To James Badeock for sand	—	3	4
To Capt. John Alden	74	17	—
To Richard Hunniwell & James Howard for <i>Paveing</i> (Prince St.)	5	13	10
To Ebenezer Bridge	—	6	—
To Thomas Hutchinson, esq ^r	2	—	—
To Moses Peirce for glazing	—	5	2

To Mr. Owen Harris	124	18	8
Item. Said Accountants pray allowance of £1.13/ which thro' mistake was inventoried more than was due on Jn ^o Cushing, Jun ^r bond & since discounted with him	1	13	—
Item £2.16.1 which through mistake was inventoried more than was due on Wm. Chase's bill & since discounted with him	2	16	1
Item of £20.16/ which thro' mistake was inventoried more than was due on Samuel Doggett's bond & since discounted with him	20	16	—
Also said accountants pray allowance of £74.8, wel by mistake was inventoried more than was due on the bonds from Elisha Bisbe & since discountd with said Bisbe	74	8	—
From John Merritt	25	10	6
From William Chase	9	2	8
From Jonathan Alden	38	4	9
From Ephraim Howard	7	12	—
From William Thomas p ^r a note part earnings of ye above sloop	5	—	—
From Jolm Cushing (for which he hath given land security)	607	3	8
From Sarah Tomlin	5	—	—
Due from David Jacobs p ^r book	3	—	—
Due from the estate of Mr. Howell, deceased in the hands of the Reverend Dr. Cotton Mather adm ^x for service done by the said Briggs for about a year's space in receiving & paying many sums }	—	—	—

Sworn to by the Executors & Thomas Cushing & Peleg Wiswall two of the appraisers August 17. 1722 & filed same day. August 27. 1722 sworn to by Joshua Gee the other appraiser.

See Vol. 22 pp. 653 &c. in Probate Office
Of Suffolk Co. On file No. 4517.

The Account of John Cushing & Deborah Briggs Exec^{trs} to the last will and Testam^t of John Briggs late of Boston, Gent. dec'd, relating to his estate and their administration thereon exhibited to the Hon^{ble} Samuel Sewall, Esq^r Judge of Probate &c. for the County of Suffolk the 14th day of Dec^r A.D. 1727 as followeth viz:

That the estate of the said Briggs, dece ^d , Housing & Land in Boston, Household goods, bills of Credits, moveables & bills & bonds outstanding for bills of credit as in the Inventory thereof formerly given in to said Judge is set forth and expressed amounted to the sum of . . .	£3135	6	9
And that the estate of the said deced which hath since come to their hands an Inventory whereof is herewith exhibited amounts to	303	9	8
	<u>£3438</u>	<u>16</u>	<u>5</u>

And the said Accountants petition for allowance as followeth Impr^s The said accountants desire allowance for the several charges of the said deced: viz: To the charge of the Doctor. Medicines & Nursing in the time of his last sickness and the charge of his funeral which amounts to £99 19 -

Item. The said accountants desire allowance for certain debts due from the said deceased which since they have paid viz:

To a debt paid Mr. Thomas Cushing 39 18 -

To a debt paid Mrs. Pemberton 64 7 -

To a debt paid Mr. Thomas Barnard 11 10 -

Item. To a debt paid to Mr Peter Collamor - 4 6

Item. The said accountants pray allowance for what they have pd. to Mrs. Hannah Joles pursuant to the will of said deced. viz: 60 - -

Item. Said accountants desire allowance of the £200 given to the said Deborah one of the executors in said will 200 - -

Paid for proving the will, recording &c: apprizing the estate at Boston & Scituate 5 - -

Item. Said accountants pray allowance for their charge & trouble in their administration on the estate of said deced. the sum of 10 - -

To allowing & recording the account - 15 -

£791 4 8

Allowed Dec^r 14. 1727.

See Vol. 26. pp. 43 &c. in Probate office of
Suffolk Co. On File 4517

10. JOSEPH³ BRIGGS (3. *Lieut. James², Walter¹*) born in Scituate 19 Feb. 1678, was known as "Joseph Senior" to distinguish him from his cousin, Joseph³ Briggs, son of Captain Cornelius², born in 1679, and known as "Joseph Jr." He resided at Conihassett, on his father's (Lieutenant James) farm. He died 26 Mar. 1770, aged 91 years.

Plymouth County Deeds.

Joseph Briggs Senior of Scituate, in consideration of 23s warrant money paid by Joseph Clap, deeds a certain piece of swamp-land, granted to Thomas Turner by the present committee. (Committee to divide lands) May 23, 1713. (Vol. 15, p. 1.)

Joseph Briggs of Scituate, farmer, in consideration of £40 paid by Thomas Orcutt of Hingham, deeds a parcel of land

lying in a harbor called *Briggs Harbour*, S.W. side of ye channel of said Harbour, described. Oct. 16, 1722. (Vol. 26, p. 188.)

Indenture between Joseph Briggs Senior of Scituate yeoman on one part, and Nath'l Thomas, Major Isaac Lothrop, Mr. John Watson, Capt. Isaac Little & Capt. Joshua Cushing, commissioners appointed for making the sum of £100,000. Joseph Briggs in consideration of £120 deeds land in Scituate at a place called Great Neck at Conihasset. Feb. 10, 1723. (Vol. 17, p. 166.)

Joseph Briggs of Scituate deeds to Israel Vinal land in Scituate near John Booth's, described. Jan. 1, 1724/5. (Vol. 24, p. 225½.)

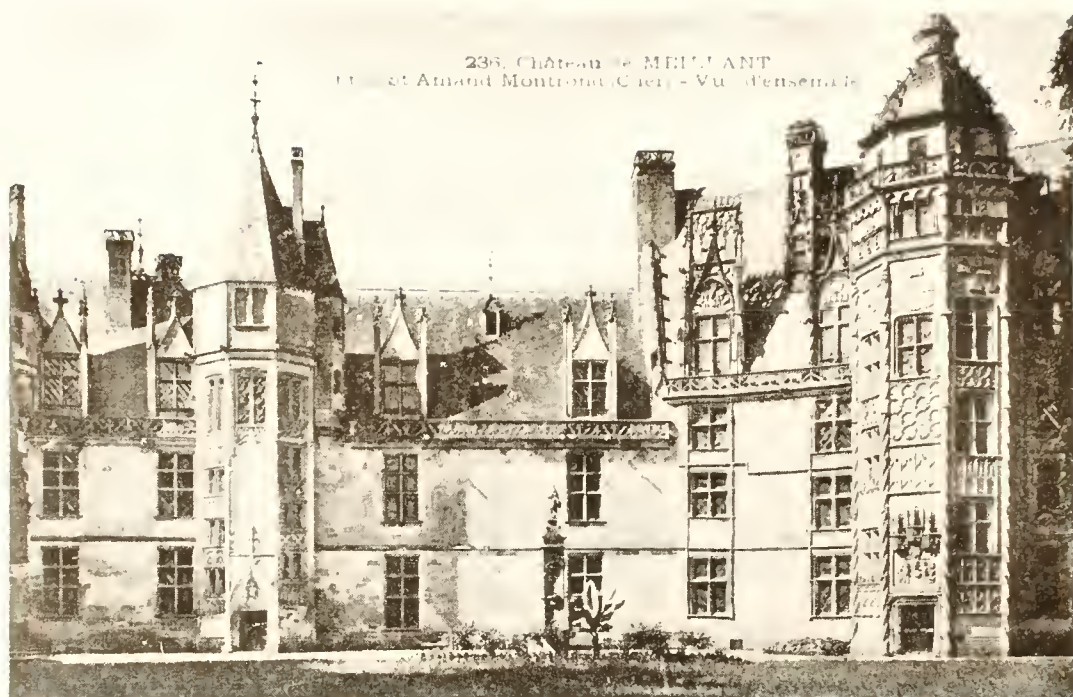
I, Joseph Briggs Senior of Scituate yeoman, for £44 paid by John Cushing Jr. of Scituate, convey my share in undivided upland and swamp in ye town of Scituate granted me in 1723, described. May 17, 1726. (Vol. 23, p. 93.)

Joseph Briggs of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £1400 paid by John Briggs of same, cordwainer, deeds all his farm that he held, except a few acres at the southerly end. Dec. 8, 1732. (Vol. 27, p. 206.) [This deed seems to convey to Joseph's son, John Briggs²⁰, the property inherited by Joseph¹⁰ from his father, Lieutenant James³.]

Joseph Briggs of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £175 paid by his sons John Briggs & Joseph Briggs Jr. of same, deeds a certain parcel of land in Scituate at a place called Great Neck at Cohasset (Conihasset) Nov. 2, 1737. (Vol. 46, p. 244.) [*Great Neck* was another name for *Farm Neck*, and the property was originally Walter Briggs'.]

Joseph Briggs, Sr., married Jan. 1703/4 Deborah Holbrook, born in Scituate 22 Aug. 1683, daughter of John, and granddaughter of Capt. William Holbrook. She died 12 Apr. 1766, aged 84 years.

Capt. William Holbrook, was son of Thomas, Jr., who had lands in Scituate 1649 (although a resident of Weymouth), died in Scituate 1699 & whose father, Thomas Sr. died in Weymouth 1673, leaving his estate to wife Jane . . . during her life . . . afterward to be divided between his three sons, John, William & Thomas, and his three daughters, Ann Reynolds, Elizabeth Hatch & Jane Drake. Capt. William purchased lands in Conihasset in 1660 on the south side of the "Cohasset road", ½ mile west of Capt. Michael Peiree's.



CHATEAU OF THE MARQUIS AND MARQUISE DE MORTEMART, WHERE COLONEL
AND MRS. BRIGGS AND THEIR SON CABOT WERE GUESTS IN 1920



CHATEAU OF MARQUIS AND MARQUISE DE MORTEMART
(See page 1099)

The will of Joseph³ Briggs, Sr., dated 8 June 1768, proved 6 Apr. 1770 (Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. 20, p. 268), mentions grandsons Ezra and Nathaniel; son of son Joseph deceased; son John; daughter Mary Studley; daughter Rebecca Goodspeed; daughter Hannah Briggs; daughter Abigail Rose; son Ezra Briggs.

Children of Joseph³ Briggs and Deborah Holbrook:

18. i. CORNELIUS⁴, b. 26 Sept. 1705; m. Lydia Stodder.
19. ii. MARY, b. 26 Aug. 1707; m. Eliab Studley 1729.
20. iii. JOHN, b. 18 Dec. 1709; m. Judith Damon 1744.
- iv. REBECCA*, bpt. 5 Apr. 1713; m. Nathaniel Goodspeed 1735.
21. v. JOSEPH, bpt. 29 May 1715; m. Rachel Bailey.
- vi. THANKFUL, bpt. 30 June 1717; d. 17 Nov. 1736, in 19th year.
- vii. HANNAH, bpt. 28 Sept. 1718.
22. viii. ABIGAIL, b. about 1720; m. Gideon Rose 1754.
23. ix. EZRA, bpt. 22 Aug. 1725; m. (1) Joanna Cudworth; (2) Lydia Neal.
- x. NATHANIEL, bpt. 24 Sept. 1729.

Ruth Briggs, bpt. 26 Apr. 1724 in Hingham, Second Precinct (Cohasset), may have been a daughter of Joseph and Deborah (Holbrook) Briggs. She m. Jonathan Collier of Hull (int. 30 Oct. 1761) and was therein called *Mrs.* Ruth Briggs.

11. MARY³ BRIGGS (3. *Lieut. James², Walter¹*) was born at Conihassett 14 May 1682. She married, first, 29 Dec. 1712, Josiah Litchfield, Jr., born in Scituate 1677, and baptized in Aug. 1679 in Second Church of Scituate. Josiah Litchfield, Jr., was a son of Josiah and Sarah (Baker) Litchfield, and grandson of Lawrence Litchfield of Barnstable, where he settled as early as 1643. The Colony Records give interesting information regarding the early history of Josiah Litchfield, son of Lawrence:

1657. Judith, the wife of William Peaks testifieth that her former husband, Lawrence Litchfield, lying on his death bed did send for John Allen and Ann his wife, and desired to give their

* Church Record says "Deborah."

youngest son Josiah, to be their adopted child — whereunto all consented.

Signed, JOHN ALLEN,
 ANN ALLEN,
 JUDITH PEAKS.

1662. Judith, the wife of William Peaks, petitioned that her son Josiah Litchfield, the adopted son of John Allen, might be allowed to choose two guardians (granted).

1665. The Court did sanction an agreement between Lieut. James Torrey and Robert Stetson, guardians to Josiah Litchfield on one side, and Anna his mother (wife of Lawrence Litchfield, and some time the wife of John Allen), concerning the improvement of his property. (Deane says, "Here is undoubtedly a mistake in the records. Anna was the wife of John Allen, and the mother of Josiah Litchfield by adoption. Judith Peaks was his natural mother, sometime the wife of Lawrence Litchfield, and sometime a wife of John Allen, and separated or divorced in England.")

1668. Josiah Litchfield having become of age, Major Josiah Winslow is appointed to see him put in possession of his land, a legacy from John Allen.

Josiah Litchfield married in 1671 Sarah Baker, daughter of Rev. Nicholas Baker of the First Church of Scituate, ordained 1660, who settled in Hingham, and received a share in the first division of house lots in 1635. It is thought that he came from Hingham, England, with the first settlers at "Bare Cove" (Hingham, New England). Nicholas Baker afterward became a large landholder in Hull, where he resided before 1660. He was a Deputy to the May session of the Massachusetts Colony Court in 1636, the first court in which Hingham was represented, and again in 1638. We mention him at some length, as it was owing to his "peaceful and godly influence that a reconciliation was brought about between the two Scituate Churches, which had held no communion with each other for thirty-five years." By the consent of the First Church Mr. Baker signed "an instrument of reconciliation with the Second Church," 1 Apr. 1675. At this time the First Church had returned to the practice of infant sprinkling from which "they had been led away by President Chauncey."

Cotton Mather ("Magnalia," Vol. I, p. 542) says:

Honest Nicholas Baker of Scituate who though he had but a private education, yet being a pious and zealous man, or, (as Dr. Arrowsmith expresses it), so good a logician, that he could offer up to God a reasonable service, so good an arithmetician, that he could wisely number his days, and so good an orator, that he persuaded himself to be a good Christian.

Josiah Litchfield died 7 Dec. 1717, aged 40 years, and his widow, Mary (Briggs) married, second, 16 Jan. 1723/4, John Leavitt of Hingham, who was born in Hingham 6 July 1678, a son of Israel Leavitt. John Leavitt was known as Ensign John Leavitt. He was a cooper by trade, and resided on Leavitt Street, Hingham. He died 29 July 1749, aged 71 years.

Children of Mary³ Briggs and Josiah Litchfield, Jr.:

- i. MARY⁴ LITCHFIELD, b. 10 Oct. 1715; m. John Beal of Hingham 1740.
- ii. JOSIAH LITCHFIELD, 3d, b. 23 Feb. 1717; m. Mrs. Abigail Studley 1759.

There were no children by her second marriage to John Leavitt.

12. JAMES³ BRIGGS (3. *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 2 Feb. 1687 at Conihassett. He married 24 Dec. 1716 Hannah Bailey, born Jan. 1687/8, daughter of John and Sarah (White) Bailey, whose farm adjoined the Briggs farm at Conihassett.

John Bailey was a tenant of Capt. John Williams at Farm Neck before 1670, and by Capt. Williams' will, dated 1691, was given the farm upon which he dwelt. This is the so-called "ancient Bailey farm," by which name it has been known for nearly two hundred and fifty years. It adjoined the Briggs lands upon the west. Hannah Bailey died 21 Feb. 1717, "aged about 31."

James Briggs was a widower for twenty-two years, but on 22 Aug. 1739 he married, second, Margaret Stetson, born in Scituate Sept. 1685, a daughter of Benjamin and Grace (Turner) Stetson. Her father, Benjamin Stetson, was a

son of Capt. Benjamin and Bethia (Hawke) Stetson, and grandson of Cornet Robert. (See Stetson chapter.) Her mother, Grace Turner, was a daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Hiland) Turner. (See Turner chapter.) The residence of Benjamin Stetson was on Stetson Road, near Church Hill, Norwell, on the site of the new house of Edward Haskins. It was a fine old mansion, known for many years as the "old Haskins house," having been the residence of William Haskins whose wife was a daughter of Nathaniel Cushing, the last of the family to own the old Cushing farm at Belle House Neck. In 1720 Capt. Joseph Barstow and Benjamin Stetson erected a "forge and finery" near Rocky Run, Hanover, where the tack works of E. Phillips & Sons stood later. Benjamin Stetson died in 1739, about the time of his daughter's marriage to James Briggs. Margaret (Stetson) Briggs died 30 Mar. 1751. There were no children by this marriage; both James and Margaret were in middle life when they married in 1739.

13. BENJAMIN³ BRIGGS (3. *Lieut. James*², *Walter*¹), born in Scituate (Conihassett) 20 Jan. 1695/6, was known as Captain Benjamin (Deane, p. 131). In 1756 he was in the *French and Indian War*. He was a "cordwainer" and resided north of Stockbridge Mill Pond, in the old Briggs house, now Walter Sprague's (1936), —

Indenture between Benjamin Briggs of Scituate, cordwainer, and commissioners, per order of Great and General Court; his house and lands at Scituate bounded by John Roger's land. May 1, 1723. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 16, p. 194.)

Benjamin Briggs of Scituate, cordwainer, in consideration of £16 paid by John Clap of same yeoman, deeds lot No. 34 in Scituate. (Vol. 25, p. 30.)

Benjamin Briggs married, first, 7 Dec. 1719, Leah Merritt, born in Scituate 21 Feb. 1697, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth (Weyborn) Merritt.

Henry Merritt, father of Leah, was a son of John, Sr., and grandson of Henry Merritt, one of the earliest settlers in Scituate, and known as one of the "Men of Kent." He is said to have been in Scituate as early as 1626. A deed dated 1628, conveyed land

on 3d Cliff from Henry Merritt to Nathaniel Tilden. He was a Conihasset Partner, and his houselot in 1633 was at the corner where Greenfield lane and the Driftway united. In 1830 it was still known as "Merritt's Corner." John Merritt, Sr., succeeded to his father's residence.

Elizabeth Weyborn was born in Scituate 1694, daughter of John Weyborn, Jr., and Elizabeth Ripple of Boston. In 1697, John Weyborn was in Norwich, Conn., and signed a deed of gift, with Thomas Jenkins, who, Deane says, may have been his brother-in-law, of his house and lands in Scituate to Joanna Colman. They were sold by widow Joanna Colman to Experience Damon in 1700. Experience lived near Pincin Hill.

John Weyborn, Sr., father of John, Jr., was a son of Thomas Weyborn of Plymouth, and later of Boston. John was in Scituate in 1665, and purchased a half share of Conihasset land in the right of Richard Sealis. He had married in Boston, 1657, Abigail Elliot of Boston. Their son John, Jr., was born in Scituate in 1670.

Capt. Benjamin Briggs married, second, 26 Nov. 1747, in Hingham (Cohasset), Widow Anna (Haugh) Doane of Wellfleet, born in Boston 10 May 1710, daughter of Samuel and Margaret Haugh of Boston. On 7 May 1722 John Doane, Esq., was appointed her guardian, and she resided with his family in the north precinct of Eastham, called Billingsgate, in 1727. She married, first, Isaac Doane, a nephew of her guardian, born in Eastham 25 July 1701, son of Isaac and Margaret (Wood or Atwood) Doane. Will of Isaac Doane, Sr., dated 3 Dec. 1764, mentions "two granddaughters" by his "son Isaac Doane dec'd. Namely Anna Doane & Sarah Doane." (See Otis chapter with Ezekiel Cushing line.)

I, Anna Briggs, widow of Scituate, in consideration of £40 paid me by Joseph Briggs Jr. yeoman, of Scituate, deed my interest in land of my husband Benjamin near Joseph Northey's land. July 9, 1757. (Plymouth Co. Rec., Vol. 43, p. 273.)

Anna Briggs of Scituate, widow, in consideration of £40 paid by James Briggs Jr. of same yeoman, deeds land which belonged to her late husband Benjamin Briggs deceased, near Capt. David Clap's land. July 9, 1757. (P. C. R., Vol. 43, p. 273.)

James Briggs Jr. of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £40

paid by Benjamin Briggs of same, mariner, deeds one half of all the estate of their father Benjamin Briggs, adjoining Capt. Samuel Turner's land. July 9, 1757. (P. C. R., Vol. 43, p. 273.)

Children of Capt. Benjamin³ Briggs and Leah Merritt:

24. i. LEAH⁴, b. 22 Sept. 1720; m. Josiah Damon.
25. ii. BENJAMIN, b. 18 Oct. 1722; m. Rebecca Curtis.
26. iii. DEBORAH, b. 1 June 1724; m. Thomas Man, Jr.
- iv. RACHEL, b. 13 Aug. 1730.
27. v. JAMES, b. 16 Nov. 1735; m. Rhoda Nash.

14. JOSEPH³ BRIGGS (4. *Capt. Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born in the Russell house, Scituate, 29 Apr. 1679, the oldest son of Capt. Cornelius² and Mary (Doughty) Russell Briggs. He was known as Joseph³ Briggs, Jr., to distinguish him from his cousin Joseph³ Briggs, son of Lieutenant James², who was one year his senior. Joseph³, Jr., was a shipwright, also styled yeoman and farmer in various deeds. He lived in the Walter¹ Briggs homestead at Conihassett, which he purchased from his cousin, John³ Briggs, Jr., when the latter removed to Boston.

The following deeds show transfers of various properties owned by Joseph Briggs, Jr.:

17 Oct. 1702. Joseph Briggs Jr. of Scituate farmer, in consideration of 40s. paid by Thomas Oreutt of Hingham labourer, deeds certain flatts in a place called Briggs Harbor lying on S. W. of channels in said harbour. Once owned by *Rodolphus Elmes*. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 26, p. 186.)

20 Feb. 1704/5. Joseph Briggs and Cornelius Briggs, both of Scituate, convey to James Cushing swamp land inherited from their father Cornelius. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 12, p. 205.)

March 25, 1706/7. Joseph Briggs Jr. of Scituate, shipwright, in consideration of £5 paid by Joseph Nichols conveys Lot No. 25, granted to Briggs by the town. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 7 (or 17), p. 317.)

Feb. 18, 1715/16. Joseph Briggs Jr. of Scituate, in consideration of £20 paid by Israel Whiteom, he of same husbandman, deeds 2 acres of salt meadow near S. E. end of Rock Island. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 18, p. 96.)

Dec. 23, 1715, Joseph Briggs Jr. of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £25 paid by Nathaniel Cudworth husbandman of

same, deeds a parcel of salt meadow in Cohasset near Rock Island. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 11, p. 258.)

Feb. 18, 1715/16. Joseph Briggs of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £20 warrant money paid by James Newel of same husbandman, deeds every part and parcel of a certain salt meadow containing two acres, lying in Cohasset off Scituate near Rock Island. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 11, p. 252.)

Joseph³ Briggs, Jr., married for his first wife, 2 Feb. 1709/10, Mary Garrett, born 18 Apr. 1683, daughter of Joseph and Ruth (Buck) Garrett, and a granddaughter of Deacon Richard Garrett. (See Chapter III, Walter Briggs' Friends: *also*, 16. James Briggs.) Mary (Garrett) Briggs died 8 Feb. 1714, and three years later Joseph married 20 Feb. 1717 Judith Litchfield, born 25 Apr. 1687, daughter of Josiah and Sarah (Baker) Litchfield (see 11. Mary Briggs), who died; and on 14 Jan. 1730 Joseph married for a third wife Sarah (Ewell) Morey, widow of Edward Morey, born 2 Feb. 1687/8, daughter of Gershom and Mary (—) Ewell, who resided near Cold Spring and Merritt's Brook. Gershom was a son of Henry and Sarah (Annable) Ewell. (See Annable chapter.) Joseph Briggs, Jr., died in 1747. His will, dated that year, gave to his youngest daughter Judith by his second wife, Judith Litchfield, then unmarried, one half his real estate and one third of his personal property after the death of his third wife Sarah, or upon her remarriage. The real estate included the old Briggs homestead at Conihassett. The next year Judith married William Collier.

When Joseph Briggs, Jr., married his third wife, Widow Sarah (Ewell) Morey, in 1730, he had three daughters: Mary, aged 19, Hannah, 16, daughters of Mary Garrett; and Judith, 5 years old, daughter of Judith Litchfield.

Sarah Morey was mother of three daughters by Edward Morey, all unmarried when she married Joseph Briggs. In the next few years, four of these daughters married, and Joseph's daughter, Hannah Clap, died before her father, leaving one living child, Joseph Clap.

Sarah (Morey) Briggs had property, part of which she had inherited from her father.

Suffolk Deeds, Lib: 60, p. 217. Reg. 18 April 1741.

Joseph Briggs Junior of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in Province of Massachusetts in New England, yeoman, and Sarah wife of said Joseph, for and in consideration for divers good causes and Considerations, give grant etc. unto Sarah Silvester and Penelope Morey both of Boston in the County of Suffolk, and Susanna Litchfield of Scituate in the County of Plymouth, the three only daughters of the said Sarah Briggs above, a certain tract of land in the Township of Stoughton in the County of Suffolk bounded — Westerly by the Road leading from the *Blew Hills* to Mr. Billings, and measuring Sixty Rods, — Southerly on Estys, — Easterly on Mathapang Brook, and Northerly on Wales land, containing Sixty five Acres more or less. Dated twelvth day of February One thousand seven hundred and Forty.

In presence of
DAVID LITTLE

NICHOLAS LITCHFIELD

Signed,

JOSEPH BRIGGS
SARAH BRIGGS

Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 60, p. 217. Reg. April 18, 1741.

John Billings of Boston and his wife Sarah Billings, daughter of Gilbert Indicott late of Dorchester, acknowledge sale of above described land by heirs of Gilbert Indicott to Gershom Ewell of Scituate on 7th June 1717 for £150. Dated 5th April 1741.

Penelope Morey married 22 Mar. 1741 David Anderson, and Susanna married Josiah Litchfield 1732.

Joseph Briggs died in 1747, and by his will dated that year divided his property between his heirs, reserving a life interest for his widow as long as she remained such. The following Court Records tell of the controversy that soon arose between his children and their stepmother:

General Court Records, Vol. 19, p. 76.

December 9, 1749. Sarah Briggs, Relict Widow of Joseph Briggs late of Scituate, files a petition showing that by his last Will and Testament, that she is in possession of a certain Farm as Tenant for Life, lying in said Town, and that some time since the Barn thereon was burnt, with a great Quantity of Hay & Grain therein and therefore prays that she may be allowed to

sell some part of the Timber or Wood on the said Farm, and lay out the Produce thereof in building a new Barn.

The House of Representatives ordered that the Petitioner serve the Heirs with copy of Petition, that they may show cause, if any, why the prayer should not be granted.

On Dec. 28, 1749, The Council Read again the above petition with the answer of Joseph Clap and other heirs, and a Committee consisting of Joseph Wilder & John Otis Esquires, Thomas Foster Esq., Mr. Hull & Capt. White was chosen to hear both parties, and report what they judged proper for the Court to do thereon.

The widow's petition stated that the heirs had opposed the probation of Joseph's will, which notwithstanding was proved and approved. That in the winter of 1748 she had lost fifteen loads of hay that had been stacked on the farm, and on the 30th of September 1749, the barn containing 30 loads of hay, and about 100 bushels of English Grain was burned to ashes by some evil minded person unknown, and not by accident, which was the general apprehension of the neighbors.

The petition also stated that there was a considerable quantity of wood standing on the farm, some of it decaying, and that the quantity usually sent to market in the space of three or four years would be sufficient to build a new barn, which would be as much to the advantage of the heirs as to herself, after her decease or marriage.

The heirs claimed that her petition was extraordinary and unreasonable. That she, being 60 years of age was unlikely to re-marry, and would be in possession of the estate for many years. That in addition to the £200 given her outright by her husband's will, that she has the improvement of his personal estate amounting by the Inventory to £2300, which she had already disposed of and converted to her own use, and there was no way to compel her to give security that if they should outlive her that they would have the personal estate that their father intended for them to have. They strongly opposed cutting off wood from the estate, which wood their father was so fond of that for 20 years past he had not sold a stick therefrom.

They therefore prayed that her petition be dismissed.

Signed, —

WILLIAM COLLIER

JOSEPH CLAP Guardian

JOHN CUDWORTH

On 29 Dec. 1749 in Council, it was ordered that the petition be dismissed. Read and concurred in House of Representatives Jan. 1st, 1749/50.

On the 10th of Sept. 1750/51 Sarah Briggs conveyed to her stepdaughter, Judith Collier, the half part of the real estate given her by her father's will, and on the same day deeded to Judith's husband, William Collier, for £50 her rights in the real estate of her late husband. This ended the controversy over the homestead, and the old Walter Briggs farm became Collier property.

Children of Joseph Briggs³, Jr., and Mary Garrett:

- 28. i. MARY⁴, b. 9 Oct. 1711; m. John Cudworth.
- 29. ii. HANNAH, b. 8 Feb. 1714; m. Deacon Joseph Clap.

Child of Joseph Briggs³, Jr., and Judith Litehfield:

- 30. iii. JUDITH⁴, b. 20 May 1725; m. William Collier.

15. CORNELIUS³ BRIGGS, JR. (4. *Capt. Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born in Scituate 10 Dec. 1680. Deane's "History" says he *probably removed to Swansea* after his marriage, and he may have removed there to the lands given him by his father. On 10 Mar. 1706/7 he deeded James Cushing cedar swamp, granted him by the town. This was the year of his marriage and probable removal. In 1732 he was living in Pembroke, then a part of Duxbury, and as the births of his children are not found on Duxbury Records, it is not unreasonable to believe that they were born in Swansea.

He married 24 Oct. 1706 Ruth Barker, born 31 Jan. 1681, daughter of Lieut. Francis and Mary (Lincoln) Barker of Duxbury (Pembroke). She died in Pembroke 1732. (See Barker chapter.) Cornelius Briggs died between 1760 and 1764.

3 Dec. 1718. Joshua Barker of Pembroke makes bequests — "To my — (sister ?) wife of Cornelius Briggs £30. To nephews Joshua & Cornelius Briggs Jr. £40 at arrival of age of 21 yrs." (Plymouth Co. Records, Wills, Vol. 4, p. 129.)

Cornelius Briggs witnessed deed of John Holmes of Scituate

to Thomas Barker of Pembroke, conveying Brick Kilns 7 Aug. 1719. (Plym. Co. Rec., Vol. 18, p. 166.)

Ebenezer Barker of Pembroke housewright, in consideration of £139 paid by Isaac Taylor of same cordwainer, deeds a parcel of land in Pembroke near land of Cornelius Briggs. 19 July 1738. (P. C. R., Vol. 30, p. 115.)

Bethia Barker of Pembroke, Gentlewoman, in consideration of £262, 10s paid by Israel Turner of Pembroke, deeds pieces of land in same near lands of Cornelius Briggs of Pembroke. 9 Dec^r 1743. (P. C. R., Vol. 36, p. 150.)

Lieut. Francis Barker retired from active business in 1713, and gave his estate to his surviving children. To his daughter Ruth he gave a house in Pembroke, which was later that of Dr. Jeremiah Hall.

28 April 1764. Joshua Briggs, Benjamin Turner & Mary his wife, all of Pembroke, Caleb Turner of Hanover gent. & Ruth his wife, William Stanton of Abington yeoman & Lucy his wife, Alexander Bradford yeoman & Hannah his wife (which said Joshua, Mary, Ruth, Lucy & Hannah are the children & Heirs of Cornelius Briggs late of Pembroke & Ruth his wife) in consideration of £61, 6s, 8d paid by Jeremiah Hall of Pembroke physician, deed upland in Pembroke. (Plym. Co. Rec., Vol. 50, p. 207.)

Children of Cornelius³ Briggs, Jr., and Ruth Barker, all probably born in Swansea:

31. i. JOSHUA⁴, m. Zerviah Delano.
- ii. CORNELIUS.
32. iii. MARY, m. Capt. Benjamin Turner.
33. iv. RUTH, m. Caleb Turner, Jr.
- v. LUCY, m. William Stanton.
- vi. HANNAH, m. Alexander Bradford.

16. JAMES³ BRIGGS (4. *Capt. Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born in the Russell house at "the green bush" 2 Mar. 1683, the eldest of the children of Captain Cornelius and his second wife, Mehitabel (Allyn) Annable. His occupation was that of "cordwainer." His place of residence before 1716 was the old John Winter property on the main

road in the South Parish, northwest of Wilson Hill, as shown by the following record or mortgage deed:

Indenture made Feb. 13, 1716 between James Briggs on one side, of Scituate, cordwainer, and Nathaniel Thomas Esq., Isaac Lothrop Esq., Mr. John Watson, Capt. Isaac Little, and Capt. Joshua Cushing commissioners by virtue of an act of Court. (an act for making and emitting the sum of £100,000 in bills of credit). Witnesseth that James Briggs in consideration of £25 paid by the above commissioners, deeds a piece of land in Scituate, bounded southerly by the highway, — westerly by the land of George King, — northerly by the land of Samuel Curtis. Deed includes housings. A mortgage is made. (Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. 13, p. 5.)

This property is now (1936) included in Stony Brook Farm of Henry C. Ford, and the original house is now a part of his residence. The original portion was of the single type, which has since had several additions. James Briggs' son John and grandson, Elisha Briggs, succeeded to the property, which, after the death of Elisha, was sold to Charles Ford from Marshfield, the grandfather of Henry Colman Ford.

In 1725 James Briggs purchased from his neighbor, Deacon George King, lands in Ashford, Conn., that had once been in the possession of James' father, and his uncle, Capt. John Briggs. (See Capt. Cornelius, Capt. John and John Briggs, Jr., Chapter VI.)

Oct. 12, 1725. George King of Scituate in the County of plymouth in New England dedced land in Ashford to *James Briggs* of Scituate in the County afore^{sd} Cordwainer — land purchased partly of John Alden of Duxberc in the county of Plym-outh afore^{sd} ycoman by Deed under his hand & seall Dated ye Ninth day of February 1723 — and the rest of John Alden & hannah his wife by Deed under there hands & Sealls Dated July the first 1724. (Windham County, Conn., Deeds, A 184.)

In 1731 James Briggs deeds 130 acres of the above tract to Thomas Young, Jr.

June 21, 1731. James Briggs of Scituate in the County of plimouth in New England Cordwainer deeds 130 acres of land in

the Township of Ashford to Thomas Young Jr. part of the land purchased of decon George King which sd Tract is since surveyed with other land for s^d James Briggs & Capt. John Alden & bounded together in one tract. (Windham Co. Deeds, A 207.)

December 21, 1744. Nath'l Thomas of plymouth Esq^r, James Briggs Cordwainer & Thomas Young Housewrite both of Scituate & Ruben Carver of Marshfield yeoman all in the County of Plymouth — Division of six hundred & twenty three acres & a half Lying in the Township of Ashford & Lott of one hundred & Eighty acres agreed to belong to James Briggs Nath^l Thomas 100 Acres Reuben Carver 153¼ Acres, Thomas Young 130 Acres. (Windham Co. Deeds, D 139.)

Plymouth County deeds to and from James Briggs are on record:

Nov. 21, 1726. James Briggs, cordwainer, deeds to Job Randall interest in swamp land on N. E. side Chamber's Plain granted to Cornelius Briggs in 1704. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 27, p. 218.)

Aug. 10, 1727. James Briggs deeds land at Chamber's Plain to Philip Turner, near Bump's bridge. 2½ acres. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 24, p. 84.)

Chamber's Plain, also known as Chamberlain Plain, was northeast of Dead Swamp, and is that level tract of land around Sherman's Corner near the boundary line between Scituate and Norwell.

June 1, 1728. Caleb Torrey of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £60, 10s, deeds James Briggs of Scituate cordwainer, 10 acres of land in Scituate, in the "Beechwoods" between Capt. Samuel Turner's land and the *Pattin Line* (Patent Line) adjoining John Dwelley's land. (This deed was never recorded.)

James Briggs married his first wife, Elizabeth Garrett, 7 May 1713, born in Scituate 14 Aug. 1686, a daughter of Joseph Garrett and Ruth Buck, and sister of Mary Garrett, the first wife of his half-brother, Joseph Briggs. Elizabeth (Garrett) Briggs died 28 Dec. 1715.

GARRETT

Richard Garrett was in Scituate before 1636, and was chosen that year as the first Town Clerk of the newly incorporated

town. He was a "skillful penman," and although not a Conihasset Partner, he was clerk of the company for a period of ten years. He was the fourth Deacon of the First Church. Deacon Garrett resided at Scituate Centre, nearly in front of the First Society's meeting-house, as it now stands in 1936. He also had lands at Eagle Nest Swamp, where his sons, John and Joseph Garrett, settled. (Eagle Nest was the large swamp lying south of High Street, now (1936) Thomas Clap Road, in Scituate.) Deacon Richard Garrett married, about 1646 or 1647, Lydia, daughter of Elder Nathaniel and Lydia (Huckstepp) Tilden. Deane states that Deacon Richard "is supposed to have been a son of that Capt. Richard Garrett whose loss is described in Winthrop's Journal (Vol. I, p. 39), and brother of Capt. Robert Garrett of Boston, whose will is dated 1660." We find no record of Deacon Richard Garrett's death in Scituate. On Boston records, 1662, the death of a Richard Garrett is noted, which Deane believed might have been that of Deacon Richard of Scituate.

Deacon Richard and Lydia (Tilden) Garrett had a family of four children, three sons and one daughter, of whom Richard, born in 1659, married in 1695 Persis Peirce, daughter of Capt. Michael Peirce. This youngest son of Deacon Richard apparently succeeded to his father's property. Joseph Garrett, the oldest son, born in 1648, married 17 Jan. 1676 Ruth Buck, daughter of Lieut. Isaac and Frances (Marsh) Buck. Joseph Garrett died in Scituate in 1714. His will bequeathed to wife Ruth; to daughters Ruth Wade, Mary Briggs, Elizabeth Briggs and Jael Garrett certain legacies; and to son Joseph, Jr., "two tenths of a thousand acres, which Mr. John Saffin gave me."

TYLDEN — TILDEN

3. NATHANIEL³ TILDEN (2. *Thomas*², *Richard*¹) born in 1583 in Tenterden, County Kent, was among the earliest of the "Men of Kent" who established plantations at Satuit before 1628, others being Anthony Annable, Thomas Bird, Edward Foster, William Gillson, Henry Merritt, Henry Rowley, Nathaniel Tilden, and, Deane says, "perhaps others." From dates of baptisms of Nathaniel Tilden's children in Tenterden it appears that he was in Scituate some time after Sept. 1625 and before 1629. The first deed on record relating to land in Scituate is dated 1628, when Henry Merritt sells to Nathaniel Tilden "all that land which I had of Goodman Byrd lying within the fence at the North end of the third cliffe, unto the land of Nathaniel



HOU'QUA

A FAMOUS CHINESE MERCHANT REPRESENTING THE CABOTS AND PERKINS IN CHINA
(SEE INTRODUCTION AND CABOT GENEALOGY)

From a painting by Chinnery, 1794; now in possession of Mary Cabot Briggs

Tilden." *He returned to Tenterden*, where he had left his family, and there his son Stephen was baptized 11 Oct. 1629.

While living in Tenterden, Nathaniel Tilden was for many years a Magistrate, and was elected to the office of Mayor. On 4 Mar. 1634, in ship *Hercules*, John Witherley, Master, he returned to New England with wife Lydia, children Joseph, Thomas, Stephen, Marie, Sara, Judith, Lydia, seven servants, and Thomas Lapham, George Sutton, Edward Ford, Edward Jenkins, Sara Couchman, Marie Perien and James Bennett. The First Church of Scituate was organized in 1634, and Nathaniel Tilden was chosen Ruling Elder, which is evidence that he was actively connected or greatly in sympathy with the Independents before leaving England. Nathaniel Tilden was assigned a house lot on Kent Street in the second assignment of lots made in the spring of his arrival with his family, — a lot of five acres, third lot south of Greenfield Lane, upon which he resided. From it he overlooked his farm upon the Third Cliff. He also had lands at Long Marsh, on First Herring Brook, above the Stedman mill, and in 1640, when the "Two Mile" was granted to Scituate settlers, he had a large tract on the south side of North River between Gravelly Beach and Union Bridge, upon which several generations of his descendants resided. It should be noted that Elder Tilden, although one of the earliest of the settlers, received none of the "greate Lottes" on the north side of the river, assigned in 1636 to the "Men of Kent." He was apparently one of those for whom Mr. Hatherly in 1637 was trying to secure from the Colony Court the wider marshes and uplands on the south side of North River.

In May 1637, with Mr. Timothy Hatherly, Nathaniel Tilden was one of the Commissioners on the part of the Plymouth Colony, with Mr. William Aspinwall and Mr. Joseph Andrews on the part of Massachusetts, appointed to settle the line between the two colonies. (Massachusetts Records, Vol. I, p. 192.) They came to no definite agreement, and the so-called Old Colony Line was not finally established until May 1664. Nathaniel Tilden's name appears first upon the list of those who took the "oath of fidelity" between 1633 and 1668. Rebecca Tilden, daughter of Joseph, son of Nathaniel, was born in 1654, and married Lieut. James² Briggs, son of Walter¹.

As Ruling Elder of the First Church, he was very active in the religious life of the settlement. Before the settlement of Mr. Lothrop, when Giles Saxton preached at the house of James Cudworth, while the first meeting-house was being constructed,

Tilden, "being also qualified in some degree to teache," taught occasionally when Mr. Saxton was absent, or assisted him at the simple services. When Mr. Lothrop and a majority of his church members withdrew in 1639, and removed to Barnstable, Elder Tilden stood firmly with the remainder of the church in Scituate, and was a devoted leader of it until the advent of Mr. Chauncey in 1641. Elder Tilden died in Scituate in 1641.

His will gave "to wife Lydia, the income of my stone house, with the lands, in Tenterden in Kent, Eng. in which Richard Lambeth now dwells, &c, &c. To son Joseph, a double portion, that is, as much as both Thomas & Stephen, (in lands, houses, &c. in Scituate and Marshfield). To Lydia and Stephen, my two youngest children, a maintenance till 21. To Judith, a cow. To Mary, wife of Thomas Lapham, 10s. To Sarah, wife of George Sutton 10s."

In the inventory of his estate was an item, — "Ten stocks or swarms of bees, appraised at £10", — one of the earliest notices of the keeping of bees in the colony.

In 1642 his widow, Lydia (Huckstepp) Tilden, married, as her second husband, Timothy Hatherly, who has been spoken of as Nathaniel Tilden's closest friend. The will of Timothy Hatherly, dated 20 Dec. 1664, contains bequests to children of his second wife, Lydia (Huckstepp) Tilden.

TILDEN — HUCKSTEPP

Lydia Huckstepp, wife of Nathaniel Tilden, whom he married about 1606, was baptized in Tenterden 11 Feb. 1587/8, daughter of Stephen Huckstepp of Tenterden, born in 1555, and his first wife, Winifred (Hatch) Wills, who were married in Tenterden 13 Feb. 1583/4. Wife Winifred was buried 6 Oct. 1592, and Stephen married, second, 13 Feb. 1592/3, Priscilla Benison, who was buried 3 Mar. 1594/5. Stephen Huckstepp was buried 20 June 1633. Stephen and Winifred Huckstepp had children:

1. Thomas Huckstepp, bpt. 22 Nov. 1584; m. 28 Mar. 1611 Mary Reeve, who was bur. 3 Dec. 1634. Res. Tenterden.
2. John Huckstepp of Tenterden, yeoman, bpt. 22 May 1586; m. Alice —, and was bur. 15 Oct. 1631. Will dated 6 Nov. 1630 and 15 Aug. 1631. Proved 2 Dec. 1631.
3. *Lydia Huckstepp*, bpt. 11 Feb. 1587/8; m. Nathaniel Tilden.
4. Mary Huckstepp, bpt. 24 Sept. 1592; bur. 31 Aug. 1599.

WILL OF JOHN HATCH (FATHER OF WINIFRED WIFE OF STEPHEN AND
MOTHER OF LYDIA HUCKSTEPP)

23 March 1628 John Hatehe of Tenterden yeoman

To wife Dorothy £100, furniture & books

To children of my brother William Hatch:

To his 2nd son Thomas £10, to his children £50 at 21

Youngest son William £50, if he die to his children.

His dau^r Elizabeth wife of Robert Soan of Brasted £10 to her children
£40 as they reach 21.

His 2nd dau^r Judith wife of Joseph Osborne of Ashford £60 & to her
son Jeremy O £5 at 21

His 3rd dau^r Margaret widow of W^m Wood of Tenterden £20

His 4th dau^r Mary wife of William Shusall of New Romney 22/

His youngest dau^r Ann Hatch £30 if she marry with the consent of
her brothers John & William, but if without (as her sister Shusall) then
but 22/.

To the children of my sister Winifreth:

Her eldest son Thomas Huckstepp £15; her other son John Huck-
stepp £30 & if he die to his sons Stephen & Nathaniel equally

Her eldest dau^r Joan widow of Robert Numan of Grayford 20/ & to
each of her children 10/ at 21

Her 2nd dau Ann wife of William Snatte of Hunton 20/ & her dau
Anna S 20/ at 21

Her 3rd dau^r Susan wife of Benjamin Robus of Kennarton £5 & to
her children Thomas, William & Mary, Ramkyn, 40/ each at 21; & to
her children Katherine, Lidia & Susan Robus 20/ each at 21

Her youngest dau^r Lidia wife of Nathaniel Tilden £10 and to her chil-
dren Thomas, Joseph, Mary, Sarah, Judith & Lidia £20 among them at 21

My sister Katherine's [Dunke] children

My sister Ellynor Chittenden's children

My wife's brother Peter Philpott

To Stephen Huckstepp my book of M^r Calvin's sermons upon the
Galatians

To Nathaniel Tilden, William Snatte, Benjamin Robus etc that have
married my kinswomen 10/ each

Residue to John Hatch, son of my brother William H. sole exor.

Wit. Francis Smith, David Benison, Job Cushman

All my lands etc in Tenterden to John Hatch son of my brother William

To my wife Dorothy £20 a year in addⁿ to her jointure fee

To Liddia wife of Nathaniel Tilden 40/ a year

Probate not completed

Consistory of Canterbury 49/279

Stephen Huckstepp, father of Lydia, wife of Nathaniel Tilden,
was son of Thomas Huckstepp of Tenterden, who married 19

June 1553 Agnes Kerry, and was buried 2 Jan. 1557/8. Will dated 26 Dec. 1557, proved 6 Feb. 1557/8. Wife Agnes executrix. Stephen was their eldest son. Their other children were 2. Elizabeth, baptized 11 Mar. 1556/7, and 3. John Huckstepp, living at time of father's death, and probably the John Huckstepp who was buried 24 Apr. 1591.

WILL OF THOMAS HOOKESTEPE OF TENTERDEN (GRANDFATHER OF LYDIA)

26 Dec. 1557. To be buried in Tenterden churchyard.

For my burial service & deeds of charity 5/

To my son John Hookstepe £20 to be put out by my overseers to some honest man to the most advantage of my said son; the profits to be paid to my wife Agnes till he is 13; & £20 to be paid him with profits at 21.

To my daughter Elizabeth £10 to be delivered to my overseers as above till she is 20 or married.

If Agnes my wife be with child I bequeath it £6-13-4 out of the £20 to my son John, £4 & £2-13-4 out of the £10 to my daughter Elizabeth; at 21 or marriage.

If my children decease under age, one moiety of the share of the one that dieth to the survivors, the other to my wife Agnes & my brother John equally.

If all my children die then £5 to my godson Thomas Hookstepe, the son of my brother Lawrence dec^d & £10 to my brothers Robert & William equally & the other £15 to my wife and brother John equally.

To my servant Sybell Underwood a lamb of a year old at Lamas next after my decease.

Residue to wife Agnes sole executrix; William Besfeld Thomas Holnesse & my brother John to be overseers.

Wit: William Besfeld, John Douny, Richard Hart & Thos. Holdnes.

Proved at Canterbury 6 Feb. 1557/8 (A 31/166)

JAMES³ BRIGGS married 4 Oct. 1716, for his second wife, HANNAH STOWELL, born 9 July 1692 in Hingham, daughter of SAMUEL² and RACHEL (GILL) STOWELL.

STOWELL OR STOEL

SAMUEL¹ STOWELL, SR., born in England about 1625, was mentioned in the diary of the Rev. Peter Hobart as early as 1649. He resided in Hingham, Mass., on Fort Hill Street, where he died 9 Nov. 1683. His will, dated 27 Oct. 1683, was proved 30 Jan. 1684/5. The inventory of his estate, appraised by John Marsh and Thomas Lincoln, amounted to £185 1s 2d. The wife

of SAMUEL¹, SR., was MARY FARROW, to whom he was married 25 Oct. 1649. She was born in Hingham, England, 22 Sept. 1633, and came to Hingham, New England, with her parents, JOHN and FRANCES FARROW, in 1635. MARY (FARROW) STOWELL married for a second husband, 10 Oct. 1689, Joshua Beal, widower. She died in Hingham 24 Oct. 1708. (The name later was written *Farrar*.)

SAMUEL¹ and MARY (FARROW) STOWELL had a family of eleven children. Their son SAMUEL² STOWELL, JR., born in Hingham, Mass., 8 July 1655, resided on Fort Hill Street, where he died 21 Sept. 1695, aged 40 years. His estate inventoried £196 12s as appraised by Joshua Beal and Thomas Gill. Letters of administration were granted his widow Rachel 16 July 1696. Articles of agreement made 31 Jan. 1715/16 between the children of Samuel Stowell, deceased, late of Hingham, and his wife Rachel, relative to the distribution of property. (Suffolk Records.)

SAMUEL² STOWELL, JR., married 13 Jan. 1684/5, RACHEL GILL, born in Hingham, Mass., 3 Oct. 1661, the youngest child of THOMAS GILL, born in England about 1616, and his wife, HANNAH OTIS, daughter of the first JOHN OTIS. (See chapter on Otis family.)

William³ Stowell (Samuel², Samuel¹) born in Hingham 1694, a brother of Hannah (Stowell) Briggs, died unmarried 20 Apr. 1771 in Hingham, aged 76 years. Administration was granted on the estate of William Stowell, late of Hingham, deceased, to Seth Briggs of Pembroke, Plymouth County, and to Adam Stowell of Hingham, Suffolk County, on 25 Apr. 1771. Inventory showed personal property of £27 13s 4d and real estate in Abington, Weymouth and Hingham of £862. (Suffolk Records.) His unmarried sister Rachel Stowell having died before him, he divided his estate between six children of his sister, Hannah Briggs, viz.: John, James, Seth, William, Rachel Hatch and Hannah Holmes, and four children of his brother, Samuel Stowell, viz.: Adam, Joseph, Samuel and Rachel Remington, £1/10 to each.

HANNAH (STOWELL) BRIGGS died about 1749 or 1750. The seven living children of James and Hannah had married before the death of their mother, with the exception of William, the youngest of the family. For his third wife, *James Briggs* married in Sept. 1751 the widow of a neighbor, Anthony Stetson, who lived upon what has been known as "the Molly Stetson farm" on the north side of Buttonwood or Curtis Hill. This farm is now (1936) owned and occupied by Mrs. Anna (Nichols) Burns.

The farm was once owned by Thomas Ingham, Jr., son of Thomas the weaver. Thomas, Sr.'s, wife, Mary Ingham, in Mar. 1676, was indicted for witchcraft and accused of having bewitched Mehitable Woodworth and others. She was tried by a jury of twelve men, who brought in a verdict of "not guilty."

Widow Anna (Smith) Stetson was a daughter of Joseph and Ann (Hatch) Smith. She married Anthony Stetson, a great grandson of Cornet Robert, in 1717, by whom she had a family of eleven children. Both James and Anna having property and grown children when their marriage was contemplated, they entered into an anti-nuptial contract, which is referred to in James' will.

Fragments of this contract, written upon both sides of a single sheet of paper, are now (1936) in the possession of a descendant of James Briggs (Mrs. J. W. Foster of Norwell). Several lines are missing where it had been folded.

COVENANT ENTERED INTO BY JAMES BRIGGS AND WIDOW ANNA
STETSON, BEFORE THEIR MARRIAGE IN 1751

had . . . Solemnised the s^d James Briggs S^d
Anna Stetson, And whereas The s^d Ann Stands Siezed and Possessed of some Estate Real & personal and ye s^d James Stands Siezed & possessed of an Estate both Real & Personal And the s^d James & Anna have agreed and Concluded That if the s^d Marriage should be solemnized & ye s^d Anna should overlive the s^d James that she should not Demand any Dower In his Estate nor any of his personal Effects Saving what therein in his will, and t s^d James should not by ye s^d marriage be Entitled to Any of s^d Anna's Estate Saving the Artieles in the Schedule hereto annexed which ye s^d Ann to earry to ye s^d James in marriage of ye value as there in Set down, —

Now this Indenture Further witnesseth That it is Covenanted and agreed upon by all parties to those presents — as Follows that is to say — The s^d Anna by ye Consent Anna shall have Libertie at any time During the Coverture to Devise ye whole or any part of ye above Granted premisses by her last will and Testament — and Further That the s^d James his Exe^r or Adm^{er} shall and will at his Decease Redeliver s^d artieles mentioned in s^d Shedule or the value of those which shall be lost or worn out unto the s^d Anna If she be then Living, or to her Exe^r or adm^{er} If she be Dead. — And Agreement of doth hereby Grant Assign and make over unto the s^d Isaee all

her Estate Real and Personal, Saving the Articles in ye s^d Schedule To Hold the same to him s^d Isaac his Exe^{sr} or Adm^{sr} to ye uses Intents & purposes herein Expressed & to no other use whatsoever. And it is Declared & Expressed to be ye True Intent & meaning of all the s^d Parties to those Psents That The Grants Before mentioned made to ye s^d Isaac are Covenant with s^d James his Ex^{sr} — Adm^{sr} that In case? ye s^d Marriage should take place? and ye s^d Anna should over Live the s^d James that ye s^d Anna shall not at any Time Demand any Dower in s^d James's Estate, or any of his Personal Estate Saving ye afores^d Articles or their value of them and what s^d James shall Give her in his will, and ye s^d Anna does hereby Covenant to Save s^d Isaac with respect to ye same. In witness whereof the above Parties have hereto set their hands & Seal, the Day & year first above written.

Signed Sealed & Delivered

In presence

ABED (?) DAMMON

ABIEL STETSON

JAMES BRIGGS

her

ANNA × STETSON

mark

ISAAC STETSON

Isaac Stetson was son of Anthony and Anna Stetson, and inherited the farm before mentioned (now (1936) Mrs. Burns').

JAMES BRIGGS died in 1754. He signed his will on 21 Feb. 1754, and it was allowed 14 Mar. 1754. His third wife, Anna (Smith) Briggs, died 16 May 1792.

CERTIFIED COPY OF JAMES BRIGGS' WILL

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN; the twenty first day of February Anno Domi Seventeen hundred & fifty four I JAMES BRIGGS of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in New England Cordwainer, being weak of body but of sound mind and memory do make and ordain this my Last will and testament; first I recommend my Soul to God that gave it and my Body to the Earth to be decently buried at the Discretion of my Exexr. hereafter named and as touching & conserning such worldly Estate as God hath blest me with in this life I Give and Devise and Dispose the Same in manner and form following —

Imprs I Give to my well beloved wife Anna Briggs, all the Goods and household stuf she brought with her according to Covenant made before marriage Referance thereunto being had,

and Six pounds lawfull money to be paid her by my executor in One year after my Decease, if She lives so long and also my Great Bible and Looking Glass and one Chest Draws —

Item I Give to my son John Briggs all my Homsted where I now Dwell Containing Forty acres more or less and all my salt meadow Excepting the two lower points next the herring River and one half of my wood lot near Isaac Damons in Scituate, to him his heirs and assigns forever, he or they paying such Legacies as I shall hereafter order

Item I Give to my son JAMES BRIGGS my Lott of Land Lying near Nathan Pickles his land Containing twenty four acres be it more or less, and the two Lower Points of my salt meadow next the Herring River and one half of my wood lot lying near Isaac Damon such Legacies as I shall hereafter order —

Item I Give to my three sons Seth Briggs Cornelius Briggs and William Briggs all my lands Lying in *Ashford in the County of Connticut* Containing about two hundred acres be it more or less with all the Privileges and Appurtenances thereunto Belonging also I give to my son Seth Briggs twenty seven pounds lawfull money to be paid within two years after my Decease by my son James Briggs Either in money or Goods at moneys price whome I order to pay the same —

Item I Give to my son Cornelius Briggs thirty three pounds Six Shillings and Eight pence lawfull money to be paid him by my Execr. in two years after my Decease, and also One Gun and Sword —

Item I Give to my son William Briggs thirty three pounds six shillings and Eight pence to be paid him within two years after my Decease by my Execr. whome I order to pay the Same

Item I Give to my Daughter Hannah Holmes two Beds in the Chamber with all the furniture Belonging to them and the Case of Draws, and to my Daughter Rachel Curtis I Give my square Bed and all the Furniture and that Bed I Lent her and my Loomb and all the tackleing Belonging to it and all the Rest of my indoor moveables that is to say my household stuf not wise Given away I Give to my two Daughters Hannah Holmes and Rachel Curtis to bee equally divided Between them —

Item I Give to my son John Briggs all my stock and and Outdoor moveables, and all my Debts that is Due to me in Order to paying Debts and Legacies, I Give all my Barrells and meat tubs to my son John my hetchel, I Give to my sons John Briggs and James Briggs and my I Give to my sons James Briggs & Cornelius Briggs and William Briggs to be divided

among them, and all the Rest of my Estate not Given away, I Give to my son John Briggs, and Lastly I do hereby nominate and appoint my son John Briggs my Execr. of this my last will and testament —

JAMES BRIGGS (seal)

Signed Sealed and Deliverd by the said James Briggs to his last will and testament in presents off

WILLIAM WILLSON

JOB NEAL

JOHN NICHOLSON

LYDIA × BAKER

her mark

Plymouth Ss. March 14th, 1754. This will being exhibited by the Execr. therein named for probt, the said William Willson Job Neal John Nicholson and Lydia Baker made oath that they saw the said James Briggs Sign and Seal and heard him Declare this Instrument to bee his last Last Will and Testament and that they at the same time in in his presents Subscribed as Witnesses and that he was then of sound mind

Before me JOHN CUSHING Judge of Probt.

Child of James Briggs and Elizabeth Garrett:

i. ELIZABETH, b. 20 Dec. 1715; d. 3 Nov. 1723.

Children of JAMES³ BRIGGS and HANNAH STOWELL:

ii. JOHN, b. 28 Sept. 1717; d. 3 Nov. 1717.

34. iii. JOHN, b. 1 Jan. 1718/19; m. Abigail Neall.

35. iv. JAMES⁴, b. 27 Feb. 1719/20; m. HANNAH BARKER.

36. v. SETH, b. 28 Aug. 1721; m. Abigail Church.

vi. JOB, b. 28 Oct. 1722; d. 9 Nov. 1722.

vii. ELISHA, b. 26 Oct. 1723; "died at sea" (C. B. Mss.) without issue.

37. viii. HANNAH, b. 27 Nov. 1724; m. John Holmes.

38. ix. RACHEL, b. 23 Dec. 1726; m. Samuel Curtis.

39. x. CORNELIUS, b. 3 Nov. 1728; m. Jerusha Church.

40. xi. WILLIAM, b. 23 July 1731; m. Elizabeth Copeland.

CHAPTER VIII

DESCENDANTS OF WALTER BRIGGS

GENERATION IV

INCLUDING CAPT. JAMES¹ BRIGGS, WHO WAS A SOLDIER IN THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AND IN THE REVOLUTION, AS WELL AS A FAMOUS SHIPBUILDER

17. DEBORAH⁴ BRIGGS (9. *John, Jr.*³, *John*², *Walter*¹) was born at Conihassett in the old homestead in 1713, and baptized in the First Church by the Rev. Nathaniel Pitcher, 20 Feb. 1714. She was married 26 June 1735 in Boston, by the Rev. Joshua Gee, to Thomas Savage, Esq., of Boston. She died at Belle House Neck, at the home of her grandfather, Judge John Cushing, while there on a visit, and her remains lie in the Cushing family lot on the Hill near by, with those of an infant child, which was born and which expired on the day of the mother's death. (Deane's "History," p. 253.)

SAVAGE

Major Thomas Savage was born at Taunton, England, 1606, son of William Savage of Taunton, County Somerset, blacksmith. Thomas was apprenticed Merchant Tailors, London, 9 Jan. 1621, and came to New England Apr. 1635 in the *Planter* from London, aged 27 years. (In this same vessel came Mrs. Eglin (Hatherley) Hanford, and daughters Margaret and Elizabeth. See Chapter IX, Turner families.) In 1637 Thomas Savage was the fourth signer of the Roll of the Artillery Company. That year (1637) he had married for his first wife Faith Hutchinson, daughter of William and Ann Hutchinson.* He with other officers of the Artillery Company who were her adherents were disarmed by order of the General Court until they recanted. Savage's Genealogical Dictionary says, "For

* Ann Hutchinson was a direct ancestor of Mary Cabot Briggs, mother of L. Cabot Briggs. (See "History of the Cabot Family," by Briggs.)

receiving the revelations of her mother or entertaining the opinion of Rev. John Wheelwright he was disarmed, and went with Gov. Coddington and others to Rhode Island where he was in 1638, but soon returned to Boston." His Boston residence was on the corner of Fleet and North streets. He was a merchant, and in King Philip's War he was commissioned Major in Major General Denison's Company of the Massachusetts troops, 1675/6. Thomas Savage was respectively Sergeant, Lieutenant and Captain in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company for forty-five years. He died 1681/2, aged 75, and is buried in King's Chapel. His son, Thomas Savage, baptized 17 May 1640, married in 1664 Elizabeth, daughter of John Scottow, by whom he had children: Thomas, born 2 Aug. 1668, and Habijah, born 10 Sept. and baptized 13 Sept. 1674, one of whom was the father of Thomas Savage, Esq., who married Deborah Briggs.

Children of Deborah⁴ Briggs and Thomas Savage, Esq.:

- i. THOMAS SAVAGE, b. 11 Dec. 1736. In the "South Carolina Marriages" is found the following:

"On Monday 11 May 1767 Capt. Thomas Savage of the Charles Town company of Light Infantry was married at Savannah in Georgia, to Miss Polly Butler, only daughter of the late William Butler Esq. of that province." Also, "Charlestown S. C. In this city Thomas Heyward Jr. Esq. to Miss Susanna Savage, daughter of Thomas Savage Esq. Monday 8 May 1786."

- ii. JOHN SAVAGE, b. 11 June 1739.
- iii. HABIJAH SAVAGE, b. 27 Apr. 1741; m. Elizabeth Tudor. Hon. James Savage, eminent genealogist, and a president of the Massachusetts Historical Society, was their son and grandson of Deborah Briggs.⁴
- iv. ALEXANDER SAVAGE, b. 17 Mar. 1742.
- v. HANNAH SAVAGE, b. 20 Aug. 1744.

June 1, 1793. William Thompson of Boston in the County of Suffolk, etc. Esq. Guardian of Hannah Savage of Boston, in consideration of \$200 from James Leach of Boston, broker, . . . undivided third part of piece of land adjoining on Prince Street Boston, belonging by inheritance to said Hannah Savage, being land conveyed from Hannah Jolles to John Briggs, dated 24 Nov. 1714. Recorded in Book 28 p. 180 of Suffolk Records . . . expressly understood that the land to be conveyed by this deed is one undivided third part of the whole Quantity of said land that descended to said Hannah

and her elder Brother John Savage by Inheritance from their mother Deborah Savage, the Daughter of said John Briggs, and no more. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 176, p. 156.) (See Chapter VI, Generation II.)

- vi. Infant child born in Scituate, who died at time of mother's death.

18. CORNELIUS⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 26 Sept. 1705 in Scituate. He married in Scituate 9 Apr. 1741 Lydia Stodder, a daughter of Hezekiah Stodder, Sr., from Hingham, who married 1706 Lois Sylvester, daughter of Israel of Scituate. Hezekiah Stodder settled on Gillman Plain (between Assinippi and Ridge Hill) in 1711. He was a son of John Stodder of Hingham and Hannah Bryant, daughter of John Bryant of Scituate, who were married in 1665. John Bryant settled on the Second Herring Brook about 1643. Hawke Cushing and his son Deacon Thomas owned the estate at a later date (now, 1936, Prof. Arthur Dewing's). (See chapter on Otis family.) The home of Israel Sylvester was on the margin of the Second Herring Brook, very near the site of the house of John Bryant. In 1829 it was demolished by Elnathan Cushing, whose wife was a great-granddaughter of Israel.

Richard Sylvester, father of Israel, was of Weymouth in 1633. The minister of Weymouth, Rev. Robert Lenthal, who affirmed "That all baptised persons should be admitted to the Communion without further trial," was ordered to retract this sentiment in presence of the General Court, it being a heresy to be noticed by the government. He complied with the order. (Deane, p. 348.) Not so Richard Sylvester. The Second Church of Scituate was organized in Feb. 1642, and that year, in company with his friends, Thomas Rawlins, Thomas Clap, James Torrey (his wife's uncle), and William Holbrook, Richard Sylvester removed from Weymouth to Scituate, where they became members of the newly organized society, whose covenant concluded with the following words: "and we shall not refuse into our society such of God's people, whose hearts God shall incline to joyne themselves unto us, for the furtherance of the worship of God amongst us, and the good of their souls."

This liberal covenant attracted a group of friends from Weymouth, out of sympathy with officials who had compelled their former pastor to retract his utterances. James Torrey settled a few rods south of Neal Gate, where Neal Gate Road joins the main road between Greenbush and Norwell villages; Thomas Rawlins on the North River "greate lotte" of Anthony Annable, later Deacon Thomas King's; Thomas Clap, southwest of Stockbridge mill pond, on the Jenkins farm (later so called); William Holbrook on Conihassett lands near Capt. Michael Peirce's. Richard Sylvester settled in the Two-Mile. His wife was Naomi Torrey, a sister of Lieut. James Torrey. Capt. Joseph Sylvester, son of Richard, and an elder brother of Israel, settled north of Church Hill, where several generations of the Waterman family have resided. In the Indian raid of 1676 his house was burned. He was a Captain under Col. Benjamin Church in the Eastern Expedition in 1689. In the Phips' Canada Expedition of 1690 he was Captain of a company in which there were sixteen men from Scituate, many of whom never returned. Captain Sylvester died in this expedition. His will was a verbal one, and was proven by three of the soldiers of his company in the Court at Plymouth. In 1765 the plantation known as "Silvester Canada" was granted to the heirs of Capt. Joseph Sylvester and to members of his company for their services in the expedition of 1690. In 1786 the plantation was incorporated as the town of Turner, Maine, so named for the Hon. Charles Turner of Scituate, who was at that time a Senator of the State of Massachusetts, and who had been largely instrumental in establishing the claims to this land for the descendants of the soldiers in that expedition.

Cornelius and Lydia (Stodder) Briggs had a daughter Susanna, baptized 11 Nov. 1744 in the First Church of Scituate by Rev. Shearjashub Bourn. No further record of this family is found in Scituate.

19. MARY⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 26 Aug. 1707. She married 10 Apr. 1729 Eliab Studley, born in Scituate in 1706, a son of Benja-

min Studley, who settled in 1680 near Merritt's Brook southeast of Conihassett Hall and the bridge over the brook. He married Mary Merritt, daughter of John and granddaughter of Henry Merritt, the early planter, at Satuit before 1628. Eliab Studley purchased in 1769 the house on Pleasant Street, West Hanover, north of West Street, built in 1740 by Joseph Curtis, known as Governor Curtis. Eliab Studley was a tavern keeper, and owned the sawmill on Pleasant Street (also known as Whiting Street) called "Eliab's mill." This mill was later a shingle mill belonging to Nahum Stetson. Eliab Studley died 13 Dec. 1785. His wife Mary⁴ (Briggs) died 19 Oct. 1797, aged 90 years.

Children of Mary⁴ Briggs and Eliab Studley:

- i. BENJAMIN STUDLEY, b. 1730; m. Hannah Litchfield.
- ii. MARTHA STUDLEY, b. 1732; m. John Shaw 1752.
- iii. ELIZABETH STUDLEY, b. 1734; m. John Robinson 1754.
- iv. THANKFUL STUDLEY, b. 1737; m. (1) —; (2) Seth Keith 1775.
- v. JAMES STUDLEY, bpt. 24 June 1739; lost at sea.
- vi. JOSEPH STUDLEY, bpt. 7 June 1741; m. Rebecca Stetson 1765.
- vii. MARY STUDLEY, bpt. 26 June 1743.
- viii. LUCY STUDLEY, bpt. 20 Oct. 1745; m. Seth Stetson 1765.
- ix. ABIGAIL STUDLEY, bpt. 21 July 1747; m. Thomas Curtis 1770.
- x. DEBORAH STUDLEY, b. 1749; m. — Watkins.
- xi. ELIAB STUDLEY, b. 19 May 1751.
- xii. JAPHET STUDLEY, b. 25 July 1756; m. Rachel Fearing 1780.

20. JOHN⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born at Conihassett, Scituate, 18 Dec. 1709, a shipwright, and died in Scituate about 1791. He resided on the Lieut. James² Briggs farm at Farm Neck, which Lieutenant James² conveyed to his son Joseph³, father of John⁴, in 1732.

Nov. 23, 1791. John Briggs of Scituate, shipwright, Ichabod Briggs of Cohasset, shipwright, Daniel Briggs yeoman, Thankful Briggs, Sarah Briggs, Deborah Briggs single woman, Ebenezer Ellms mariner & Judith Ellms his wife, all of Scituate, are seized of a tract of land near land of Capt. (Hayward) Peirce in

same; also, Salt Meadow Land known as Bailey's Meadow, being part of the real estate of John Briggs late of Scituate deceased. In consideration of £83, 0s, ½d paid by Ichabod Briggs, they deed the above named land. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 72, p. 240.)

Ichabod Briggs owned land at Farm Neck which he sold to Job Turner in 1792.

John⁴ Briggs married 19 Aug. 1744 Judith Damon, baptized 12 July 1730, daughter of Ichabod, Jr., and Judith (Peaks) Damon. Ichabod Damon, son of Experience, was born 26 June 1690. He was known as Ichabod, Jr., to distinguish him from a relative of the same name. They were descended from John Damon, who with his sister Hannah came to Scituate when they were very young, being wards of their uncle, William Gillson, the miller, who built the first gristmill in the plantation, a windmill on the Third Cliff in 1636. *Gillson's "greate lotte" on the North River, granted him in 1636, adjoined William Vassall's. The east part of the lot was later owned by Thomas Nichols, shipwright, who built vessels there, as well as Israel Hobart, and was later known as "Hobart shipyard at Hobart's Landing."* James⁴ Briggs succeeded to the yard about 1750, and built there among other ships the famous ship *Columbia*. (See 35. James⁴ Briggs.) John Damon succeeded to the property of his uncle William Gillson. His first wife was Katherine Merritt, daughter of Henry Merritt; his second, Martha Howland of Plymouth. Experience Damon, born 1662, son of John and Martha (Howland), lived near Pincin Hill.

Judith Peaks, born 1 Jan. 1718, was a granddaughter of William Peaks, who lived at Hoop Pole Neck, east of "the stepping stones," and married in 1650 Judith, widow of Lawrence Litchfield. (See Chapter VI, 11. Mary Briggs (Litchfield).)

Children of John⁴ Briggs and Judith Damon:

41. i. JOHN, b. 17 Nov. 1745; bpt. 30 Sept. 1753; m. Judith Collier.
42. ii. ICHABOD, bpt. 30 Sept. 1751; m. Sarah Collier.
- iii. JOSEPH, bpt. 30 Sept. 1753; d. young.
- iv. THANKFUL, bpt. 30 Sept. 1753; was living unnm. in 1791.

- v. JUDITH, bpt. 7 July 1754; d. early.
- vi. DANIEL, bpt. 6 Nov. 1757, living in 1791, probably unm.
- vii. SARAH { twins, bpt. 25 Apr. 1758; Sarah, m. Simeon
- viii. DEBORAH { Vinal after 1791; Deborah was living unm.
- { in 1791.
- 43. ix. JUDITH, bpt. 30 Oct. 1763; m. Ebenezer Ellms.

21. JOSEPH⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born at Farm Neck (Conihassett) 1714, and baptized 29 May 1715 in First Church of Scituate by Rev. Nathaniel Pitcher. He was a shipwright, and resided on Ship Cove Lane, Cohasset (Elm Street), in the house now (1936), occupied by his descendants, and known as the Mapes house.

In 1757 Joseph⁴ Briggs was engaged in the business of supplying fishermen, including "strong liquors," and on the sixth day of Jan. 1757 he presented a petition to the General Court of the Province of Massachusetts Bay for a license to enable him to meet the obligation of his engagement with them, after having secured the approval of the Selectmen for such a license. This petition was consented to, and signed by Governor Phipps.

Suffolk County Deeds, Lib. 93, p. 268

Dated 17th day of January in the 23^d year of his Majestys Reign A.D. 1749. James Stutson of Hingham in the County of Suffolk in New England & Margaret his wife in consideration of £160 paid by Joseph Briggs Jrn^r of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in N. E. Shipwright, conveys a certain dwelling House now standing on the lane leading to Ship Cove in Cohasset in Hingham, known by the name of Ship Cove lane, on the southerly side of said lane which is the House designed by said Stutson for Joshua Doan Oakes deceased, together with the land whereon said house standeth, etc. Adjoining Israel Whitcomb's land.

Signed	JAMES STUTSON	& Seal.
	MARGARET STUTSON	& Seal.

Recorded Feb'y 19, 1760.

Dated 29th day of October A.D. 1753, and recorded on same day as above, deed of a piece of land containing about 9 acres and a quarter, which Joseph Briggs had previously purchased from John Jacob of Hingham, adjoining the James Stutson Homestead on the S. W. side, adjoining land of Thomas James

and Daniel Tower, running to a fence on the Southwesterly side of the Hill called Bear Hill. (Suffolk Co. Deeds, Lib. 93, p. 269.)

Dated 13th day of April A.D. 1759. Recorded June 6th, 1759. Samuel Bates of Hingham in the County of Suffolk in N. E. in Consideration of £130 paid by Daniel Lincoln Gentleman, Joseph Briggs Shipwright, Thomas Lincoln & Francis Lincoln yeomen all of Hingham, Convey Daniel, Joseph, Thomas & Francis a certain piece of meadow in the little Harbour in Hingham Containing about two aeres, bounded Northeasterly, Southeasterly & Southwesterly with the land of Moses Cushing, & Northwesterly with the Flatts, and also all his right in the Flatts in said Harbour, and *also*, about $4\frac{1}{2}$ aeres lying in the great Neck, bounded Northeast & S. E. with land laid out to Widow Susanna Warwick's thirds, and also about $\frac{1}{4}$ aere of Marsh at the place called Ship Cove being part of Marsh laid out to Thomas Lincoln Weaver, bounded Westerly on the Marsh formerly belonging to James Stutson, Easterly with the Cove, Northwesterly with the Town's way, and Northerly with Salt Marsh belonging to John Pritchardt with the *Wharf Warehouses & Stores* on said Marsh. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 93, p. 58.)

Joseph⁴ Briggs married 31 May 1750 Widow Rachel (Cudworth) Bailey, baptized in First Church, Scituate, 10 Apr. 1720, a daughter of Nathaniel Cudworth, son of Jonathan, and grandson of Gen. James Cudworth. Her mother was Sarah Joy of Cohasset. Rachel Cudworth married, first, 24 Apr. 1744 Seth Bailey, born 17 Sept. 1717 in Scituate, son of Joseph and Jerusha (—) Bailey. Seth Bailey died 1 July 1746, leaving a son Seth, baptized 10 Aug. 1745. Rachel (Cudworth) Briggs died in Cohasset 25 Dec. 1758, aged 39 years. Joseph⁴ Briggs died 10 Jan. 1760. He made his will on 28 Aug. 1759, "being sick in body, but in sound mind," dividing his estate equally between his sons Joseph⁵ and Seth⁵ Briggs. (Suffolk Co. Rec., Vol. 56, p. 75, on file No. 12237.) On 18 Jan. 1760 Isaac Lincoln Tertius and Thomas Lincoln, Jr., were appointed guardians of the minor children.

Children of Joseph⁴ Briggs and Rachel Cudworth:

i. BARNABAS, b. 12 May 1751; d. 25 Mar. 1752.

44. ii. SETH, b. 20 June 1756; m. Deborah Lothrop.

45. iii. JOSEPH, b. about 1758; m. Betsey Stodder.

22. ABIGAIL⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate about 1720 to 1722. She married 11 Nov. 1754 Gideon Rose.

Thomas Rose was in the Two-Mile in 1660. In 1666 he married for a second wife Alice (Hatch) Pickles, widow of Jonas, who lived on Winter Street, Norwell, a half mile south of Sherman's Corner, on the west side of the way. When he married the Widow Pickles he removed to her residence in Scituate, and made a covenant with the minor children of Jonas Pickles, "that if God give him children he will give his estate equally to those children, and to the children of Jonas Pickles." Thomas¹ Rose had a son Gideon² Rose, born about 1650, whose son Jeremiah³ Rose, born about 1675, married 1698 Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Anthony Collamore. After the death of Jeremiah Rose, 23 Feb. 1709/10, his widow Elizabeth (Collamore) married, second, 31 July 1710 Timothy Symmes, an early grammar schoolmaster in Scituate. Gideon⁴ Rose (son of Jeremiah and Elizabeth) was born 8 May 1701 (baptized Second Church, Scituate, 1 Oct. 1704).

Thomas Rose² (Thomas,¹ Sr.) had a son Gideon³, born 1702, married 1723 Lydia Turner, born 1705, daughter of Thomas and Martha (Sylvester) Turner. Gideon³ and Elizabeth (Turner) Rose had a son Gideon⁴ who lived near the north end of Jordan Lane, a little west of the residence of the late Miss Florence M. Cushing (now Mrs. Helen (Cushing) Bird's). Gideon⁴ is probably the Gideon⁴ Rose who married 1754 Abigail⁴ Briggs.

Abigail (Briggs) Rose died before July 1756. On 12 July 1756 Gideon⁴ Rose of Scituate married Ann Howland of Pembroke. (Recorded as his second marriage.) On baptisms of Second Church, Scituate, 6 Nov. 1757 Gideon⁵ Rose, Jr., was baptized. Name of mother not recorded.

23. EZRA⁴ BRIGGS (10. *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born at Conihassett and baptized in Scituate First Church by Rev. Shearjashub Bourn 22 Aug. 1725. He resided in Scituate until about 1766, when he removed to a farm in Hanover, on the east side of Washington Street that has been owned by the family for several generations.

Ezra⁴ Briggs served in the Revolution in Capt. Amos Turner's Company.

Ezra Briggs, Private, Capt. Amos Turner's co., Col. Titcomb's regt.; service 2 mos. 6 days; company detached agreeable to



SARAH ELLIOT
DAUGHTER OF MAJ.-GEN. SIMON ELLIOT, AND WIFE OF COL. T. H. PERKINS
(See Chapter XXVII)

resolve of April 11, 1777, and marched to Tiverton, R. I. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 505.)

Ezra Briggs was in Captain Soper's Company, in service at Marshfield, at the Gurnet and at Scituate, during three months from June to Dec. 1775. He was of Hanover, and in 1776 was in Capt. Hayward Pierce's Company, Col. Jeremiah Hall's Regiment, at Bristol, R. I.

In a descriptive list of men to reinforce the Continental Army for six months, agreeable to the resolve of 5 June 1780, he is described as 21 years old, 5 feet 8 inches tall, light complexion. He arrived at Springfield 10 July, marched to camp 11 July, 1780. He appears on a list of men at Camp Totoway, 25 Oct. 1780. He marched on alarm from Hanover to Cohasset in Mar. 1776, and was on the seacoast defence as early as 1775, under the direction of the field officers of the 1st Plymouth County Regiment. He marched on the alarm of 17 Apr. 1775 from Hanover, in Capt. Amos Turner's Company, Col. John Bailey's Regiment, when he served fourteen days. He marched to Tiverton, R. I., on Col. Amos Turner's Company, Col. Titcomb's Regiment, on an alarm, being detached by Resolve of Council 11 Apr. 1777. He served at this time 2 months 6 days. In 1778, 5 June, he enlisted and served for 8 months 8 days in Capt. James Harlow's Company, Col. Ezra Wood's Regiment, to guard the passage of the North River.

Ezra⁴ Briggs married, first (int.), 27 Nov. 1756 Joanna Cudworth, baptized 9 Sept. 1722, daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah (Joy) Cudworth, and a sister of Rachel (Cudworth) Bailey, who married Ezra's brother, Joseph⁴ Briggs. Joanna (Cudworth) Briggs died in Scituate 14 Dec. 1763 and Ezra⁴ married for a second wife, on 9 Dec. 1764 Lydia Neal, born 8 Apr. 1749, daughter of Joseph and Alice (Palmer) Neal of Scituate. Ezra⁴ Briggs died in Hanover 22 Oct. 1804 and his wife Lydia (Neal) on 26 Nov. 1805.

Children of Ezra⁴ Briggs and Joanna Cudworth:

i. SARAH (SALLY), bpt. 12 June 1758 in First Church, Scituate; d. 24 May 1800.

ii. RACHEL, bpt. 1 June 1759 in First Church; d. 21 Feb. 1777 in Hanover.

46. iii. EZRA⁵, bpt. 1 June 1760 in First Church; m. (1) Margaret Curtis; (2) Lydia Southworth.

- iv. CHARLES, bpt. 29 May 1763 in First Church; d. unm. in Hanover.
- v. NATHANIEL, bpt. 14 Nov. 1763 in First Church; d. 31 Dec. 1817 in Hanover.

Children of Ezra⁴ Briggs and Lydia Neal:

- vi. LYDIA, b. —; d. 14 May 1766 in Hanover.
- vii. MOSES, bpt. 4 Oct. 1767 in First Church; d. 27 July 1806 in Hanover; unm.
- viii. ENOCH, bpt. 10 June 1770 in First Church.
- ix. LYDIA, bpt. 5 Oct. 1777 in Hanover; m. Benjamin D. Fillmore; d. 1848.
- x. JOSEPH, bpt. 5 Oct. 1777 in Hanover.

24. LEAH⁴ BRIGGS (13. *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 22 Sept. 1720 in the old Briggs house north of Stockbridge Mill Pond at Greenbush, now (1936) Walter Sprague's. She married 23 Feb. 1743 Josiah Damon, born in Nov. 1724, son of Iehabod, Jr., and Judith (Peaks) Damon, and brother of Judith Damon, wife of 20. John Briggs. Josiah Damon died in 1787 or 1788. His estate was administered by his widow Leah and her brother, Benjamin Briggs, Jr., in 1788. The location of their homestead is indicated in the following deed as adjoining lands of Joseph Otis, who lived in the "Two Staeks" on Mann Lot Road. (See chapter on Otis.)

Dated 15 May 1788. Benjamin⁴ Briggs yeoman, and Leah Damon, widdow, both of Scituate adm^{rs} on estate of Josiah Damon late of same deceased, in consideration of £92 3s, 6d paid us by John Damon of Scituate. In their power as adms. they deed land in Scituate. Part of homestead of deceased. Near land of Joseph Otis. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 73, p. 264.)

Dated May 15, 1788. Benjamin Briggs⁴, yeoman, & Leah⁴ Daman widow, both of Scituate, administrators on the estate of Josiah Damon late of same. In consideration of £18, 3s, 9d paid by John Briggs, in fullfilment of their duty, deed salt marsh land in Scituate. (Vol. 70, p. 20.)

Dated 15 May 1788. Benjamin⁴ Briggs, yeoman & Leah⁴ Damon, widow, both of Scituate, administrators on the estate of Josiah Damon late of same. Acting as such, in consideration of

£25, 9s 3d paid by Thomas Mann yeoman, of same, deeds upland and swamp land. (Vol. 70, p. 72.)

Dated 28 April 1791. Benjamin⁴ Briggs, yeoman, & Leah⁴ Damon widow, both of Scituate, adms. on estate of Josiah Damon late of same. In consideration of £120, paid by Isaac Litchfield of same, yeoman, deed part of deceased's land, being land with a house. Near land of Nath'l Wade. (Vol. 71, p. 119.)

Dated 27 Feb. 1792. Benjamin⁴ Briggs yeoman & Leah⁴ Damon widow, both of Scituate, admr^s on the estate of Josiah Damon late of same yeoman, deceased. In consideration of £20 paid by Barnabas Otis to the adm^{rs}, deed things. (Vol. 72, p. 117.)

Children of Leah⁴ Briggs and Josiah Damon:

- i. JOHN DAMON, bpt. 24 Dec. 1752 (First Church); m. Elizabeth Collier 1770.
- ii. LEAH DAMON, bpt. 16 June 1754 (First Church).
- iii. JOSIAH DAMON, bpt. 20 June 1756 (First Church); m. Lucy Doane 1778.
- iv. SARAH DAMON, bpt. 14 Aug. 1760 (First Church).

25. CAPT. BENJAMIN⁴ BRIGGS (13. Benjamin³, James², Walter¹) was born in the homestead north of Stockbridge Mill Pond 18 Oct. 1722. He was a mariner. He resided in Scituate until after the Revolution, and in his later years removed to Cohasset. He was a Revolutionary soldier, with service as follows:

Benjamin Briggs, Scituate, Private, Capt. Joseph Stetson's co. Col. Dike's reg't; return of men in service from Dec. 12, 1776 to March 1, 1777; also, same co. and regt.; list of men entitled to gun and blanket money, dated Boston, Feb. 24, 1777. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 499.)

Capt. Benjamin⁴ Briggs married 1 Aug. 1758 Rebecca Curtis, born 17 Aug. 1730, daughter of Benjamin and Rebecca (House) Curtis of Curtis or Buttonwood Hill. Rebecca was a sister of Elijah Curtis, Sr., who resided before his death in the Dr. Cushing Otis house (see chapter on Otis), and of Samuel Curtis, who married Rachel⁴ Briggs, daughter of 16. James. (See 38. Rachel⁴ Briggs.)

Children of Capt. Benjamin⁴ Briggs and Rebecca Curtis:

- 47. i. BENJAMIN, b. 23 May 1760; m. Sarah Pratt.
- ii. CHARLES, b. 20 Sept. 1762; d. 13 May 1839 unm.
- iii. PAUL, b. 25 Jan. 1765.
- 48. iv. REBECCA, b. 3 Oct. 1769; m. John Mann.
- 49. v. HULDAH, b. —; m. Caleb Merritt.

26. DEBORAH⁴ BRIGGS (13. Benjamin³, James², Walter¹) was born 1 June 1724 in the Briggs house north of Stockbridge Mill Pond, and died in Scituate 16 Feb. 1817, age 92. She married 12 Mar. 1746 Capt. Thomas Mann, a Revolutionary soldier (see "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors"), born 26 Nov. 1717, son of Thomas, Jr., and Deborah (Joy) Mann. His father, Thomas, Jr., was a son of Thomas Mann, who was in the Rehoboth battle with Capt. Michael Peirce in 1676, and returned sorely wounded, one of the three survivors of the fifteen Scituate men in that battle, and the only one whose name is known.

Richard Man, planter, was a Conihassett Partner in 1646. His farm was at Mann Hill, still so called, south of Great Mushquashcut Pond and north of John Hoar's farm. His son Thomas, born 15 Aug. 1650, had lands granted him at Rehoboth, after his return from King Philip's War. He probably died there.

Capt. Thomas Mann died in 1795, and was buried in Union Cemetery, near Scituate Harbor. He resided on Greenfield Lane.

Children of Deborah⁴ Briggs and Capt. Thomas Mann:

- i. DEBORAH⁵ MANN, b. 6 Oct. 1749; d. 17 July 1763, ae. 14 yrs.
- ii. LUCY (LUCE) MANN, b. 23 Dec. 1752; m. William Vinal 1780.
- iii. ISAIAH (ISAAH) MANN, b. 7 Feb. 1756.
- iv. SARAH MANN, b. 14 May 1758; d. 30 Dec. 1761.
- v. JOHN MANN, b. 10 May 1761; m. Patience Rogers of Marshfield.
- vi. DEBORAH MANN, b. 29 June 1766; d. 23 Dec. 1846, ae. 80; unm.

27. JAMES⁴ BRIGGS (13. Benjamin³, James², Walter¹) was born 16 Nov. 1735 in the homestead at Greenbush, and died there 2 Oct. 1833, aged 98. He was known as "clark" Briggs, having been Town Clerk of Scituate from 1779 to 1803, and again in 1806 and 1807. He resided in the homestead. This house, reached by a lane leading from Old Oaken Bucket Road, and since the completion of the new state highway on Route 3A, called "Judge Cushing Road," is but a short distance from the new way. It is still spoken of as "the old Briggs place."

A very long indenture about 40 acres of upland and swamp land at or near a place called *Mount Blew* owned by Thomas Pincin, James Curtis, James Briggs, James Jenkins, Benjamin Clap, Jr., Samuel Curtis, Joseph Nash Jr. Caleb Nichols. Dated 19 Nov. 1773. (Plymouth County Records, Vol. 74, p. 120.) [Sarah Elizabeth Elms Kent, mother of L. V. Briggs, was born at Mount Blew.]

More land to Augustus Clap, same as Vol. 72, p. 92½. (Vol. 74, p. 125.)

James Briggs, Jr. of Scituate Yeoman, to Augustus, Chandler and Rufus Clapp, pasture land in Scituate. April 4, 1795. (Vol. 77, p. 251.)

James and Rhoda Briggs to Stephen Damon, Cedar Swamp in Burnt Plain Swamp. Dec. 4, 1796. (Vol. 81, p. 47½.)

James Briggs Jr. to Benjamin Briggs, mariner, land and buildings which my father Benjamin Briggs late of Scituate, Gentleman, died seized of being same given by my said father to his wife Anna in his last will, etc. July 9, 1757. (Vol. 43, p. 273.)

James Briggs Jr. of Scituatc, yeoman sells to John Merritt land at a creek called *broad creek*, and easterly on beach to *where channel of North River used to come to said beach Nye the Southerly end of 4th Cliff*, and by said River or bay to mouth of said broad Creek. March 3, 1781.

Witnesses —

BENJAMIN BRIGGS —

LUCY MERRITT —

(Vol. 78, p. 153.)

March 4, 1785. James Briggs Jr. & Rhoda his wife & others of Scituate in the County of Plymouth deed 130 Acres of woodland in the Town of Ashford, Conn., known by the name of the

King Lott to Jacob Chattman and Israel Lewis both of Ashford. (Conn., Windham Co., Vol. 11, p. 529.)

3 March 1781. James Briggs *Jr.* in consideration of £20 paid by John Merritt of Scituate, yeoman, deeds meadow land near southerly end of Fourth Cliff, and partly bounded by the North River. (See deed of 1767 to his brother Benjamin Briggs.) (Plymouth County Records, Vol. 78, p. 173.)

9 March 1764. James Briggs *Jr.* of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £66 paid by Benjamin Briggs of same, yeoman, deeds two parcels of land near Pinchins Hill and highway. (Pinchin Hill $\frac{1}{2}$ mile N. E. of the then Town House at Sherman's Corner.) (Vol. 49, p. 37.)

David Little & James Briggs *Jr.* administrators of estate of Nathaniel Waterman late of Scituate, deceased petitioned House of Representatives for liberty to sell part of real estate of said Nathaniel Waterman for payment of his just debts. They were so authorized. 28 Feb. 1786. (Plymouth Court Records, Vol. 46, p. 451.)

4 Nov. 1786. David Little & James Briggs *Jr.* both of Scituate, yeoman, administrators on the estate of Nathaniel Waterman, late of same. Acting as such in consideration of £80 paid by Snow Stetson of same, merchant, deeds land near harbour of same. (Vol. 70, p. 43.)

2 Dec. 1787. Benjamin Briggs & James Briggs *Jr.* both of Scituate, yeomen, in consideration of £15 paid by John Damon, decd woodland in Scituate. (Vol. 70, p. 41.)

3 Jan. 1788. James Briggs *Jr.* of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £10, 10s, 0d paid by Rev. David Barnes of Scituate, gentleman deeds two pieccs of Cedar Swamp being part of 38th Lot in same. (Vol. 72, p. 71.)

17 June 1789. David Little & James Briggs *Jr.* both of Scituate, yeomen administrators on the estate of Nathaniel Waterman late of Scituate, deceased. Are granted leave by the Court to sell his estate in order to pay his just debts. Also signed by Mary Waterman, (widow). (Vol. 71, p. 190.)

June 17, 1790. Wm. Turner, Elisha Briggs, David Gannet appointed to take a view of land shown us by James Briggs, testis attorney. (Vol. 82, p. 267.)

Nov. 15, 1790. James Briggs *Jr.*, Elijah Turner & Hayward Pierce of Scituate, gents, guardians to Gideon Clittenden of same a non compos. The guardians put up certain land for sale to pay up said non compos debts. (Vol. 74, p. 125.)

May 3, 1791. James Briggs Jr., Elijah Turner & Hayward Peirce of Scituate, gentlemen, guardians to Gideon Chittenden of same, non compos, for the amount of £207, 6s, 0d for the payment of his debts, did put up at publick sale a piece of land taken out of the estate in the most convenient place. Bid for by Dr. James Otis. (Vol. 71, p. 111.)

May 10, 1791. James Briggs Jr., Elijah Turner & Hayward Pierce all of Scituate, gentlemen, guardians to Gideon Chittenden of same, a non compos, granted by court right to sell land to meet debts. Sell to William Vinal land near North Meeting House. (Vol. 71, p. 180.)

8 March 1793. James Otis & Caleb Marsh, physicians, John Otis & John Studley, yeomen & James Briggs Jr. & Hayward Peirce gentlemen, in their capacity as *Selectmen of Scituate* in consideration of £15, 5s, 8d paid by Nath'l Litchfield of Scituate, deed land & part of a dwelling house in same. (Vol. 76, p. 284.)

4 March 1793. In the House of Representatives. On the petition of Elijah Turner, James Briggs Jun^r. & Hayward Peirce Guardians to Gideon Chittenden of Scituate in the County of Plymouth, a person non-compos mentes. Resolved that the doings of the said Elijah, James & Hayward in their said capacity be, and are hereby confirmed, any irregularities or omissions of the late Judge of Probate for said County relative to their appointment notwithstanding. Provided that the said Guardians shall settle their account of Guardianship of the said non compos with the present Judge of Probate for the said County of Plymouth as soon as may be, and shall also give bond to the said Judge as such Guardians are by law required, and recieve a letter of Guardianship from said Judge.

In Senate Read and Concurred.

Approved by the Governor.

(Vol. 50, p. 516.)

4 April 1795. James Briggs Jr. of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £133 paid by Augustus Clap, Chandler Clap & Rufus Clap, all of Scituate, yeomen. Said Briggs for this sum releases all claim on the above mentioned. Deeds to them land in same by Caleb *Simeon's* land. (Vol. 77, p. 251.)

5 Nov. 1795. James Briggs Jr., of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of \$100 paid by Ensign Merritt of Scituate, shipwright deeds land and dwelling house being formerly owned by Obediah Merritt. Also signed by Rhoda Briggs, wife of James. (Vol. 80, p. 82.)

3 Sept. 1796. James Briggs Jr. of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £50 paid by Capt. Jesse Dunbar of same, deeds tract of salt meadow near Greenfield. Partly bounded by road leading from Ezekiel Young's to Scituate Harbor. Also signed by Rhoda Briggs, wife of James. (Vol. 81, p. 27.)

[Above tract on Kent Street near "Greenfield." Ezekiel Young lived on Kent Street in the "Old Abbey," so called.]

4 Dec. 1796. James Briggs Jr. of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £30 paid by Stephen Damon of same, yeoman, deeds cedar swamp, part of 38th lot. Also signed by Rhoda Briggs. (Vol. 81, p. 47.)

James⁴ Briggs married 17 July 1764 Rhoda Nash, born in Scituate 14 Feb. 1742, a daughter of Joseph, Jr., and Deborah (Merritt) Nash. Rhoda (Nash) Briggs died 23 Feb. 1807. James Briggs was living in 1831, at the age of 96.

Rhoda Nash was a granddaughter of Joseph Nash, who married Hannah Curtis, daughter of John and Miriam (Brooks) Curtis, and settled beside Stony Brook, on a part of the Deacon Thomas King property in 1700, and in 1723 sold the property to Dr. Isaac Otis. (See chapter on Otis.) Joseph Nash was born in Weymouth in 1674. His father, Joseph Nash, son of James and Alice (Burgess) Nash of Weymouth, resided in Scituate in 1670, but removed in 1678 to Boston, where he died before 1697. Deborah Merritt, wife of Joseph Nash, Jr., was a daughter of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Whiton) Merritt, and a descendant of Henry Merritt, one of the very earliest settlers at Satuit.

Children of James⁴ Briggs and Rhoda Nash:

50. i. BETTY, b. 30 Oct. 1766; m. Asa Merritt.
- ii. SHADRACK, b. 16 Aug. 1769; d. 22 Nov. 1796, ae. 26.
51. iii. BARTLETT, b. 7 June 1772; m. Deborah Otis.
52. iv. POLLY, b. 10 April 1775; m. Silas Litchfield.
53. v. JOSEPH, b. 1 Feb. 1777; m. Miriam Silvester.
- vi. LUTHER, b. 25 Jan. 1779; unmm.
- vii. GEORGE, b. 21 Sept. 1781; unmm.

28. MARY⁴ BRIGGS (14. *Joseph*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), daughter of Joseph³ and his first wife, Mary Garrett, was born in the Walter¹ Briggs house at Farm Neck (Coni-

hassett), 9 Oct. 1711 and died about 1795. She married 13 Jan. 1731 John⁴ Cudworth, Jr., born 16 May 1706, son of John³ Cudworth, who was a son of Capt. James² and grandson of Gen. James¹ Cudworth. John Cudworth³, Sr.'s, wife was Margaret Hateh, whom he married 4 Jan. 1702/3, a daughter of Thomas Hateh. She was born 26 Aug. 1677 and baptized 24 June 1683 in the Second Church of Seitate by the Rev. William Wetherell. Her mother was *Sarah Elmes, daughter of Rodolphus Elmes*. (See chapter on Elmes.) John⁴ Cudworth, Jr., resided on Hoop Pole Neck.

Children of Mary⁴ Briggs and John⁴ Cudworth, Jr.:

- i. JOHN CUDWORTH, b. about 1733; m. Elizabeth Clapp 1772.
- ii. HULDAH CUDWORTH, b. 18 Apr. 1735.
- iii. MARY CUDWORTH, b. 15 Aug. 1736; m. Hezekiah Hatch 1755.
- iv. ELIZABETH CUDWORTH, b. 12 Dec. 1738; m. Atherton Beswick 1758.
- v. JOSEPH CUDWORTH (Capt. Joseph), b. 3 Sept. 1740; m. Elizabeth Souther of Cohasset in 1775, a sister of Laban Souther, the shipbuilder at the Chittenden Ship Yard on North River. Joseph Cudworth resided on River Street, Norwell, where his son, Elijah Cudworth, succeeded him. The house is now (1936) the residence of Mrs. Marian N. Brainard.

29. HANNAH⁴ BRIGGS (14. *Joseph³, Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born in the Walter Briggs house at Conihassett 8 Feb. 1714, daughter of Joseph³ by his first wife, Mary Garrett. She married 21 Dec. 1732, Deacon Joseph Clap, born 15 July 1701. He settled on land granted his father in 1700 at Black Pond Hill. His house is said to have stood on or near the site of that recently known as Joshua M. Reed's. Hannah (Briggs) Clap died before 1749. Seventeen of Seitate's quota of French Neutrals, after the dispersal of the Acadians, were left in care of Deacon Joseph Clap, and a family of seven are said to have lived in a hut on "Cuffee's Lane," afterward so called from Simeon (Cuffee) Granderson, a Revolutionary soldier, who

came there after the war ended. This lane is still traceable on the old Clap property.

Thomas¹ Clap, born in Dorchester, England, 1597, came to New England with his brothers, John, Richard and Ambrose, among the early settlers of Dorchester, where his brothers remained. Thomas removed to Weymouth, where he had a farm in 1639, and in 1640 he went to Scituate and settled on a farm west of Stockbridge Mill Pond, now (1936) known as the Jenkins Farm. He was a Deacon of the First Church and an active man in the settlement. He was succeeded by his son Samuel², who married Hannah Gill of Hingham 1666. (See Otis chapter.) They were the ancestors of President Thomas Clap of Yale College, 1740-64, and of Judge Thomas Clap of the Plymouth Court. Samuel² and Hannah (Gill) Clap's son Joseph³, born 1768, was the father of Deacon Joseph⁴ of Black Pond Hill.

Children of Hannah⁴ Briggs and Deacon Joseph⁴ Clap:

- i. HANNAH CLAP, b. 8 Nov. 1733; d. before 1749.
- ii. JOSEPH CLAP, b. 21 Feb. 1734; m. (1) 1757, Elizabeth Turner; (2) 1761, Marcy Nash.
- iii. RUTH CLAP, b. 14 Apr. 1738; d. before 1749.
- iv. BETTY CLAP, b. 13 Oct. 1740; d. before 1749.
- v. ABIGAIL CLAP, bpt. 29 Feb. 1744/5; d. before 1749.

30. JUDITH⁴ BRIGGS (14. *Joseph³, Cornelius², Walter¹*) was born 20 May 1725, the only child of Joseph's second wife, Judith Litchfield. By her father's will dated 1747 Judith, then unmarried, inherited one half his real estate and one third of his personal property, after the death or remarriage of her stepmother, Sarah (Morey) Briggs. (See 14. Joseph.) Judith married 23 Mar. 1749 (int. 30 Dec. 1748) William Collier, son of Gershom and Elizabeth (Poole) Collier, a descendant of Thomas Collier and wife Susanna, who had lands granted him in Hingham in 1635.

Judith and William Collier resided on the Walter Briggs farm where she was born. (See deed from Sarah (Morey) Briggs, widow of Joseph 14.) She died in 1793, and William in 1794.

The Briggs homestead was inherited by their son, Isaac Collier, who married Tamsen Hayden 1771, and was succeeded by

their son, James Collier, who married Sally Lincoln, and resided in Cohasset, but came back to the old house in 1845, enlarged it by adding the ell, and died there in 1850, leaving his estate to his grandchildren. When the property was finally settled, the old house, then known as the "old Collier house," fell to his grandson, Edmund Pomeroy Collier of Cohasset. It has since been sold two or three times, and finally much enlarged, after having been moved a short distance from its original site, upon the same lot of land. The original structure is clearly discernible.

Isaac Collier was a Revolutionary soldier in Capt. Samuel Stockbridge's Company, Col. Thomas' Regiment; May to Oct. 1775, in operation before Boston; also in the expedition to Bristol, R. I., in Mar. 1775 in Capt. Hayward Peirce's Company.

Children of Judith⁴ Briggs and William Collier:

- i. ISAAC COLLIER, b. 13 June 1750; m. Tamsen Hayden 1771.
- ii. SARAH COLLIER, bpt. 29 Oct. 1752 (First Church); m. Ichabod⁵ Briggs 1763.
- iii. JUDITH COLLIER, bpt. 8 Sept. 1754 (First Church); m. John⁵ Briggs, 3d, 1780.
- iv. ELIZABETH COLLIER, bpt. 21 Nov. 1756 (First Church); m. John Damon 1779.
- v. JONATHAN COLLIER, b. 8 Mar. 1758; m. Mrs. Abigail Long of Harwich 1788. He was a Revolutionary soldier.

31. JOSHUA⁴ BRIGGS (15. *Cornelius*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born about 1717. He resided in Pembroke, where he died 20 Apr. 1802, aged 96.

15 June 1769. Joshua Briggs of Pembroke in consideration of £27 paid by Joshua Barker of Hingham Esq^r deeds a piece of land in Pembroke with all the buildings thereon. Bounded easterly by Brick Hill Lane. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 55, p. 65.)

Joshua⁴ Briggs married 3 June 1742 Zerviah Delano, daughter of Nathaniel, Sr., and Mercy (Bonney) Delano. She was a great-granddaughter of *Philippe de la Noye*, born in Leyden 1602, who came to Plymouth in the *Fortune* in 1621. He married Hester Dewsbury. (See Dunham — Mayhew chapter.) The fifth son of Philippe and

Hester (Dewsbury) was John *Delanoy*, who married Mary Weston. Their son was Nathaniel *Delano*, who married Mercy Bonney in 1714.

21 Jan. 1735. Lydia & Zerviah, daughters of Nathaniel Delano, late of Duxbury, chose John Prior & Samuel Alden of Duxbury to be their guardians. (Plymouth Colony Records, Book 7.)

Children of Joshua⁴ Briggs and Zerviah Delano:

54. i. RUTH, b. about 1744; m. Abner Magoun.
- ii. JOHN, probably m. 23 Feb. 1780 Hannah Bearse, Jr.
- iii. JOSHUA, Jr., was a soldier in the Revolution. A Fifer in Capt. Thomas Turner's Company, Col. Anthony Thomas' Regiment, which marched on alarm of Apr. 19, 1775, and Private in Capt. Turner's Company of Minute-men, Col. John Bailey's Regiment, Brig. Gen. Thomas' brigade in 1776; also, Private in Capt. William Weston's Company; enlisted July 6, 1776; discharged Dec. 31, 1776; stationed at the Gurnet for defence of Plymouth Harbor. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 515.) He m. 10 June 1784 Mary Savil of Braintree.
- iv. LUCIA, m. 24 Dec. 1792 her cousin, Joshua Turner, 3d, son of Capt. Benjamin and Mary (Briggs) Turner. She was his second wife.

32. MARY⁴ BRIGGS (15. *Cornelius, Jr.*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born about 1712. She married (int.) 2 Aug. 1736 Capt. Benjamin Turner, born in Scituate 23 June 1704. At the time of his marriage he was recorded as Benjamin, Jr., apparently for the reason that there were other Benjamin Turners in Scituate, son and grandson of John and Mary (Brewster) Turner. After the death of Benjamin (son of John), the son Benjamin, being the elder of the two living Benjamin Turners, was known as Benjamin, Sr., and Benjamin, son of Thomas, born in 1704, was known as "Junior," instead of Benjamin Turner, 2d, which seems to have been a later form.

Captain Benjamin, born 1704, was a son of Thomas Turner, who came from Hingham to Scituate in 1680. His father, Thomas Turner, was in Hingham in 1637. Captain Benjamin was Captain

of a troop of horse, and was the first shipbuilder on record at the Brick Kilns 1730, where he was succeeded by his descendants, — Thomases, Briggses and Turners. Many earlier shipwrights probably built at this yard, although they failed to record the fact.

Captain Benjamin married for his first wife 27 May 1726 Sarah Eells, daughter of Rev. Nathaniel Eells of the Second Church. By her he had four children, who were baptized in the Second Church by their grandfather, on 2 Nov. 1735 — Ann, David, Hannah and Sarah. David Turner was afterward of Plymouth, and one of the daughters married — Lane of Cohasset, whose son, Capt. Benjamin Lane, came to Scituate about 1790, married Lucy Stetson, and built a small house on what is now Central Street, Norwell, later enlarged by Capt. Lewis Raymond, now (1936) P. G. Power's. He later built a larger house where the present Norwell Infirmary stands, which was purchased in 1818 by the town of Scituate for an almshouse. It was burned in 1820.

Children of Mary⁴ Briggs and Capt. Benjamin Turner:

- i. NATHANIEL TURNER, b. 12 Mar. 1735/6; m. Sarah Rogers 1768 and removed to Sunderland.
- ii. RUTH TURNER, b. 8 Feb. 1736/7; m. Ichabod Thomas 1761. (See Thomas chapter.)
- iii. BENJAMIN TURNER, b. 20 Aug. 1739.
- iv. JAMES TURNER, b. 25 Aug. 1741.
- v. LUCY TURNER, b. 19 Apr. 1743; d. 25 Nov. 1743.
- vi. WILLIAM TURNER, b. 8 Dec. 1744; d. 23 Apr. 1748.
- vii. MARY TURNER, b. 8 Oct. 1746.
- viii. THOMAS TURNER, b. 18 May 1748; d. 1 June 1748.
- ix. WILLIAM TURNER, b. 8 Dec. 1749.
- x. JOSHUA TURNER, b. 19 Aug. 1751; m. (1) Rebecca Man 1783; (2) Lucia Briggs 1792.
- xi. CALVIN TURNER, b. 23 Oct. 1753; m. — (See Joshua Briggs.) His son Calvin, Jr., m. Rhoda Briggs, dau. of Elisha and Laurentia (Hall) Briggs, and removed to Medford.

33. RUTH⁴ BRIGGS (15. *Cornelius*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born about 1714. She married in Hanover, 1 May 1739, Caleb Turner, Jr., of Scituate, who was baptized in Scituate Second Church 24 Mar. 1722/3, son of Caleb and Rachel (Dwelle) Turner. Caleb Turner, Jr., was a ship-

wright, and resided in Hanover, where his children were born. He died 12 Apr. 1767 in Hanover. His widow, Ruth (Briggs), died 8 Nov. 1768.

Caleb Turner, Sr., was a son of Thomas Turner and a brother of Capt. Benjamin Turner, who married Ruth's sister, 32. Mary Turner. They were grandsons of Thomas Turner of Hingham 1637, whose son Thomas, father of Caleb and Captain Benjamin, was in Scituate in 1680. They were not descendants of Humphrey Turner of Scituate, one of the "Men of Kent."

Rachel Dwelley, wife of Caleb, Sr., was a daughter of John Dwelley, who married Rachel Buck, daughter of Cornet John Buck of Scituate.

Children of Ruth⁴ Briggs and Caleb Turner, Jr.:

- i. LUCINDA TURNER, b. 27 Sept. 1740.
- ii. CORNELIUS TURNER, b. 5 May 1742; m. (1) 8 Dec. 1768 Michal Sylvester, dau. of Michael and Mary (Bardin) Sylvester. He m. (2) — Soule.
- iii. BRIGGS TURNER, b. 9 Feb. 1744; m. Mary Gardner of Maine.
- iv. CALEB TURNER, b. 8 Aug. 1746; m. Peggy McGowan. He was a shipbuilder at Fox Hill yard on North River.

Hanover, July 12, 1777. Ree'd of Samuel House and Ather-ton Wales £133, six shillings eight pence in full for one quarter part of ye sloop cal'd ye "Ranger" and one quarter part of her cargo consisting of lumber now on a voyge to ye West Indies Together with one quarter part of ye net proceeds of sd. voige. We paying one quarter part of ye men's wages & victu-ling ye sd. vessel commanded by Capt. Barden Sylvester.

CALEB TURNER

- v. RUTH TURNER, b. 10 Oct. 1748; m. 5 Apr. 1768 Ather-ton Wales.
- vi. ALEXANDER TURNER, b. 1 Aug. 1750; m. Sarah Soule of Maine.
- vii. BARKER TURNER, b. 21 Oct. 1752; d. unm.
- viii. ROBERT TURNER, b. 1 Feb. 1756; m. — Rhoades of Maine.

34. JOHN⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 1 Jan. 1718 at the home near Stony Cove Brook, which he inherited after his father's death, and here he

resided until his death on 28 Feb. 1807, at the age of 88. He was a shipbuilder with his *brother* 35. *James*⁴ at the Hobart shipyard on North River. (See 35. *James*⁴, also "Shipbuilding on North River," pp. 309–310.) In 1780 he was a Constable authorized to enforce collection of the First Paper Currency Tax of 1780. The tax levy was £5,983 14s 7d to be paid to Caleb Torrey, Town Treasurer, and £311 reserved for Constable for collecting same.

Plymouth ss. May 25, 1774

Know all men By these Presents that I John Foster of Scituate In the County of Plymouth New England yeomon for & in consideration of twelve Pounds Paid me by John Briggs of Scituate in the County aforesaid yeomon the Receipt whereof I Do hereby acknowledge Do hereby Give Grant Sell and Convey unto the said John Briggs his heirs & assigns for ever a Serting peese of woodland Lying In Hanover in the County aforesaid Contain- ing fore acres & thirty fore Rods & is bownded as followeth — VIZ Beginning at a whit oak tree standing in the Laine of the Land of Solomon Lincoln & from that runs with said Lincolns Land North Eighteen Rods & teen Links to the Land of John Jacob then with that South 83 Degrees west thirty Rods & twenty three Links to a stake and stones then South 28 Degrees west twenty three Rods & two Links to a stak & stones then on a Loine with a Rang of marked trees & staks to the first Corner to have and to hold the same to the said John Briggs & his heirs to theire use and Behoof forever And I do Covenant with the said John Brig his heirs & assigns that I am Lawfully seized in fee of the premises that they are free of all incumbrance that I have Good Right to sell an Convey the same to the said John Briggs and that I will warrent and defend the Same to the said John Briggs his heirs & assigns forever again the Lawful Claims and Demands of all persons In witness whereof I the said John Foster have hereunto set my hand & seal this fifth Day of June A.D. 1773.

In prescnce of
NATH CLAP
DEBORAH JACOBS

JOHN FOSTER and Seal

John⁴ Briggs married 11 May 1747 Abigail Neall, born in Scituate 6 Feb. 1721, daughter of John Neall, who came to

Scituate from Provincetown about 1700. His wife was Abigail Smith. The cellar-hole of his house can still be defined (1936) on the knoll on the west corner of Neal Gate Road and Main Street. Abigail (Neall) Briggs died 12 Sept. 1795.

Children of John⁴ Briggs and Abigail Neall:

- i. MARGRET, bpt. 27 Mar. 1748 in Second Church, d. in infancy.
- ii. MARGRET, bpt. 4 May 1749 in Second Church.
- iii. JOHN, b. 11 June 1751.
- iv. ABIGAIL, b. 11 Feb. 1753; d. 1838, æ. 87.
- v. ANA (ANN), b. 19 Oct. 1754.
- vi. JOSEPH, b. 29 Jan. 1756.
- vii. SABERA, b. 10 Sept. 1757; d. 10 Sept. 1810, æ. 53.
- viii. DEBORAH, b. 7 Dec. 1758; d. 1813.
- ix. REBECCA, b. 24 Aug. 1759; d. 20 July 1837, æ. 78.
55. x. ELISHA⁵, b. 10 Aug. 1761; m. Abigail Foster.
56. xi. LYDIA⁵, b. 24 Feb. 1763; m. Elisha Turner.

35. CAPT. JAMES⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in the family home in Scituate, now (1936) known as Stony Brook Farm, 27 Feb. 1719/20. He was a *soldier in the French and Indian War, and was with the New England troops under Col. John Winslow at the taking of Louisburg in 1744, one of the greatest achievements of the war. He also served in the Revolution, first in charge of a watch box on the Third Cliff, Scituate, in 1775, and later with troops.* His service was as follows:

James Briggs. Private, Capt. Francis Cushing's co., Col. John Cushing's (2d Plymouth Co.) reg't; service 11 days, on an alarm in Dec. 1776; marched to Bristol, R. I. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 510.)

James Briggs, Private, Capt. Seth Stowers's Co., Col. J. Robinson's reg't; enlisted July 1, 1777; service, 6 mos.; enlistment to expire Jan. 1, 1778; reported mustered by James Hatch, Muster Master for Plymouth Co. James Briggs of Massachusetts appears on receipt dated Cortlandt Manor, Oct.-Dec. 1776. (State Archives, Vol. 1, p. 141; Vol. 23, p. 254; Vol. 27, p. 165; Vol. 42, p. 338.)

James Briggs appears among a list of officers of the Massachusetts Militia as Captain in Col. Bailey's regt. Commissioned Feb. 13,



BRIGGS' SHIPYARD, WHERE ALL THE BRIGGS' SHIPS WERE BUILT, LOOKING UP RIVER
LLOYD BRIGGS AND JOHN R. BRIGGS, DESCENDANTS OF JAMES BRIGGS, AT THE LANDING



BRIGGS' SHIPYARD, HOBART'S LANDING, SCITUATE, WHERE THE "COLUMBIA" WAS BUILT,
LOOKING DOWN RIVER

1776, having enlisted 10 Dec. 1775 and as *Capt. in Col. Jacobs regiment*. Continental pay 3 mos, 2 ds from 12 July 1778. (State Archives, Vol. 28, p. 124.)

James Briggs, beginning about 1750, built ships at Hobart's Landing, interrupted only by his services during the wars with the French and Indians, and later with the British troops. The Briggs' shipyard at Hobart's Landing had been occupied as early as 1645 by Thomas Nichols, by his son-in-law Samuel House, Jr., by Jeremiah, Walter, and Jeremiah Hatch, Jr., and by Israel Hobart, son of the Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham, who died in 1731.

James⁴ Briggs purchased 20 Feb. 1747 the homestead on Cross Street, as appears by the following record:

20 Feb. 1747, Bathsheba Wade "widdo" & Israel Nichols shipwright, both of Scituate in consideration of £310 old tenor bills paid by James Briggs Jr. of Scituate, deed nine acres & three quarters of land in Scituate with buildings thereon. Bounded Northerly on the way going from the Town Road towards Curtis's. Easterly on the Town Road, Southerly on Job Neals land, Westerly on the land of James Briggs Sr. Convey premises with appertencies. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 39, p. 85. Rec. 5 March 1747.)

Widow Bathsheba Wade was Bathsheba Pincin, daughter of Thomas. She married, first, 1696/7 Joseph Nichols, son of Thomas, who lived near Hobart's Landing, and was one of the earliest shipbuilders on North River. The above-named Israel Nichols was a brother of Joseph. After the death of Joseph Nichols, his widow Bathsheba married, second, Nicholas Wade in 1723. Deane says that Robert Thompson, whose wife was Ann Barker, lived on this property. They moved from Scituate soon after 1721. The house purchased by James Briggs in 1747 was a small one, of which the present ell was a part. When the new front was built by Cushing Otis⁶ Briggs, it was thought to have been built around a part of the older structure. This property is now (1936) owned by Dr. Arthur R. Kimpton.

James Briggs built in 1773 at Hobart's Landing the first American vessel to circumnavigate the globe. This was

the ship *Columbia*, which also explored the Columbia River in Oregon, which was named after the vessel. She was the first vessel from this country to visit the northwest coast. Samuel House is said to have built vessels at this yard in 1650. It is probably the oldest yard on North River.

Rev. Charles T. Torrey, who was born in Scituate, in his book entitled "Home, or the Pilgrims' Faith Revived," wrote over seventy-five years ago:

For more than fifteen miles, our southern border rests on the winding banks of a river famed for its excellent fisheries and still more for its shipbuilding. Here our carpenters launched the first American vessel that ever doubled the stormy Cape Horn and coasted the western shores of our continent. She was manned in part, tradition says, by our townspeople.

Tradition says that her companion vessel, the sloop *Washington*, was built on North River, but there have been no records found to prove at what yard or by whom she was built. Between 1780 and 1790 James Briggs built the largest vessel ever built on North River until later than 1800. This was the ship *Massachusetts* of about 400 tons.

In 1799 James Briggs deeded all the property he received from Deborah Clapp Briggs to his daughters, Sarah and Lucy Briggs.

JAMES BRIGGS AND THE SHIP "COLUMBIA"

35. *James⁴ Briggs* was probably the first shipbuilder of the family. Many years ago, when I was a boy, I knew the Hon. Samuel Adams Turner of Norwell, then in his 98th year. He remembered James Briggs, my great-great-grandfather, and described him as an upright man and a good citizen of the town. He said that James Briggs was noted for being very courageous, and when the call was made for men to enter the Continental Army he was among the first to volunteer. It was next to impossible to buy a gun at the time. Each citizen was required to furnish his own outfit, and James Briggs had no gun when he went forth to answer the call to arms, but carried a stick of wood over his shoulder to drill with. When asked what he was going to do with the stick he replied, "I am going to knock down the first British soldier I see and take his gun." He came back with a gun which his descendant, L. Cabot Briggs now (1936) has.

He was noted for being the most expert swimmer in Seitate. It is related that once, when a party of men were pickerel fishing and spearing eels through the ice on North River, James Briggs fell through one of the holes. Instead of fighting under the ice against the current to get out of the same hole, he struck out for a hole about four rods farther down the river, and to the surprise of all came out safely. During the latter part of his life, unable to build ships, he followed the trade of a comb-maker, making the combs from cattle horns, which he sawed into shape, then pressed between two pieces of board until they were straight.

Of the famous ship *Columbia*, built by James Briggs, Mr. Edward G. Porter, in a very interesting article published in June 1892, in "The New England Magazine," says:

Few ships, if any, in our merchant marine, since the organization of the Republic, have acquired such distinction as the *Columbia*. By two noteworthy achievements, a hundred years ago, she attracted the attention of the commercial world and rendered a service to the United States unparalleled in our history. She was the first American vessel to carry the stars and stripes around the globe; and by her discovery of the "great river of the West," to which her name was given, she furnished us with the title to our possession of that magnificent domain, which today is represented by the flourishing young States of Oregon, Washington and Idaho.

After the recognition of the Independence of the United States the citizens resumed the whale and seal fisheries around Cape Horn which they had carried on before the Revolution, and they also engaged in direct trade with India and China. With the latter countries, however, they labored under great disadvantage from the inferiority of the value of the articles carried out in exchange for those brought back by them. Consequently, they were obliged to take out large quantities of specie to buy goods in order to obtain full homeward cargoes.

In 1783, a young American seaman named Ledyard, who had sailed with Captain Cook on an exploring voyage in the North Pacific, published a journal of this voyage with a chart, and thus brought to the attention of the American shipowners the importance of the Northwest fur trade. He was at first considered a visionary, but finally his story attracted the serious consideration of a group of gentlemen in Boston, who, in 1787, formed an association for the purpose of combining the fur trade with the China trade, as attempted by King George's Sound

Company of London. The leading spirit among them was Joseph Barrell, a merchant of distinction, whose financial ability, cultivated tastes, and wide acquaintance with affairs gave him a position of acknowledged influence in business and social circles.

Mr. Edward G. Porter, in an article entitled "*The Ship Columbia*," wrote:

Associated with him were Charles Bulfinch, a recent graduate of Harvard, who had just returned from pursuing special studies in Europe. His father, Dr. Thomas Bulfinch, lived on Bowdoin Square, and entertained at his house the friends who were inclined to favor the new project. They read together Cook's report of an abundant supply of valuable furs offered by the natives in exchange for beads, knives and other trifles. The sea-otter skins, he said, were sold by the Russians to the Chinese at from £16 to £20 each. "Here is a rich harvest," said Mr. Barrell, "to be reaped by those who go in first."

Accordingly, in the year 1787, they made all the necessary arrangements for fitting out an expedition. The other partners were Samuel Brown, a prosperous merchant; John Derby, a shipmaster of Salem; Captain Crowell Hatch, a resident of Cambridge; and John Marden Pintard, of the well-known New York house of Lewis Pintard & Co.

These six gentlemen subscribed over \$50,000, dividing the stock into fourteen shares, and bought the ship *Columbia*, or, as she was after this often called, the *Columbia Rediviva*. She was built in 1773 by JAMES BRIGGS, at Hobart's Landing, on the once busy little stream known as the North River, the natural boundary between Scituate and Marshfield. One who sees it today meandering through quiet meadows and around fertile slopes would hardly believe that over a thousand sea-going vessels have been built on its banks.

The *Columbia* was a full-rigged ship, 83 feet long, and measured 212 tons. ("Shipbuilding" says 220 tons.) She had two decks, a figurehead and a square stern, and was mounted with ten guns. A consort was provided for her in the *Washington*, — or *Lady Washington*, as she was afterwards called, — a sloop of 90 tons, designed especially to collect furs by cruising among the islands and inlets of the coast in the expected trade with the Indians. These vessels seem ridiculously small to us of the present day, but they were staunchly built and manned by skillful navigators.

The *Columbia* was commanded by Captain John Kendrick of Wareham, Mass., to whom was intrusted the direction of the expedition. Kendrick was an experienced officer, about 45 years of age, who had done considerable privateering in the Revolution and had since been in charge of several vessels in the merchant service. Capt. Robert Gray of Tiverton, R. I., an able

scaman, who had also served as an officer in the Revolution and had been in the service of two of the owners, Messrs. Brown and Hatch, as Master of their ship *Pacific*, in the South Carolina trade, commanded the sloop *Washington*. Kendrick's first mate was Simon Woodruff, who had been one of Captain Cook's officers in his last voyage to the Pacific. The second mate was Joseph Ingraham, who was destined later to be a conspicuous figure in the trade which he helped to inaugurate.

The third officer on the *Columbia* was Robert Haswell, who kept a careful record of the expedition from which much accurate information has been derived. He was also a clever artist, and made some interesting sketches of the vessels. In addition to the other papers, they were provided with passports from the State of Massachusetts and letters from the Spanish Minister Plenipotentiary in the United States recommending them to the representatives of his nation on the Pacific coast.

Sea letters were issued by the Federal and state governments for the use of the expedition, and a silver medal was struck to commemorate its departure. Hundreds of duplicates of this medal in bronze and pewter were put on board for distribution among the natives and others whom the voyagers might meet; they also carried a much larger number of the new cents and half cents which the State of Massachusetts had coined that year. Several of these medals were found years afterwards on the track of the vessels, among Indians, Spaniards and Hawaiians. A few in silver and bronze are preserved in the families of some of the owners. [L. Cabot Briggs has one.]

Neither pains nor expense were spared to give these vessels a complete outfit. Besides the necessary stores they carried a good supply of blankets, iron bars, knives, copper pans and other useful articles, as well as trinkets to please the fancy of the natives, such as buttons, toys, beads, necklaces, jew's-harps, combs, looking glasses, snuff and snuff boxes.

They had a good run to the Cape Verde Islands, where for some unexplained cause they remained for nearly two months. They then proceeded to the Falkland Islands, where, says Porter, "there was no wood to be had, but plenty of geese, ducks, snipe and plover." They lingered here for sometime, but finally resumed their voyage on February 28, 1788. They soon ran into heavy seas, and for nearly a month they encountered severe westerly gales, during which the *Columbia* was thrown upon her beam ends and the little *Washington* was so completely swept by the waves that all the beds and clothing on board were com-

pletely drenched, with no opportunity to dry them. They finally doubled the Horn, but shortly afterwards, early on the morning of April 1, they lost sight of each other. It was intensely cold and a hurricane was raging. The crews were utterly exhausted and hardly a man was able to go aloft. At last, on the 14th, the skies brightened and they had their first welcome to the Pacific, and each vessel proceeded independently the rest of the way. The little sloop continued her course with many adventures, finally making the Northwest Coast in August 1788; near Cape Lookout they made "a tolerably commodious harbor and anchored half a mile off." Canoes brought out to them delicious berries and crabs, ready boiled, which the poor seamen gladly bought for buttons, as they were already suffering from scurvy. The next day seven of these men were sent ashore in a boat with two officers to get some grass and shrubs for their stock. The Captain's boy, Marcos, a black fellow who had shipped at St. Iago, was killed by the natives while pursuing one of them who had run off with his cutlass. The officers were assailed on all sides, and made for the boat as fast as possible, shooting the most daring of the ringleaders with their pistols and ordering the men in the boat to fire and cover their retreat. One of the sailors who stood near by to help them was totally disabled by a barbed arrow, which caused great loss of blood. A brisk fire was kept up until they neared the sloop, which discharged several swivel shots, and soon scattered the enemy. It was a narrow escape, and Captain Gray would have had but three men left aboard if the boat's crew had been captured, and the Indians could easily have made a prize of the sloop. Murderers' Harbor was the appropriate name given this place. Gray was actually near the river which he afterwards discovered, but he had so good a breeze that he "passed a considerable length of coast" without standing in. Farther north they saw "exceeding high mountains covered with snow" (Aug. 21) — evidently Mt. Olympus. Passing up the west shore of what is now Vancouver's Island, they found a good anchorage, which they named Hancock's Harbor for the Governor under whose patronage they had sailed; this was in Clayoquot Sound, where on their next voyage they spent a winter. At last, Aug. 16, 1788, the sloop reached its destined haven in Nootka Sound, where they found two English vessels under Portuguese colors, the *Felice* and the *Iphigenia*, commanded by Captains Meares and Douglas.

Just a week after their arrival they saw a sail in the offing, which by their glasses they soon recognized to be the long-lost



SHIP "COLUMBIA" AND SLOOP "WASHINGTON" IN THE COLUMBIA RIVER, 1788

From a drawing by Haswell, one of the crew



THE "COLUMBIA" AT THE FALKLAND ISLANDS, CAPTAIN GRAY WITH CHART IN HAND CONVERSING WITH ONE OF HIS OFFICERS

From a drawing by Davidson, one of the crew

Columbia. She arrived in sad condition, for many of her crew were suffering from scurvy and she had lost two men by that dread disease. Off Cape Horn they had encountered terrific gales and had suffered so much damage that they had been obliged to put in at Juan Fernandez for help. They were politely received by the Governor, Don Blas Gonzales, who supplied them with everything they needed.

After tarrying at Juan Fernandez seventeen days, the *Columbia* continued her voyage without further incident to Nootka. Captain Kendrick now resumed the command of the expedition. It was decided to spend the winter in Friendly Cove, Nootka Sound, and a house was built large enough for the entire crew. They shot an abundance of game, prepared charcoal for their smiths, and worked their iron into chisels, which were in great demand among the natives. To their surprise one morning they found that the Indians had landed and carried off fifteen water casks and five small cannon. This was a heavy loss, and as the miscreants could not be found, the coopers had to make a new set of casks.

In March 1789 the *Washington* was painted and sent out on a short cruise, while the *Columbia* was removed a few miles up the Sound to a place they named Kendrick's Cove, where a house was built with a forge and battery. In May the sloop started out again for furs and met the Spanish corvette *Princessa*, whose commander, Martinez, showed great kindness to Gray, giving him supplies of brandy, wines, hams and sugar — but he said he would make a prize of Douglas if he found him. At one place a large fleet of canoes came off in great parade to the sloop and offered their sea otter skins for one chisel each. Our men readily bought the lot, two hundred in number, worth from \$6,000 to \$8,000. This was the best bargain they ever made, as they could seldom get a good skin for less than six or ten chisels. An average price was one skin for a blanket, four for a pistol, and six for a musket. Gray made a long cruise and traded at many spots along the shore. In June he explored the whole east coast of Queen Charlotte's Island, never before visited by the people of any civilized nation.

Gray made a later excursion in Nootka Sound, and entered an opening between the 48th and 49th parallels which had been found by Berkeley in 1787, and was supposed to be the mouth of the Strait of Juan de Fuca. Through this opening Gray sailed (see "Shipbuilding on the North River," end of p. 303), as he informed Vancouver in 1792, fifty miles in a south-southeast direc-

tion, and found the passage five leagues wide. He then returned to the Pacific where he met the *Columbia* which had just left the Sound with officers and crew of the *Northwest America* on board, as passengers for China. It was agreed between the two captains that Kendrick should take command of the sloop and go on a cruise in her himself, with a crew of twenty men, while Gray, in the *Columbia*, should carry to Canton all the furs which had been collected by both vessels. This was accordingly done, and the two vessels parted company. The *Columbia* left Clayoquot July 30, 1790, and spent three weeks at the Hawaiian Islands, laying in a store of fruits, yams, potatoes and hogs. They were well received there, and a young fellow, Attoo (sometimes called the Crown Prince), was consigned to Captain Gray's care for the journey to Boston, under the promise that he should have an early opportunity to return. It was an unfavorable season for trade, and their thousand sea otter skins had to be sold at a sacrifice. Mr. Porter quotes the following bill of lading:

Shipped, by the Grace of God, in good order and condition, by Shaw & Randall, in and upon the good Ship called the *Columbia*, whereof is Master, under God, for this present voyage, Robert Gray, and now Riding at Anchor at Whampoa, and by God's Grace bound for Boston in America — to say 220 chests bohea Tea, 170 Half chests do., 144 quarter chests do . . . to be delivered . . . unto Samuel Parkman, Esquire, or his assigns . . . and so God sent the good Ship to her desired Port in Safety . . . Amen.

Dated in Canton, Feb. 3, 1790.

(signed) ROBERT GRAY.

Kendrick reached Macao in the *Washington* on January 26, with sails and rigging nearly gone, and being advised not to go to Canton, he went to "Dirty Butter Bay," a lonely anchorage near the "outer waters," and there waited for an opportunity to dispose of his 500 skins and perhaps to sell the sloop.

The *Columbia* passed down the river February 12, on her homeward voyage, but a gale of wind prevented her seeing her old consort.

Between Canton and Boston the *Columbia* took the usual route by the Cape of Good Hope, calling only at St. Helena and Ascension Islands. She reached her destination on the 10th of August, 1790, having sailed, by her log, about 50,000 miles, and having *carried the flag of the United States for the first time around the world*. On entering Boston Harbor the *Columbia* fired a Federal salute as she passed the Castle and another on



THE "COLUMBIA" ATTACKED BY INDIANS. CAPTAIN GRAY OBLIGED TO FIRE ON THEM IN THE STRAITS OF JUAN DE FUCA
(SEE "HISTORY OF SHIPBUILDING ON NORTH RIVER, MASS.")

From a drawing by George Davidson, one of the crew

coming to her moorings. It is doubtful if her destination had been generally known when she left, but the announcement of her achievements in the "Federalist" had filled the community with enthusiasm. Her arrival was greeted with salvos of artillery and repeated cheers from a great concourse of citizens. Governor Hancock gave an entertainment in honor of the officers and owners. A procession was formed, and Captain Gray walked arm-in-arm with the Hawaiian chief, the first of his race ever seen in Boston. He was a fine-looking youth, and wore a helmet of gay feathers which glittered in the sunlight, and an exquisite cloak of the same yellow and scarlet plumage. I remember seeing many years ago, in the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, a wonderful feather cloak which was brought from the Hawaiian Islands by the *Columbia* on one of her first voyages. It fell to Benjamin Joy, a part owner, as his share of the venture. He has descendants in Groton, Mass. There were, at the time I saw this, but three or four of these cloaks in existence, and their value was enormous. The feathers, less than an inch long, were taken from the under part of the wing of the o-o bird, which was found only in Hawaii and is now doubtless extinct. They were sometimes called mamō feathers, and even in 1880, when I was there, were worth \$1 apiece, as only two or four were found on each bird.]

The *Columbia* had brought home a cargo of tea worth about \$60,000, but it must be said that, financially, the enterprise was not of much profit to the owners, two of whom sold out their interest to the others; but nevertheless, it was an achievement to be proud of.

No sooner had the *Columbia* discharged her cargo than she was taken to a shipyard and thoroughly overhauled and furnished with new masts and spars and a complete outfit, as expeditiously as possible, preparatory to embarking on another voyage to the Northwest Coast.

An important sea letter was granted by President Washington and another by Governor Hancock, and still others by the foreign consuls resident in Boston. The owners prepared specific instructions for Captain Gray, directing him to proceed with all despatch; to take no unjust advantage of the natives; to build a sloop on the coast during the winter; to visit "Japan and Pekin" if possible for the sale of his furs. He was not to touch at any Spanish port nor trade with any of the subjects of His Catholic Majesty "for a single farthing," and he was to be a father to his crew. He was not to stop until he reached the Falkland Islands, and then only for a short time.

The *Columbia*, under Capt. Gray, left Boston 28 Sept., 1790, calling only at the Falkland Islands, and arrived at Clayoquot, near the entrance of the Strait of Fuca, June 5, 1791 — a quicker passage by nearly four months than the previous one. Obedient to his instructions, Gray soon went on a cruise up the coast, passing along the east side of Washington Islands (Queen Charlotte's) and remained in that vicinity, trading and exploring, until September. He explored many inlets and passages between the 54th and 56th parallels, one of which, probably the one called by Vancouver, Portland Canal, he penetrated to the distance of 100 miles northeastward, without reaching its termination. This inlet he supposed to be the Rio de Reyes of Admiral Fonte. Here, on the 12th of August, 1791, he had the misfortune to lose three of his men, Caswell, Barnes and Folger, who were cruelly massacred by the savages in the jolly boat, at a short distance from the ship. He succeeded in recovering the boat and the body of Caswell, which he took over to Port Tempest and buried with fitting solemnity. It was a sad day for the *Columbia's* crew. They named the spot Murderers' Cove, and the headland near by Murderers' Cape.

After the burial of Caswell, the *Columbia* sailed around to the north side of Washington's Islands and found a fine navigable stream which they called Hancock's River. The native name was Masset, which it still bears. Here they were glad to meet the Boston brig *Hancock*, Capt. Crowell, with news from home.

Returning to Clayoquot, they found Kendrick in the harbor and gave him three cheers. He told them that after the tedious sale of his cargo of skins at Macao he had made the sloop *Washington* over into a brig, which took much time, and he lost the season on the coast and stayed at Lark's Bay till the spring of '91, when he sailed in company with Douglas, and *touched at Japan, and was the first man to unfurl the American flag in that land*. He sought to open a trade, but was ordered off, as he might have expected had he known the exclusive policy of Japan at that time. Kendrick had called at Nootka, where he said the Spaniards had treated him kindly and sent him daily supplies of greens and salads. He had come down to Clayoquot to haul up his vessel, now a brigantine called the *Lady Washington*, at a place which he had fortified and named Fort Washington.

During this sojourn Kendrick purchased of the principal chiefs — Maquina, Wiscannish, Narry Yonk, Tarrasone and others — several large tracts of land, for which he paid mostly in arms and ammunition. The lands were taken possession of with much

ceremony, the United States flag hoisted and a bottle sunk into the ground. Kendrick sailed for China on September 29, taking with him the deeds, which were duly registered, it was said, at the consulate in Canton. Duplicate copies were prepared, one of which was sent to Jefferson and filed in the State Department at Washington. The originals were signed by the chiefs (as documents are signed by people who can only make their mark), and witnessed by the officers and crew of the vessel. These deeds ran somewhat as follows:

In consideration of six muskets, a boat's sail, a quantity of powder and an American flag (they being articles which we at present stand in need of, and are of great value) we do bargain, grant and sell unto John Kendrick of Boston, a certain harbor in said Alhasset, in which the brig *Washington* lay at anchor on the 5th of August, 1791, Latitude $49^{\circ} 50'$. . . with all the lands, mines, minerals, rivers, bays, harbors, sounds, creeks and all islands . . . with all the produce of land and sea . . . being a territorial distance of eighteen miles square . . . to have and to hold.

The lands were thus sold by the savage chiefs, and there is no reason to doubt that they would as readily have conveyed the whole of America to any one for the consideration of a copper kettle and have been none the worse for the transaction. Attempts were made in 1793 by the owners of the vessel to sell these lands in London. A circular was printed in four languages, which read as follows:

The inhabitants of Europe are informed that in 1787 Capt. J. Kendrick, while prosecuting an advantageous voyage to the natives for furs, purchased of them for the owners a tract of delightful country, comprehending 4 degrees of latitude or 240 miles square, and that such as may be inclined to associate for settling a Commonwealth on their own code of laws, on a spot of the globe nowhere surpassed in healthy climate and fertile soil, claimed by no civilized nation, and purchased under a sacred treaty of peace and commerce, and for a valuable consideration, of the friendly natives, may have the best opportunity of trying the result of such an enterprise.

Kendrick never returned to America. After opening a trade in sandalwood he was killed in the Hawaiian Islands in 1793 by a ball accidentally fired from a British vessel which saluted him, and the *Lady Washington* was lost soon afterwards in the Straits of Malacca. His Nootka lands never brought anything to the Captain or his descendants or to the owners of the ship. In fact, the title was never confirmed.

To return to the *Columbia*, which we left at Clayoquot where she encountered the *Washington* early in the fall of 1791: It was Captain Gray's intention to go into winter quarters at Naspatsee, in Bulfinch Sound, and he hastened that way, but being thwarted by contrary winds, he put into Clayoquot again, and finding excellent timber for the construction of a sloop, he decided to winter there.

Gray later took his vessel, the *Columbia*, on a cruise which was destined to be the most important of all — one which will be celebrated as long as the United States exists. On April 29, 1792, Gray fell in with Vancouver, who had been sent out from England with three vessels of the Royal Navy as commissioner, to execute the provisions of the Nootka Treaty, and to explore the coast. Vancouver said he had made no discoveries as yet, and inquired if Gray had made any. The Yankee captain replied that he had — that in latitude 46° 10' he had recently been off the mouth of a river which for nine days he tried to enter, but the outset was so strong as to prevent; he was going to try it again, however. Vancouver said he had passed a similar opening two days before, which he thought might be a "small river," inaccessible on account of the breakers, the land behind it not indicating it to be of any extent. "Not considering this opening worthy of more attention," wrote Vancouver in his journal, "I continued our pursuit to the northwest." Had the British navigator really entered the river, it would certainly have had another name and another history.

Paine, in his recent valuable publication, "Ships and Sailors of Old Salem," speaks of the adventurous voyage of the Salem ship *Margaret*, Capt. James Magee, which sailed to the northwest coast after furs in 1791, or, as "The Independent Chronicle," Boston, puts it, she was "bound on a voyage of observation and enterprise." She was the second American ship to risk the hazards of these unknown waters. Paine tells us that a journal kept on board the *Margaret* records meeting the *Columbia* on the Oregon coast, and he quotes the following passage from this journal:

Monday, ye 7th (May, 1792). One of our officers with a party of men were daily employed on shore sawing boards. At Eleven O'clock in the forenoon, we saw a sail standing into the harbor where we lay, and Mr. Lamb was sent in the whale boat to discover what Vessel it was. He very shortly returned and informed us it was the sloop *Adventure*, commanded by Mr. Robert Haswell, a Vessel about forty-seven Tons burden, being a Tender of the Ship *Columbia* commanded by Cap-



CAPTAIN GRAY ASHORE AT WAMPOA, 1792

This and other drawings are from originals owned by Dr. Edward L. Twombly

tain Robert Gray from Boston. In the evening, after Mr. Haswell had got in and secured his Vessel within us, he favored us with his company on board the *Margaret*, and gave us the following Interesting Intelligence:

That Mr. Caswell, the second officer of the *Columbia*, and two seamen, were killed the season before in a harbor in B—— Sound, as they were fishing in a boat out of sight of the Ship. Likewise, that Captain Hendrieks, as he was laying in this Harbour the last season was attacked by the natives of the adjacent Village under the command of Coyah, the Chief of the Tribe, and in his defense he killed about forty-five, according to the best of his judgment, and wounded several, Coyah among the rest. In the attack there were between one and two hundred on board and alongside. . . . The reason for this attack probably might have arisen from Captain Hendrieks having taken some of ye Natives previously and put them in Irons for repeated Thefts that were committed by the Natives on board.

If these dates are reliable, the encounter of the *Margaret* must have been on the same day and almost at the same moment that Gray, in the *Columbia*, made one of his first notable discoveries.

He anchored at one o'clock in ten fathoms of water, in "a large river of fresh water," ten miles above its mouth. There were Indian villages at intervals along the banks, and their canoes came out to inspect the strange visitor as she passed up the river. Here he remained for several days, busily trading and taking in water. On the 14th of May he stood up the river some fifteen miles further, and "doubted not it was navigable upwards of a hundred." However, he found the channel on that side so very narrow and crooked that the ship grounded on the sandy bottom, but they backed off without difficulty. The jolly-boat was sent out to sound the channel, but finding it still shallow Gray decided to return, rightly deciding that he had taken the wrong channel, and on the 15th he dropped down with the tide. In the afternoon he went ashore in the jolly-boat with Mr. Hoskins to take a view of the country. On the 16th he anchored off the village of Chenook, whose population came out in great numbers.

May 17th. Fresh winds and squally; many canoes alongside; calkers calking the pinnace; seamen paying the ship's sides with tar; painter painting ship; smith and carpenters at their departments.

So says the log. All hands must have turned to and worked fast to set the ship to rights, for on the 19th they landed near the mouth of the river and *formally named it after the ship, the Columbia, raising the American flag and planting coins under a*

large pine tree, thus taking possession in the name of the United States. The conspicuous headland was named Cape Hancock, and the low sandspit opposite, Point Adams. Porter says:

The writer is well aware that the word *discovery* may be taken in different senses. When it is claimed that Capt. Gray discovered this river, the meaning is that he was the first white man to cross its bar and sail up its broad expanse and give it a name. Undoubtedly Carver, to whom the word *Oregon* is traced, may have heard of the river in 1767 from the Indians in the Rocky Mountains; and Heeeta, in 1775, was near enough its mouth to believe in its existence; and Meares, in 1788, named Cape Disappointment and Deception Bay. But none of these can be properly said to have *discovered* the river. Certainly Meares, whose claim England maintained so long, showed by the very names he gave to the cape and the "bay" that he was after all deceived about it. And he gives no suggestion of the river on his map. D'Aguilar was credited with finding a great river as far back as 1603, but according to his latitude, it was not this river; and even if it was, there is no evidence that he entered it.

The honor of its discovery must practically rest with Gray. The *Columbia* was the first ship to cleave its waters; his the first chart ever made of its shores; his the first landing ever effected there by a civilized man; and the name he gave it has been universally accepted. The flag which he threw to the breeze was the first ensign of any nation that was ever waved over those unexplored banks. The ceremony of occupation, under these circumstances, was something more than a holiday pastime. It was a serious act, performed in sober earnest, and reported to the world as soon as possible.

And when we remember that, as a result of this, came the Lewis and Clarke Expedition of 1804-05 and the settlement at Astoria in 1811, — to say nothing of our diplomatic acquisition of the old Spanish rights, — then we may safely say that the title of the United States to the Columbia River and its tributaries becomes incontestable. Such was the outcome of the "Oregon Question" in 1846.

May 20 (says the *Columbia* log). At three quarters past two a fresh wind came in from seaward; we immediately came to sail and beat over the bar, having from five to six fathoms water in the channel. At 5 P.M. we were out, clear of all the bars, and in 20 fathoms water. A breeze came from the southward. We bore away to the northward; set all sail to the best advantage. At eight Cape Hancock bore southeast, distant three leagues; the north extremity of the land in sight bore north-by-west. At nine, in steering and topgallant sails; midnight, light airs.

On leaving the river, the *Columbia* sailed up to Naspatie, where she was obliged to use her guns again to check a hostile demonstration of the savages, and soon after, in going up Pintard's Sound, she was again formidably attacked by war canoes, and obliged to open fire upon them, with serious results. In a cruise, soon

after, the ship struck on a rock off the east coast of Queen Charlotte's Island, and was so badly injured that she returned to Naspatec and underwent some repairs, and then sailed for Nootka, and, July 23, reported her condition to the Governor, Don Quadra, who generously offered every assistance, allowed them his storehouses for their cargo, gave up the second best house in his settlement for the use of Captain Gray and his clerk, and insisted upon having their company at his sumptuous table at every meal. Such politeness was, of course, very agreeable to the weary voyagers, and Captain Gray later named his first-born son Robert Don Quadra Gray, in grateful remembrance of the Governor. It was during this visit that Gray and Ingraham wrote their joint letter to the Governor, which was often quoted in the course of the Anglo-Spanish negotiations. In September, Gray sold the little sloop *Adventure* to Quadra for seventy-five sea otter skins of the best quality, and transferred her officers and crew to the *Columbia*.

He then shaped his course for China, but as the season was late and the winds unfavorable, he abandoned the project of visiting Japan, as recommended by his owners.

They had an easy run to the Sandwich Islands, where they took in a supply of provisions and fruits, sailing again November 3 and reaching Macao Roads December 7, in a somewhat leaky condition. The skins were sent on to Canton and the ship was repaired near Whampoa, and duly freighted with tea, sugar, chinaware and curios.

On February 3 the *Columbia* set sail for Boston. While at anchor near Bocea Tigris, her cable was cut by the Chinese and she drifted slowly ashore, almost unobserved by the officer of the watch. In the Straits of Sunda they met a British fleet, escorting Lord Macartney, the Ambassador to Peking, for whom Captain Gray took despatches as far as St. Helena.

At last, after all her wanderings, the good ship reached Boston July 29, 1793, and received another hearty welcome. Although the expectations of the owners were not realized, one of them wrote, "She has made a saving voyage, and some profit." But the discovery of the great river was sufficient "profit" for any vessel, and this alone will immortalize the owners, as *well as the ship* and her Captain, far more than teas or furs or gold could have done. In a few years the ship was worn out and taken to pieces. Gray commanded several vessels after this, and died in 1806 at Charleston, S. C. Ingraham became an officer in our navy, but went down with the ill-fated *Pickering* in 1800. The

same year Davidson was lost on the *Rover* in the Pacific. Haswell sailed for the last time in 1801, and was also lost on the return voyage.

Their names will always be associated with the ship they served so well; and as long as the broad "River of the West" flows on its course, so long will the *Columbia* be gratefully remembered by the American people. (See "History of Ship-building on the North River, Mass.", by L. V. Briggs, pp. 297-310, 1889.)

The following records are some of the properties in which James Briggs was interested:

James Briggs of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of £17 paid by Isaac Damon of the same yeoman, deeds lot that at one time belonged to John Dwelley. Also signed by *Hannah Briggs his wife*. This land was in "the Beechwoods." Deed dated May 12, 1760. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 52, p. 65.)

Desire Bell of Boston, spinster, and Job Neal & Sarah Neal, his wife, and *James Briggs and Hannah his wife*, all of Scituate, yeomans, in consideration of £13 10s, 0d paid by John Damon of Scituate yeoman, deed land in same at a place called *Taunton Dean*.^{*} Dated April 24, 1767. (Vol. 54, p. 87.) [The Neals were neighbors of *James Briggs*, and lived on the corner of the main road and Neal Gate Road, which at that time was a private way leading to the Briggs shipyard and Judge Cushing's farm at Belle House Neck.]

Indenture made November 19th, 1773, between Thomas Pincin, James Curtis & Caleb Nichols of Scituate yeomen of the first part, *James Briggs* of Scituate of the second part, James Jenkins of same yeoman of the third part, Benjamin Clap Jr. of same yeoman of the fourth part, Lemuel Curtis & John Curtis of same yeomen of the fifth part, and Joseph Nash Jr. of same yeoman of the sixth part. The above named stand seized of a certain tract of land in same, at a place called Mountblew, partly upland and partly swamp land. Made to them by John Savage & Hebijah Savage in 1733. None of them should hold more than one sixteenth. Therefore a great division is made amongst them. (Vol. 74, p. 120.)

James Briggs with the Claps, Nashes, Curtises, Pincins, and

^{*} Taunton Dean brook and bridge were near John Damon's and Halifax hill, southwest of Mount Blue.

Jenkinses deed a swamp in *Johnson's Swamp** for £100 paid by Samuel Stockbridge of Scituate, as were all the aforesaid. Dec. 5, 1778. (Vol. 61, p. 82.) [Samuel Stockbridge lived on the summit of Mount Blue, on the edge of pasture now (1936) of Carleton Litchfield.]

April 13, 1782. Land sold for benefit of *James Briggs* on account of Judgment in his favor against Jacob Smith of Abington. (Vol. 61, p. 113.)

Jany. 3, 1788. *James Briggs Jr.* of Scituate, in consideration of £40 paid by Rev'd David Barnes of Scituate, deeds 38th lot lying in *Burnt Plain Cedar Swamp*. (Vol. 72, p. 71.) [Burnt Plain was between Mount Blue and Hoop Pole Hill, one mile northwest of the hill.]

On 7 May 1787 John Neall and Sarah, his wife, deeded to James Briggs all his farm buildings, orchards, thereon, etc., that came to him from his father, Job Neall, in 1785.

27 Sept. 1791. *James Briggs* of Scituate, in consideration of £22, 10s, 0d paid by Charles Cole of same yeoman, deeds salt marsh adjoining *Herring River*. Also signed by *Hannah Briggs his wife*. (Vol. 74, p. 57.)

John Briggs, *James Briggs*, William Briggs yeoman, all of Scituate, Seth Briggs of Pembroke yeoman & Rachel Hatch of Marshfield, widow, in consideration of £8 paid by Joshua Man of Hanover, gentleman, deed cedar swamp in Abington, part of 7th Lot. Dec. 7, 1791. (Vol. 82, p. 60.)

25 Sept. 1793. In the House of Representatives, . . . On the petition of *James Briggs* praying that the administrators of *James Briggs the third*, deceased, may be impowered to give and execute to him a deed of a certain piece of Salt marsh, part of the estate of the said *James Briggs, deceased*, for reasons set forth in his petition. Ordered that the petitioner notify all concerned by leaving with the Guardians of the heirs of the said *James Briggs, deceased*, if any there be, and with the administrators to said estate an attested Copy of his petition and this order thereon, at least fourteen days before the second Wednesday of the next Setting of the General Court, that they at that time may appear and show cause, if any, they have, why the prayer of said petition should not be granted.

* Johnson's Swamp lay a short distance north of Mount Blue, in part over the present Scituate line, west of Beechwoods and Mount Hope.

In Senate read and Concurred. (Plymouth County Records and Court Records of Mass., Vol. 51, p. 98.)

Feb. 10, 1797. *James Briggs* of Scituate in Consideration of \$250 paid by Joseph Cushing of Scituate yeoman, deeds 30 acres of pasture land bounded by Samuel Silvester's land and Pickles Cushing's. (Vol. 84, p. 41.)

James Briggs of Scituate, in consideration of the love and good will he bears to his two daughters Sarah and Lucy Briggs, both of same, single women, deeds the whole of his estate both real and personal received as an heir at law from Deborah Clap Briggs, late of same, spinster, with all his right, title, etc. in the same. Sept. 17, 1799. (Vol. 87, p. 124.)

James Briggs, Sarah Briggs single woman, Lucy Briggs single woman, all of Scituate, in consideration of \$100 paid by Uriah Lincoln of Cohasset, deeds pasture land situated on Long Lane* in same. Dec. 3, 1799. (Vol. 91, p. 110.)

James Briggs of Scituate, in consideration of \$80 paid by James Jenkins, cordwainer, & Caleb Jenkins yeoman, both of Scituate, deeds woodland part of the Savage lot at Mount Blue. Jan. 15, 1800. (Vol. 88, p. 16.)

CAPT. JAMES⁴ BRIGGS, JR., married (int.) 14 Dec. 1745 Hannah Barker, born 17 Jan. 1734, daughter of Barnabas and Hannah (Turner) Barker. She died 16 May 1792. (See Barker and Turner in later chapter.)

James⁴ died 29 May 1804. His will was signed and witnessed 12 Feb. 1793.

WILL OF JAMES⁴ BRIGGS

In the Name of God Amen

This Twelveth Day of February 1793, I JAMES BRIGGS of Scituate in the County of Plymouth, being aged and Inferm, but of sound mind and memory thanks be to God, therefore Calling to mind the mortality of my Body, & knowing that it is Appointed for all men once to Die. I do therefore make and ordain this my last Will & Testament in manner & form following, that is to Say

Inprimis I give & bequeath, to my Daughter Hannah Clap, Ten acres of Pasture land off from the Weasterly Part of my

* Long Lane extends from High Street, Scituate, to Beechwood Street, Cohasset.

NORTH RIVER BRIDGE

BETWEEN

PEMBROKE AND HANOVER

FIRST BRIDGE ERECTED

1656

THE SECOND, "A CART BRIDGE"

1682

BY WM. BARSTOW FOR FOOT & HORSE BOTH BY ORDER OF THE COLONY COURT

THESE WERE SITUATED 100 FEET ABOVE THIS STRUCTURE

THIRD BRIDGE BUILT BY ORDER OF THE COUNTY COMMISSIONERS IN 1829

REPLACED BY
THIS BRIDGE

ERECTED BY THE

COMMONWEALTH, COUNTY AND TOWNS

A. D. — 1904

WIDTH OF SPAN 40 FT.

HEIGHT ABOVE MEAN LOW WATER 23 FT.

WIDTH OF ROADWAY 40 FT.

ON
NORTH RIVER

BETWEEN 1678 & 1871

MORE THAN 1000 VESSELS OF FROM 30 TO 470 TONS WERE BUILT
OF THESE IN 1772 ISHABOD THOMAS CONSTRUCTED THE SHIP BEDFORD
AND THE BRIG BEAVER. THE FORMER WAS THE FIRST VESSEL
TO DISPLAY THE UNITED STATES FLAG IN EUROPEAN WATERS
OFF TRINITY ENGLAND FEB. 6 1783. THE LATTER WAS ONE OF THE
FAMOUS TEA SHIPS OF BOSTON HARBOR.

THE SHIP COLUMBIA 212 TONS
MOUNTING 10 GUNS BUILT BY JAMES BRIGGS IN 1773 WAS THE
FIRST U. S. VESSEL TO CIRCUMNAVIGATE THE GLOBE
IN 1792 HER CAPTAIN ROBERT GRAY DISCOVERED
THE COLUMBIA RIVER AND IT WAS
FROM THIS VESSEL THAT THE RIVER
RECEIVED ITS NAME

Pasture that lyeth in Scituate aforsd, & adjoining to the land of Pickles Cushing, to improve During her Natural life; & in case she the said Hannah, Should die without Heirs, then my mind & will is, that the above mentioned Ten acres of land should Desend in fee, to my other Two Daughters, Sarah Briggs, & Lucy Briggs, to them & their Heirs & assigns forever, to be equealy Divided between them.

Item I give to my said Two Daughters Sarah Briggs, & Lucy Briggs, all the Remainder of the above mentioned Pasture, be the Same moure or Less — allso I give to my Two Daughters last mentioned, the whole of *my home stead farm*, Including my *Dwelling House Standing thereon* — allso I Give to my Said Two Daughters Sarah & Lucy, my Wood Lott lying at Mount Blue So called, Containing five acres & an halfe Be the Same more or less, to them & their Heirs & assigns forever — to be Divided Equealy between them.

Item I give to my SON THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS my Pew on the lower floor in the South Precient meeting House in Said Scituate, to him & his Heirs & assigns forever.

Item I give to my Grand Daughter Deborah Clap Briggs, the sum of Six Shillings, to be paid her at my Decease, by my Executrixes hereafter mentioned.

Item I further Give to my Said Two Daughters Sarah Briggs, & Lucy Briggs the whole of my Personal Estate, & allso, all the Remainder of my Real Estate that I Should Die Seized of — which I have not heretofore Given away in this my last Will & Testament to their own disposal forever, thay Paying all my Just Debts Legeses & Funeril Charges Equealy between them, — and I Do hereby Constitute & appoint my sd Two Daughters Sarah Briggs, & Lucy Briggs to be my Sole Executrixes to this — my last Will & Testament — In Witness Whereof, I have hereunto Set my hand and Seal, the Day & year first above written.

Signed, Scaled, Publisht & Declared JAMES BRIGGS seal
by the Said James Briggs, as his last
Will & Testament, in Presants of

JAMES BRIGGS, Jnr.

Dead. JOSEPH NORTHEY

THOS. COLMAN Jnr.

A true copy

Attest:

SUMNER A. CHAPMAN,
Register.

Children of JAMES¹ and HANNAH BARKER BRIGGS:

- i. HANNAH, b. 31 Dec. 1746; m. Joshua Clap 1787 (second wife).
- ii. SARAH, b. 3 Nov. 1748; d. 3 Oct. 1752.
- iii. LUCY, b. 15 Apr. 1751; d. 7 Oct. 1752.
- 57. iv. JAMES, b. 14 Mar. 1753; m. Deborah Clap.
- v. SARAH, }
- twins, b. 7 July 1755 { d. 9 Oct. 1819 ac. 64; unnm.
- vi. LUCY, } { d. Mar. 1832 ac. 76; unnm.
- 58. vii. THOMAS BARKER,⁵ b. 13 July 1757; m. Lucy Otis.

36. SETH⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 28 Aug. 1721, and died in Pembroke 23 July 1801. He was a shipwright and built vessels at the "Brick Kilns," on the Pembroke side of North River. His six sons served their apprenticeship with their father, and sons Elisha and Alden succeeded him at that yard, while Enos, Daniel, Thomas and Seth became prominent builders at Salem and Milton.

Seth⁴ Briggs served in the War of the Revolution:

Seth Briggs appears with rank of Corporal on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Ignatius Loring's Co., Lt. Col. Putnam's Regt. Time of enlistment Sept. 4, 1781. Time of discharge, Dec. 8, 1781. Time of service 3 months 17 days. (12 days travel included) Plymouth Co. Regt. raised for 3 months to reinforce Army under Gen. Washington. (Various Service, Vol. 20, p. 219.)

24 May 1751. Benjamin Turner gent. & Seth Briggs shipwright of Pembroke, are co-partners in a certain farm (14 acres) in Pembroke, bought of Josiah Keene of Pembroke. They divide the same half to each. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 42, p. 156.)

1 March 1764, Seth Briggs of Pembroke, shipwright, in consideration of 40s paid them by Isaac Keene of Pembroke, yeoman, and Abigail his wife, grants them a drift way across his farm which he bought of Abraham Booth. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 49, p. 122.)

3 April 1764, Seth Briggs of Pembroke, shipwright, in consideration of £25, 6s, 8d paid by Ebenezer Man of Pembroke, shipwright, deeds meadow land in same at Booth's Landing. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 49, p. 90.)

Suffolk Co. Deeds, Lib. 122, p. 226. Rec. 13 Jan. 1773.

Robert Gardner of Hingham in consideration of £14 paid by Seth Briggs of Pembroke, Yeoman, and Adam Stowell of Hingham, Yeoman, conveys a piece of land in Hingham containing one acre, with barn standing thereon, bounded Southerly on land belonging to heirs of Edward Wilder deceased; Westerly on the highway; and Northerly and Easterly on Gardner's land. Also a piece of Cedar Swamp in Scituate containing four acres, bounded Southerly upon land of John Ruggles; Westerly on land of John Fearing; Northerly on land of Benjamin Gardner; Easterly on land of Samuel Gardner. Dated 21 Dec. 1772.

Signed, ROBERT GARNETT.

2 April 1784, Seth Briggs & Abigail his wife of Pembroke, yeoman, in consideration of £42, 8s, 0d, paid by William Church of Scituate, yeoman, deed real estate, both lands and Houses that our honored father Nath'l Church died seized of unto him. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 77, p. 234.)

19 Sept. 1786, David Stockbridge of Hanover Esq., Anthony Thomas of Marshfield gentleman & Seth Briggs of Pembroke shipwright, in consideration of £160 paid by John House Jr. & John House both of Hanover, blacksmiths, deed $\frac{1}{2}$ of $\frac{3}{4}$ of $\frac{1}{8}$ of a coal house, and likewise a like share of some land, part of a dam & forge etc. in Hanover. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 54, p. 256.)

Dec. 5, 1788, Seth & William Brigs Non-resident proprietors land containing 41 acres sold for tax to Thomas Young of Ashford. (Windham Co., Conn., Deeds, 12-36.)

3 Feb. 1794, Seth Briggs of Pembroke shipwright & Abigail his wife, in consideration of £182 paid by Alden Briggs of Pembroke, gentleman, deeds two parcels of land in same. One parcel lies near Brickiles Landing Place, land which Seth had with Benj. Turner & Josiah Keen, together with the buildings thereon. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 76, p. 151.)

Seth⁴ Briggs married (int.) 2 Nov. 1745, Abigail Church, born in Scituate 11 Feb. 1726, daughter of Nathaniel and Jerusha (Perry) Church. She died in Pembroke 3 Nov. 1795.

Nathaniel Church was in Scituate in 1666. Deane says Richard Church, early of Hingham, had a son Nathaniel, as Hobart's Journal testifies, and he may have been the Nathaniel of Scitu-

ate. Richard of Hingham was probably a brother of Joseph (the father of Col. Benjamin Church), at least there has been a tradition in the family here, that their first ancestor was his relative. Nathaniel Church had a farm in Scituate, laid out to him on the North River, including the Bald Hills. His house stood near the river, nearly opposite Job's Landing. Nathaniel Church, born 1670, son of Nathaniel, married 7 Jan. 1696/7, Judith Bosworth of Hull. Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel and Judith (Bosworth), born 1698, married, 24 March 1719, Jerusha Perry, born 11 Feb. 1699/1700, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Lobdell) Perry.

Children of Seth⁴ Briggs and Abigail Church:

59. i. ENOS, b. 20 July 1746; bpt. 7 Sept. 1746 in Second Church, Scituate; m. Sarah Thomas.
60. ii. SETH, b. 8 Nov. 1748; m. Deborah Barker.
61. iii. ELISHA, b. 21 Dec. 1750; m. Laurentia Hall.
62. iv. DANIEL, b. 14 Apr. 1754; m. (1) Jane —; (2) Alice Street.
63. v. ABIGAIL (NABBY), b. 1 July 1756; m. 67. William Briggs.
64. vi. THOMAS, b. 22 Aug. 1758; m. Sukey Blake.
- vii. MARY, b. 25 May 1760; m. Thomas Sprout of Middleborough.
65. viii. ALDEN, b. 17 Mar. 1763; m. Merey Hatch.
66. ix. JUDITH, b. 7 May 1765; m. (1) Clement Drew; (2) Wm. Vose.
- x. RHODA, b. 8 Feb. 1770; d. 15 Feb. 1770.

FAMILY BIBLE RECORD

(In possession of Miss Katherine R. Briggs of Brookline, Mass.)

A record of Seth Briggs his wife & all their children's ages.
 firstly Seth Briggs was born Aug. 22, 1721
 Abigail Church his wife was born Feb. 11 1726
 They were married in 1745
 their children's ages.

Enos was born of a tuesday July 29	1746
Seth was born of a tuesday Nov 8	1748
Elisha was born on Saboth Day Dec 2	1750
Daniel was Born on Sabouth Day Apr 14	1754
Naby was Born on Thursday July 1	1756
Thomas was Born on tuesday Aug 22	1758

Mary Born on Monday May 25	1761
Alden Born Monday Mar 14	1763
Judeth Born Wednesday May 1	1765
Rhoday Born tuesday Feb 8	1770

Deaths of the Above

		Aged
Rhoday died Feb 15	1770	8 days
Seth Jr Died June 17	1781	33 years
Abigail Died Dec	1795 (mother)	69
Seth Died July 23	1801 (father)	80
Thomas Died Apr 20	1810 at Dorehester	52
Naby Died Nov 14	1815 at Milton	59
Enos Died Oct 9	1819 at Salem	73
Daniel Died Aug 11	1825 at Milton	71
Judeth died May 31	1829 at Boston	64
Polly (Mary) died Sept 3	1834 at Middleborough	73
Elisha died Sept 10	1836 at Pembroke	85
Alden died May 21	1849 at Pembroke	86

37. HANNAH⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 27 Nov. 1724 in the 16. James Briggs house, near Stony Cove Brook. She married 2 Dec. 1746 John Holmes, Jr., of Boston, who was a grandson of Sarah Holmes, the second wife of Judge John Cushing the First. Sarah Holmes was a daughter of John Thaxter of Hingham, and married Nathaniel Holmes by whom she had several children. Her daughter, Elizabeth Holmes, was the first wife of Judge John Cushing the Second, son of Judge John the First; her sons were Nathaniel Holmes of Boston, and John, who married 25 Nov. 1714 Widow Susanna Stetson in Scituate, the year of his mother's second marriage to Judge Cushing.

Susanna Stetson, wife of John Holmes, was born 15 Nov. 1687, a daughter of Isaac and Susanna (Barstow) Randall, who lived upon River Street (Norwell) on the site of the residence of Elisha Foster, Jr. (in 1936, Edward P. Keefe's). Susanna Randall married, first, in Scituate, 28 July 1710, Nathaniel Stetson, son of Robert and Joanna (Brooks) Stetson, and grandson of Cornet Robert Stetson. They resided in Pembroke. He died 12 Apr. 1713. (His broken headstone is in the Scituate Second Parish cemetery.) By her first husband, Nathaniel Stetson, Susanna

Randall had a daughter, Susanna Stetson, who died 23 Oct. 1715; by her second husband, John Holmes, she had children: Ruth and Deborah (twins), born 22 June 1719; Abigail, born 21 Feb. 1720; and John, Jr. (probably born in Boston, as his birth is not found on Scituate records, as were those of his sisters). Susanna (Stetson) Holmes died 22 Oct. 1732.

Children of Hannah⁴ Briggs and John Holmes, Jr.:

- i. HANNAH HOLMES, b. 3 Aug. 1754 in Scituate.
- ii. SARAH HOLMES, b. 10 Nov. 1756 in Scituate.

There may have been older children born in Boston.

38. RACHEL⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 23 Dec. 1726 in the homestead near Stony Cove Brook. She married for her first husband, (int.) 26 Oct. 1745, Samuel Curtis, born in Scituate 2 Apr. 1724, a son of Benjamin and Rebecca (House) Curtis. He died 24 Jan. 1756.

Benjamin Curtis was a son of Samuel Curtis of Curtis or Buttonwood Hill, and his wife, Elizabeth Tilden, daughter of Deacon Joseph and Ellice (Twisden). (See Tilden chapter.) Several cellar holes of old houses can be located on Cross Street, Norwell, east of the George Griggs house, now (1936) owned by Francis Lincoln of Hingham. These cellar holes are said to have been those of several Curtis houses. Capt. Elijah Curtis, Sr., a younger brother of Benjamin, lived in one of the houses on Curtis Hill until he purchased the Joseph Foster house on the main street, when the latter removed to Maine, which later was purchased by Dr. Cushing Otis. (See Otis family chapter.) Capt. Elijah Curtis, Jr., built the house now (1936) known as "The May Elms," residence of Arthur L. and Mary (Nash) Power. Rebecca House, wife of Benjamin Curtis, was a daughter of Samuel House, the shipwright, who lived near Hobart's Landing, and built vessels at the shipyard at that place, succeeding his father-in-law, Thomas Nichols, whose daughter Rebecca he married in 1664. This yard after 1750 was that of 35. James Briggs.

After the death of Samuel Curtis, in 1756, Rachel⁴ (Briggs) Curtis married for a second husband, 25 Nov. 1761, Jonathan Hatch, probably of Marshfield, son of Is-

rael and Rachel (Hatch) Hatch, baptized in Marshfield 8 June 1712.

Children of Rachel⁴ Briggs and Samuel Curtis:

- i. ELIZABETH CURTIS, b. 14 Nov. 1746; m. Nathaniel Joyce of Marshfield 18 Jan. 1764 in Marshfield.
- ii. JOB CURTIS, b. 3 July 1748; m. Mrs. Abigail Beals of Hingham 8 Dec. 1770 in Hingham.
- iii. SAMUEL CURTIS, b. 15 June 1750; m. 31 Aug. 1769, Rhoda Vinal, dau. of Stephen, Jr.; resided in Marshfield.
- iv. ENOCH CURTIS, b. 3 July 1752; m. 7 Dec. 1773, in Marshfield, Martha Sherman of Marshfield.
- v. CHRISTOPHER CURTIS, b. 27 Sept. 1754.

39. CORNELIUS⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 3 Nov. 1728, in the home at Stony Cove Brook. He died in Scituate 26 Sept. 1769.

1760. Cornelius Briggs of Scituate in the County of Plymouth yeoman deeds one third part of a tract of land in Ashford to Elisha Tolman The whole tract being Two hundred acres mor or less was derived to me & my brothers Seth & William by my Hon^d Father James Briggs late of scituate Cordwainer Dec^d In and by his Last will & Testament. Jerusha the wife of said Cornelius grants her Right of Dower. (Windham Co., Conn., Deeds, 12-85.)

Aug. 20, 1771. Jerusha Briggs of Scituate widow, administratrix of estate of Cornelius Briggs late of same, yeoman deceased, in consideration of £6, 13s, 4d paid by Noah Nichols of same, mariner, deeds land bordering on the land of Dr. Isaac Otis (near Wilson Hill). (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 56, p. 197.)

Jan. 30, 1797. Jerusha Briggs of Scituate, widow, in consideration of \$112.25 paid by Lemuel Church, deeds land in Scituate near land of Lemuel Church. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 84, p. 40.) [This land was near the "Bald Hills." Lemuel lived on the farm laid out to Nathaniel Church in 1666, opposite to Job's Landing on the east side of North River, below the "Brick Kilns."]

Cornelius⁴ Briggs married 25 May 1753 Jerusha Church, born 8 Mar. 1732, daughter of Nathaniel and Jerusha (Perry) Church, and sister of Abigail, wife of Cornelius⁴ brother, 36. Seth⁴ Briggs.

Children of Cornelius⁴ Briggs and Jerusha Church:

- i. MARY, b. 18 Dec. 1755.
- 67. ii. CORNELIUS, b. 5 Oct. 1757; he probably m. Mary Lovell.
- iii. SAMUEL, b. 12 Jan. 1762; d. 30 Oct. 1769.
- 68. iv. JERUSHA, b. 29 June 1764; m. Samuel Nash 13 June 1784.
- v. CHURCH, b. 6 Dec. 1768.

40. WILLIAM⁴ BRIGGS (16. *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), the youngest son of James³ and Hannah (Stowell) Briggs, was born 23 July 1731. He was a yeoman and a shoemaker, and resided on Stetson Road, now (1936) so called, in a house which stood a little north and behind the Major Pratt house (Mrs. Elizabeth Ramsdell's). This Briggs house was taken down by Major Pratt, when he built the house now standing there.

William⁴ Briggs was a soldier in the Revolution.

William Briggs, Seituete, Clerk, Capt. Galen Clapp's (2d Seituete) co. of Minute-men, Col. Anthony Thomas's regt., which marched on the alarm of April 19, 1775; service 4 days; also, Private, Capt. Hayward Peiree's co. Col. Jeremiah Hall's regt.; marched Dec. 10, 1776; service, 3 mos, 2 days: company raised in Seituete and Hanover to serve at Bristol, R. I. (See "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 523.)

The Ninth day of April 1792, — William Briggs of Situate in the County of Plymouth yeoman Charles Tolman of said Situate Housewright and Samuel Tolman of said Situate Housewright Quit Claim Deed about one hundred & Eighty acres of Wood land more or less in the Town of Ashford in the right of James Briggs late of Situate in the County of Plymouth Deceased to Samuel Kingsbury of Ashford. (Windham Co., Conn., Deeds, Vol. 13, p. 136.)

31 Jan. 1793. William Briggs of Seituete in consideration of £24, 0s, 4d paid by Matthew Stetson of same yeoman, deeds land in same near Michal Foords range. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 74, p. 35.) [Michael Ford, shipwright, purchased the Ebenezer Stetson farm on North River, one half mile above the "Cornet's Rocks." It has been known for many years as the David Barnes Ford place. It was purchased by Michael Ford about 1778.]

William⁴ Briggs married Elizabeth Copeland 6 June 1754, daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Tolman) Copeland, born 6 May 1736 and died in Aug. 1828.

Joseph Copeland, a descendant of Lawrence Copeland, an early settler in Braintree, came from Bridgewater to Scituate in 1730, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Benjamin Tolman, in 1735. He succeeded to Captain Tolman's residence (now (1936) Mrs. James Hall's) on Stetson Road, where he continued the tannery of his father-in-law. Capt. Benjamin Tolman was a son of John Tolman of Dorchester, and grandson of Thomas Tolman, who was in Dorchester before 1640. Captain Benjamin came from Dorchester to Scituate in 1709, and married that year, Widow Elizabeth (Perry) Palmer, widow of Bezaleel, and daughter of William and Elizabeth (Lobdell) Perry, who resided in what is called Howland's field, on the corner of River Street and Stetson Road, at the Church Hill end of that road.

Children of William⁴ Briggs and Elizabeth Copeland:

- 69. i. RACHEL, b. 19 Aug. 1755; m. Asa Copeland of Norton.
- 70. ii. RUTH, b. 13 Aug. 1757; m. William Cushing of Pembroke.
- 71. iii. WILLIAM, b. 15 March, 1760; m. 60. Nabby Briggs.
- 72. iv. ELIJAH, b. 17 July 1762; m. Hannah Buffington.
 - v. LEMUEL, b. 25 March 1765.
 - vi. ELIZABETH, b. 15 July 1767; m. Elijah Sylvester of Hanover 13 Oct. 1791 and d. 23 Jan. 1792.
 - vii. JOHN, b. 24 Feb. 1770; m. Deborah Thomas.
- 73. viii. CHARLES, b. 8 Feb. 1773; m. Elizabeth Smith.
 - ix. CORNELIUS, b. 2 Aug. 1776.
 - x. HULDAH, b. 3 Sept. 1780; d. 28 Oct. 1863 ae. 84; unm.

CHAPTER IX

ANCESTRY OF HANNAH BARKER, WIFE OF JAMES⁴ BRIGGS

THE BARKERS—RICHARD WARREN OF THE “MAYFLOWER”—
JOHN WILLIAMS, ANTHONY ANNABLE, JR.—HUMPHREY
TURNER, EBENEZER STETSON, EDWARD JENKINS—AND
OTHERS, ALL ANCESTORS

THE BARKER ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

HANNAH⁴ BARKER, born 17 Jan. 1724, was a daughter of *Barnabas Barker* and his first wife, *Hannah Turner*, the latter a daughter of *Thomas, Esq.*, and *Hannah (Jenkins) Turner* of Scituate.

Two brothers, JOHN¹ and ROBERT¹ BARKER, are said to have arrived at Plymouth as early as 1628–30. They were from County Kent, England, sons of Sir ROBERT BARKER and his wife CATHERINE ACKWORTH. (One Robert Barker and Katherine Ackford were married in 1600, in Plymouth, St. Andrews, Devon.) They settled, first, at Jones's River (Duxbury), where they carried on the trade of brickmasons until 1641, when they purchased 100 acres of land in Marshfield, and the Brewster ferry privilege from Jonathan Brewster, son of Elder William. This ferry had been established by order of the Colony Court in 1638, near the mouth of the North River, below “New Harbour Marshes.” Soon after 1700 this ferry became known as “White's Ferry” (from Benjamin White), a name by which it is known at the present day, although the rather meaningless, though euphonious, name of “Humarock” was given to the locality when the development of the section into a summer colony was begun. It is believed that the name was suggested by certain marsh islands in North River, near by, which had been called “The Hummocks.” (See “Barker Genealogy,” by Elizabeth Frye Barker, who takes John and Robert Barker back to Randolph de Calverhall, A.D. 1200.)

As both JOHN and ROBERT BARKER married daughters of JOHN WILLIAMS of Scituate, *John* having married ANN

WILLIAMS in 1632, the year of John Williams' arrival in Scituate in company with Timothy Hatherley, it is reasonable to believe that the Barker brothers came with the earliest of the "Men of Kent," several of whom arrived before 1628.

1. JOHN¹ BARKER, the elder of the brothers, was born in England between 1610 and 1613. He was a brickmason, and among his apprentices was William Bardin, who, at the end of his time, was to receive from John¹ Barker "20 bushels of corn, 2 suits of *apparel* and a *ewe goats lamb*." William Bardin married John Barker's daughter.

In 1643 JOHN¹ BARKER was a member of the Marshfield Military Company under Lieut. Nathaniel Thomas. In 1648 he got into a dispute with a neighbor about a boundary line, and the Court directed John Alden and Myles Standish to "set at rights such differences as are betwixt them." *John¹ Barker* was admitted a "freeman" in 1651. He was drowned at his ferry on 14 Dec. 1652, leaving an estate of £131.

JOHN¹ BARKER married, in 1632, ANN WILLIAMS, born in England, a daughter of JOHN and ANN (—) WILLIAMS, who came to Scituate in 1632, and took up a farm on the north of Scituate Harbor, where he built a house as early as 1634. He built it so substantially that, because of its strength and commanding position overlooking the harbor and village, it was designed to become the principal garrison house for the protection of the settlers during the Indian wars. A portion of this original dwelling remains, incorporated in the house now (1936) standing on the site. Until the house passed out of the possession of the Barkers and alterations were made, after 1910, one of the old portholes, in what had been the south wall, overlooking the village, was frequently shown to inquiring visitors. (It was shown to me on two occasions.) This farm of John Williams was included in the grant of 1,600 acres north of Satuit Brook, made to Mr. Hatherley and his partners in 1637 by the Colony Court. In 1646 JOHN WILLIAMS became one of the Conihassett Partners, receiving from Mr. Hatherley the farm which he had occupied since 1634, as his *quarter* of the purchase of 1,200 acres that were sold to the Partners for £180. This farm of 300 acres was inherited by Capt. John Williams, his oldest son.

Children of JOHN¹ BARKER and ANN WILLIAMS:

- i. Deborah, b. 1639; m. 11 July 1660 William Bardin of Barnstable, later of Middleborough.
- ii. Anna, b. 1643; m. — Pratt.

- iii. Mary, b. 1647; m. (1) Samuel Pratt; (2) Francis Coombs; (3) 5 Mar. 1685 David Woods.
- 3. iv. John, b. 1650; m. (1) Desire Annable; (2) Widow Hannah (Loring) Cushing.

In 1653 Anna (Williams) Barker, widow of John, married Abraham Blush (or Blish) of Boston and Barnstable. She died in Barnstable 16 Mar. 1657/8.

WILL OF CAPT. JOHN WILLIAMS

Will of Capt. John Williams 1691, (bro. of Ann (Williams) Barker, mentions kinswomen Deborah Burdin of Middleboro', Anna Pratt, Mary Wood and her children, with exception of "those children she had by her husband Coombs whom I have formerly taken care of and provided for." Also mentions nephew Abraham Blush of Boston, to whom he gives house and lands at Seitate.

As to possible Barker connection. one Robert Barker mar Margaret Dorant at Burlingham St Peter Norfolk 31 May 1574

One Robert Barker mar Susan Waters 21 Sept 1620 at Upton Norfolk

One Thos Barker mar Susan Jaxson 8 Feb 1559 at Dunham Magna Norfolk

One John Barker mar Alice Heynow 6 July 1567 at Dunham Magna Norfolk

One John son of Thomas Barker was bapt 18 July 1596 at Bury Lancashire

One John son of Richard Barker was bapt 6 Oct. 1616 at Collier Lancashire

One Robert Barker mar Joan Row 1598 at Stepney, Middlesex

One Robert Barker mar Eliz. Masters 1597 at St Martins Fields, Middlesex

One Robert Barker mar Judith Stodard 1586 at St. Olave's Hart St, Middlesex

One Robert Barker mar Agn. Turner 1604 at St Martins Fields Middlesex

One Robert Barker mar Katherine Hobson 1590 at Coniscliffe Durham

One Robert Barker mar Eliz Moor 1593 at Whalley Lancaster

One Robert Barker died in Nayland County Suffolk 1632 leaving a will of property to son Robert and 5 daughters

One Thomas a son of Robt Barker was bpt 8 June 1595 at St Botolph Bishopsgate.

2. ROBERT¹ BARKER, the younger brother, was born in England about 1615. He removed from Duxbury to Marshfield in 1641, and was a member of the Military Company under command of Lieut. Nathaniel Thomas in 1643. He was a Surveyor



BARKER HOUSE, PEMBROKE, MASS., BUILT ABOUT 1631 ON LAND CONVEYED TO
ROBERT BARKER BY CAPT. MYLES STANDISH



OLD BARKER GARRISON OR BLOCKHOUSE; THE PART WITH STICK IN THE CHIMNEY
BUILT IN 1637

in Marshfield in 1645 and 1648; Constable in 1646; and on Grand Jury from Marshfield in 1669.

Robert Barker deeds to his brother John Barker land on the South River. June 19th, 1648. (Plymouth Co. Records, Vol. 1, p. 1.)

The tradition of an early expedition to the vicinity of the Namassakeeset seems to be verified, for in 1651 Capt. Myles Standish conveyed 51 acres to Robert Barker, and on 2 Aug. 1653 Robert petitioned for the laying out of other lands there. The section was then a part of the town of Duxbury, set off from Plymouth in 1637, but now in Pembroke. Tradition says that Robert, with two companions, ascended the Indian Head River, and at the fork of the Namassakeeset and Indian Head rivers they followed the Namassakeeset until they found a suitable camping place. Before winter arrived they had built a rude dwelling, in which they are said to have passed the winter. It was built of flat stones laid in a clay mortar, materials that were found in the locality, which Robert, being a brickmason, knew how to utilize. It consisted of a single room about 15 to 20 feet square, with a huge fireplace, which took up a good part of one wall. L. Cabot Briggs has square brick tiles imported from England which formed part of the hearth of this fireplace; also kettles and other utensils used in cooking there.

Robert Barker was Surveyor in Duxbury in 1654 and 1656, and again in 1672, 1677 and 1679, and still maintained a residence in Marshfield. In 1684-85 he was Grand Juryman from Duxbury. It seems probable that he removed to Mattakeeset about 1666, when he cancelled his inn license, which he had obtained on 7 July 1646, "to retail wine" in an inn near the ferry for the accommodation of the magistrates and other travelers who might stop on their way between Plymouth and Scituate. This license he cancelled 5 June 1666, and removing to Mattakeeset he added a wooden structure to his early building of stone, building it substantially, and enclosing a well within its walls. It was loopholed for defence in case of trouble with the Indians, which precaution, as it happened, was not necessary, as his friendly relations with them saved his family and property from being molested throughout King Philip's War. The house later became a sort of inn, and was a frequent stopping place for travelers between Boston and Plymouth. Judge Sewall, in his diary, mentions stopping there on his way to Plymouth to hold court. It was generally spoken of as the "Old Garrison." There were many Indians living around the beautiful Indian Ponds (so

called), their summer camping grounds, and in 1681 Robert Barker's wife was fined for selling cider to them. Two skeletons were dug up in front of the house about 1880.

Robert Barker died in 1691, leaving an estate valued at £142 1s 11d. His wife had died previously. Many of Robert Barker's descendants were Quakers.

ROBERT¹ BARKER married before 1640 LUCY WILLIAMS, born in England, daughter of John and Ann Williams of Scituate, and sister of Ann, the wife of his brother John¹ Barker.

Children of Robert¹ Barker and Lucy Williams:

- i. Isaac, b. 1640; m. Judith Prence, dau. of Gov. Thomas and Mary (Collier); d. 1710.
- ii. Rebecca, b. —; m. William Snow of Marshfield; d. 1697.
4. iii. Francis, b. —; m. Mary Lincoln; d. 1720.
5. iv. ROBERT, b. 27 Feb. 1650; m. (1) ALICE SNOW; (2) Hannah —, (Scituate Records, 1697/9); d. 25 Oct. 1729.
- v. Abigail, b. abt. 1652; m. Joseph Rogers (son of John⁴); d. 11 June 1718.

WILL OF ROBERT¹ BARKER

Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. 1, p. 123

In the name of God Amen. This eighteenth day of february one thousand six hundred eighty & nine I, ROBERT BARKER, JR. of Duxborough in y^e County of New Plymouth in New England in America being of sound & perfect memory praise be to Almighty God, and calling to mind the eertainty of death & y^e uncertainty of y^e time of it, & being moved by the spirit of God as I am fully persuaded to get my house in order as in all good concerns as I ought to do. Doo make this my last will & testament in maner & form as followeth, hereby revoking & annulling all former wills & testaments whatsoever by me heretofore made & this only to be taken & accepted to be my last will & testament & none other.

Impr. I give & bequeath my soul to God that gave it & my body to the earth from whence it was taken to be decently buried as near unto my beloved wife & my eldest son as conveniently may be as to my exec^{os} hercafter named shall seeme meet. And as to my temporal estate which it hath pleased God to bestow upon me I do give, will & bequeath y^e same in mauner & form following. And first & principally I do make & ordain, constitute & appoint my well beloved son ffrancis Barker my whole & sole executor of this my last will & testament in every respect to act, do, & perform the place duty & office of an executor as y^e law directeth in such cases provided.

Item. I do give will & bequeath unto my son ffrancis Barker who is my executor to this my last will & testament the sum of 20£ in silver monney.

Item. I do give, will & bequeath unto my son ROBERT BARKER the sum of 10£ in silver money.

Item. I do give, will & bequeath unto my daughter Rebeckah Snow the sum of five pounds in silver money.

Item. I do give, will & bequeath to my daughter Abigail Rogers the sum of 5£ in silver money.

Item. Those above mentioned sums given unto my son ROBERT & unto my two (daughters) as they are appointed. I do give and bequeath unto them besides what they or either or any of them had formerly received of me, tho' which I do give & bequeath unto them also.

Item. I do give will & bequeath unto my Grandson, Sam^l Barker all that portion or traet of land that was bounded out of my sons ffrancis & Robert & James Bishop & made choiee of by my grandson which said portion he wished, I give as aforesaid unto my said Grandson his heirs & assigns forever provided he be the withall contented & do not disturb any of his brothers about or concerning any portion of lands that was his & their ffathers late deceased. And also I do give said Samuel Barker the sum of forty shillings to be paid in good merehantable pay. But if said Samuel shall disturb any of his brothers their heirs or assigns respecting y^e title of any such lands as was their deceased ffathers, that then it is my mind & will & I do hereby will & bequeath all that portion of land heretofore mentioned to be willed unto sd. Samuel unto such his disturbed brother as is before mentioned.

Item. I do give, will & bequeath unto my grandson ffrancis Barker & his heirs & assigns forever all that portion or traets of land & meadow which lyeth in the township of Duxborough & was bounded out by my sons ffrancis & Robert and Adams Bishop to him. Which bounds I allow of which said lands & meadows I do give on the same condition & with the same limitations, as is expressed in my bequest to my grandson Samuel Barker that portion of meadow bounded & made choiee(?) by him which I give on y^e same aecount & as I gave him the upland.

Item. I do also bequeath unto my grandson ffrancis Barker 40 s, in current pay.

Item. I do give, will & bequeath unto my grandson ROBERT BARKER & his heirs & assigns forever, all that traet or portion of upland & meadow that was bounded out to him by my order by my sons ffrancis & Robert & James Bishop which bounds I allow of which said land & meadow lyeth within the township of Duxborough, all which said upland & meadow I do give on the same aecount & with the same limitations and on the same eonditions as is expressed in my gift & bequest unto my grandson Samuel Barker. Also I do give & bequeath to said ROBERT BARKER 40 s. to be paid him when he cometh to the age of 21 years in good eurrent pay.

Item. I do give will & bequeath unto my grandson, Jabis Barker & his heirs & assigns forever all that portion or traet of upland & meadow which lyeth in the township of Duxborough and was bounded out for him by my sons ffrancis & Robert & James Bishop by my order which

said bounds I do allow of which s^d upland & meadow I do give & bequeath on the same account & with the same conditions & limitations as is expressed in my gift & bequest unto Samuel Barker. Also I do give unto the said Jabez 40 s. to be paid to him when he shall be 21 years old in good current pay.

Item. I do give & bequeath unto my grandson, Isaac Barker & his heirs & assigns forever all that portion or tract of upland & meadows which was bounded out to him according to my order by my sons Francis & Robert & James Bishop which said bounds I do allow & s^d land & meadow lyeth in the township of Duxborough all which I do give on the same account & with the same limitations & conditions as is before expressed in my gift to Samuel Barker. Also I do give to said Isaac forty shillings to be paid to him in good pay at y^e age of 21 years.

Item. I do give will & bequeath unto my son Isaac's six daughters Rebeckah, Mary, Lidia, Judith, Martha & the youngest of all the sum of five pounds apiece to be paid to them in good merchantable pay as they shall respectively arrive to y^e age of twenty & one years or at marriage which shall first happen. It is also my mind & will that ye bounds of these lands aforementioned shall be committed to writing by these that layd the same out as there are heretofore expressed and the same committed to record with this my last will & testament. Lastly it is my mind & will & I do order will & bequeath that after my just debts and legacies are paid by my executors that what remaineth of my estate I do give & bequeath unto my son Francis Barker who is executor to this my last will & testament.

In confirmation hereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal the day & date abovesaid.

Signed, sealed, etc, before

JOHN BARKER

Desire Barker

HANNAH ROSE

H her mark.

his

ROBERT ☐ BARKER
mark

Seal.

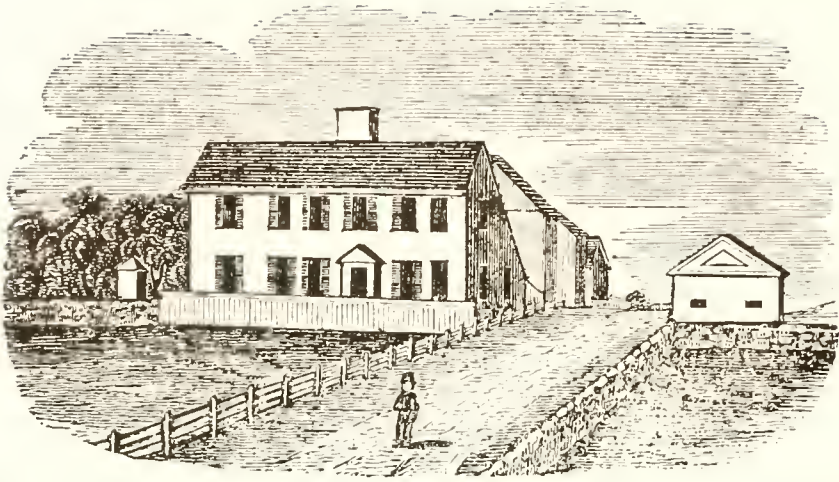
Barker Deeds, Plymouth County

Robert¹ Barker deeds to his brother *John Barker* part of a salt-marsh in the South River in consideration of part of part of the meadow his brother lost by the agreement with John Phillips. June 22, 1648. (Vol. 1, p. 1.)

Robert² Barker, Jr. of Duxborough in consideration of 37.10.0£ paid by John Rogers, Sen^r of Marshfield, deeds one eighth part of the saw-mill & the appurtenances. Situated on a river called *Indian Road River*. Also meadows of the mill. November 29, 1682. (Vol. 1, p. 213.)

Robert¹ Barker of Duxborough in consideration of 35£ paid by Timothy White of Scituate, deeds tract of land & saw mill formerly owned by Robert Stetson of Scituate. March 26, 1664. (Vol. 1, p. 243.)

Robert Barker¹ of Duxborough in consideration of love & good will he bore to his son Robert Barker deeds upland in same near lands of



A VERY EARLY PRINT OF THE WILLIAMS-BARKER HOUSE



JOHN BARKER HOUSE, BUILT BY HIM IN 1631, SITUATE HARBOR. USED AS
A GARRISON HOUSE, 1676, KING PHILIP'S WAR

John Hudson & Isaac Barker his son. *Near Barstows Bridge.* Feb. 11. 1688/9. (Vol. 1, p. 310.)

3. JOHN² BARKER, ESQ. (1. *John*¹), was born in Marshfield in 1650, and was only two years of age when his father was drowned. His uncle, Capt. John Williams of Scituate, was appointed his guardian. One year later (1653) his mother married for a second time, and removed to Barnstable, taking her young family with her. After her death in Mar. 1657/8, the children were returned to Scituate, to the home of Captain Williams, their guardian. The guardianship was an unhappy one for the children. Captain Williams was a stern disciplinarian to all who lived beneath his roof. His wife was Elizabeth, a daughter of the Rev. John Lothrop, who with about half of the members of his Scituate Church had removed to Barnstable in 1639. Capt. John Williams' treatment of his wife was unreasonable, and the court records of the actions brought by both parties show him in a most unfavorable light. It was into this unhappy household that his young wards were brought, and complaints of his treatment of them were on several occasions presented before the Governor and his Assistants.

John² Barker was a sergeant in his uncle John Williams' Company at Mount Hope in July 1676, and was wounded so seriously in that battle with King Philip that in 1680 he "was freed for bearing arms for the wounds in the late war." He resided in Barnstable from 1677 to 1683, and then removed to Marshfield. His uncle, Capt. John Williams, died in 1694, without issue, and bequeathed his home farm in Scituate to John² Barker's son, SAMUEL WILLIAMS³ BARKER, who was but eight years old. The family then removed from Marshfield to the Williams farm in Scituate, from that time known as "the Barker farm," until its sale out of the family name in 1910.

Plymouth County Deeds

John Barker of Marshfield, yeoman, in consideration £25 deeds to Joseph Waterman land on South River, January 20th, 1685. (Vol. 1, p. 50.)

15 August 1699. John Barker of Scituate, yeoman, in consideration of 20£ paid by David Jacob of same deeds lot of upland in Scituate near Barstow's hill* granted to the lawfull successors of James Cushman. (Vol. 4, p. 25.)

* Barstow's hill is on the Plymouth Road, where the Universalist Church at Assinippi stands (1936).

18 May 1700. John Barker of Scituate in consideration of 3£ 10.0 paid by Isaac Randal of same yeoman, deeds land in same near land of grantee. (Vol. 5, p. 83.)

18 May 1700. John Barker of Scituate in consideration of 13£ paid by Joseph Randal of same yeoman, deeds land near grantees land at north west corner. (Vol. 5, p. 89.)

18 May 1700. John Barker of Scituate in consideration of 10£ paid by Job Randall of Scituate shipwright deeds land near Robert Woodworth's land. (Vol. 4, p. 49.)

6 March 1701. John Barker assigned to John Tomson of Middleboro', Thomas Tomson, Jacob Tomson all of same land in consideration of 20£, situated in Scituate. (Vol. 4, p. 136.)

30 Jan. 1709. John Barker of Scituate yeoman having good right to lay out to himself in ye right of *Thomas Hiland Senr & Walter Briggs* both late of same deceased, 5½ acres of land on any part of Conihasset. John Barker aforesaid in consideration of 7£ paid by Thomas Man of same yeoman, deeds to him a small pareel of land in Conihassett. (Vol. 14, p. 188.)

23 May 1710. John Barker of Scituate yeoman and his wife Hannah for 589£ from Nicholas Lichfield of same, cordwainer, land at Conehassett in same. (Vol. 7, p. 329.)

8 March 1710/11. John Barker of Marshfield for 19£ from Charles Little of same land in same. (Vol. 8, p. 148.)

2 Jan. 1712. John Barker of Marshfield for 5£ from Joseph Childs of same, bricklayer, land in same. (Vol. 10, p. 16.)

19 May 1712. Joseph Childs & John Barker both of Marsh^d for 18£ from Mr. Ephraim Little of same land in same. (Vol. 9, p. 213.)

JOHN² BARKER, ESQ., married, first, 18 Jan. 1677, **DESIRE ANNABLE** of Barnstable, a daughter of **ANTHONY, Jr.**, and **ANN (CLARK)**, and a *sister of Samuel Annable, whose widow, Mehitable (Allyn) Annable, married Capt. Cornelius Briggs.* (See Chapter VI, Capt. Cornelius Briggs.) Desire Annable was born in Barnstable in 1652, and died in Scituate 24 July 1706.

ANTHONY ANNABLE, JR., came to New England from All Saints, Cambridge, County Cambridge, with wife Jane and two children, arriving in Plymouth, New England, 10 July 1623 in the ship *Anne*. He remained in Plymouth until 1634, when he removed to Scituate, where he was one of the founders of Mr. Lothrop's church on 8 Jan. 1634 5. In 1640 he removed to Barnstable, where Mr. Lothrop and other members of his Scituate church had gone in 1639.

With the exception of Governor Thomas Hinckley, no other man in Barnstable was more often employed in public business. While in Scituate, Anthony Annable resided on Kent Street, on the sixth lot from Satuit Brook, which was assigned to him in the first division of house lots, and upon which he built a house before removing from Plymouth.

He had previously been granted a lot upon the Second Cliff, and in 1636 the "greate lott" of 80 acres on North River west of Stony Brook. This last-named lot he sold to Thomas Rawlins in 1640, when he removed to Barnstable.

Anthony Annable was a Deputy from Scituate to the Colony Court with Edward Foster in 1639, that being the first year in which Deputies were sent from the various towns. Before that date the laws of Plymouth Colony were made and executed by the Governor and his Assistants. After Annable's removal to Barnstable he was a Deputy from that place for twelve terms not entirely consecutive.

Annable's Barnstable farm of 77 acres was in the West Parish, and was one of the best farms in that town. Later, fifty-four acres were added to the original grant, extending it to "Annable's Pond" on the south.

Anthony Annable had three wives. His first wife Jane was buried in Barnstable 13 Dec. 1643 "on the lower side of the Calves Pasture." On 3 Mar. 1644/5 he married for a second wife, Ann Clark, born in England about 1608. He married for a third wife Ann Barker, who survived him about four years. Goodman Annable died in 1674, having lived in the colony for fifty-one years. While intellectually he had many superiors in the colony, he was a man of sound judgment, discreet, — never acting hastily or unadvisedly, — tolerant, and in sympathy with Hatherley, Cudworth and Robinson in opposition to the severe laws enforced against the Quakers in Massachusetts Colony, and adopted, but seldom enforced, in their extreme severity in Plymouth.

Anthony Annable had by first wife, Jane —, a daughter Sarah born in England about 1622, who "was married by Mr. Winslow at Green Harbor" 22 Nov. 1638, to Henry Ewell. They lived from 1640 to about 1646 in Barnstable, then returned to Scituate and lived on the east side of Walnut Tree Hill. Sarah (Annable) Ewell was the heroine of the Indian Raid on Scituate in 1676, when, giving the alarm to the garrison at Stockbridge's, she forgot her sleeping grandchild. Regardless of danger, she returned to her home to find the child unharmed, but her "precious baking of bread pulled from the oven." Later, the Indians in their retreat burned the house to the ground. A second daughter, Hannah Annable, was born in Plymouth about 1625. She married 10 Mar. 1644/5 Thomas Bowman of Barnstable. They removed to Falmouth, and early joined the Society of Friends. A third daughter, Susanna Annable, married 13 May 1652 William Hatch, Jr., of Scituate. They lived on Kent Street, Scituate, in the house of his father, Elder William Hatch, and about 1670 removed to Swansea.

Children of ANTHONY and second wife, ANN (CLARK) ANNABLE:

- i. Samuel, b. 22 Jan. 1645/6, bpt. 8 Feb. 1645/6 in Barnstable, d. in Barnstable 1678, ae. 32 yrs. He lived at West Barnstable and inherited a large portion of his father's estate, whom he survived only four years. He m. 1 June 1667 Mchitable Allyn (see Allyn). The will of Samuel Annable gave to Widow

Mehitable all the movables and all the stock "to be att her own dispose for and towards the bringing up of the children, hoping that shee will have a care to bring them up in a way of education as the estate will beare, and to have all the proffitts of all the lands untill the said Samuel Annible and John Annible comes to be of age, and then the third in the proffitts of the lands during her natural life." Widow *Mehitable Annable* m. (2d) 6 May 1683 *Capt. Cornelius Briggs* of Scituate.

Children of Samuel and Mehitable (Allyn) Annable were: 1. Samuel, b. 14 July 1669; m. Patience Doggett 1695. 2. Hannah, b. Mar. 1672, d. Aug. 1672. 3. John, b. 19 July 1673; m. 1692, Experience Taylor. 4. Anna, b. 4 Mar. 1675/6; m. Deacon John Barker 1696.

- ii. Esek (Ezekiel ?), bpt. 29 Apr. 1649 in Barnstable, probably d. young.
- iii. Desire, bpt. 16 Oct. 1653 in Barnstable; m. 18 Jan. 1676/7 John Barker, Esq., of Scituate, as his first wife.

Ann (Clark), the second wife of Anthony Annable, according to Savage, died and was buried 16 May 1651, and Anthony married for a third wife Ann Barker, who is said to have been buried 16 Mar. 1658. Who was this Ann Barker, the third wife of Anthony Annable? Ann (Williams) Barker, widow of John, Sr., of Scituate, married, second, 1653 Abraham Blush of Barnstable, who lived on the farm just east of that of Anthony Annable. The date of her death is given as 16 Mar. 1657/8, and again, 16 Feb. 1657/8. Was she again a widow, and married, third, Anthony Annable as his third wife?

ANTHONY ANNABLE settled at first in Plymouth, in 1623, and had lands assigned to him there. In April 1633 the land on the Second Cliff, Scituate, was divided between Anthony Annable, William Gilson, Edward Foster and Henry Rowley. Whether houses were built there is uncertain. According to Mr. John Lothrop, who arrived in Boston in the ship *Griffin* 18 Sept. 1634 with his family and Anne Hutchinson and Rev. Zachariah Symmes, Mr. Hatherley, Mr. Cudworth, Mr. Gilson, Mr. Annable, Mr. Rowley, Mr. Turner, Mr. Cobb, Mr. Hewes and Mr. Foster already had houses there. Mr. Lothrop describes them as "small, plaine, pallisade houses." The nine gentlemen whom Mr. Lothrop mentioned as having houses in 1634 may properly be regarded as the first settlers of the town. "Men of Kent," they were called, because of their emigrating from that county in England. Rev. John Lothrop had been Vicar of Edgerton, Kent, and later in London conducting Separatist services surreptitiously. He was undoubtedly, says Banks, the inspiration for the emigration of a large contingent from the Weald of Kent, who settled in Scituate. Mistress Anne Hutchinson engaged Lothrop and Symmes in theological bouts while they were aboard the *Griffin*.

On 1 Jan. 1637/8 it was recorded that a number of townsmen, including Mr. John Lothrop, Anthony Annable, James Cudworth, Edward Foster, Isaac Robinson, HUMPHREY TURNER and others, complained "that they have such small proportions of land allotted to them that they can not subsist upon them," and the Court of Assistants granted them other lands, but under certain conditions which were not acceptable, and consequently the grant became void.

The conditions provided for a ferry, and the grant being rejected, this ferry was finally provided for 2 Apr. 1638, as the following entry shows:

Two hundred acres of upland and a competency of meadow lands to be laid to it are granted to Mr. William Vassall to keep a ferry over the North (River) where the old Indian ferry was, and to transport men and beasts at these rates: viz., for a man one penny, and for a beast four pence, a horse and his rider four pence, and to make the way passable for man and beast through the marshes on both sides of the river at his own charges, and to keep them in repair from time to time, and Capt. Standish and Mr. Alden are appointed to set the lands forth for him.

This ferry at a later day was called Doggett's Ferry, and was situated where Little's bridge was built in 1825. In 1638 another ferry was ordered by the Court to be established near the mouth of the North River, and Jonathan Brewster was its ferryman; still another ferry was established in 1645, where Union bridge was built in 1801.

Children of JOHN² BARKER, Esq., and DESIRE ANNABLE:

- i. John³, b. 4 May 1678; resided in Marshfield; m. (1), 1702 Hannah —, who d. 30 Jan. 1713/14; (2) 5 Jan. 1715, Bethia Ford; he d. 6 Dec. 1770.
- ii. Desire, b. 22 Sept. 1680; m. 20 Nov. 1700 Capt. Samuel Turner, son of Nathaniel, and grandson of Humphrey Turner. She d. 12 Jan. 1710. (See Humphrey Turner line, Samuel³ Kent, John², John¹.)
- iii. Anne, b. 26 Aug. 1682; d. 22 Nov. 1682.
- iv. Anna, b. 1 Nov. 1683; m. 11 Mar. 1714 Robert Thompson. They lived until after 1721, in the house purchased by James³ Briggs in 1747, on the lane (now Cross Street) near Neal's Gate.
5. v. Samuel Williams, b. 23 Apr. 1686; m. 25 Dec. 1706 Hannah Cushing.
6. vi. Barnabas³, b. abt. 1690 in Marshfield; m. *Hannah Turner*.
- vii. Mary, b. —; m. 6 Jan. 1714 Ensign Otis of Seitate. (See chapter on Otis.)

John² Barker married, second, 22 Jan. 1706/7 Widow Hannah (Loring) Cushing, widow of Rev. Jeremiah Cushing (see chapter on Otis and Cushing), whose daughter, Hannah Cushing, had married John Barker's son, Samuel Williams³ Barker, 25 Dec. 1706. Mrs. Hannah (Loring Cushing) Barker died 30 May 1710. Later John Barker, Esq., married, third, Sarah — (family name not known), who survived him for about a year. He died in 1729. She died 7 Jan. 1730.

JOHN² BARKER, Esq., was a man of wealth and learning, and was interested in legal matters. He was a Justice of the Peace, and was so respected that he was often a referee in important

cases. In 1689 John Barker was a Deputy to the General Court from Marshfield, and a Deputy from Scituate in 1706, 1712 and 1719. His library, consisting of divinity, law, history and school books, — Latin, Greek and Hebrew, — was appraised at his death at £53, a large library for a layman at that time. The contents of his dwelling were appraised at £375, and his entire estate at £6,894.

John² Barker died 1 Dec. 1729. His will was written on 1 Aug. 1727. An inventory of his estate was made 27 Dec. 1729.

JOHN² BARKER'S WILL

Plymouth Records, Vol. 5, Page 604

In the name of God, Amen. Ye first day of August Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred and twenty seven, I JOHN BARKER of Scituate in County of Plymouth in New England being aged and infirm of body, But of perfect sound mind & Memory thanks be given to God therefor, calling to mind ye mortality of my body and knowing it is appointed for all men once to die, make and ordain this my last will and testament, that is to say, Principally and first of all I recommend my soul to God who gave it, and my body to the earth to be buried in decent Christian manner at ye discretion of my executor hereafter named, and as touching such worldly estate as Ye Lord hath been pleased to bless me with in this life, my just debts being first paid and funeral charges defrayed. I give devise & dispose of the residue & remainder thereof in manner & form following, that is to say imprimis, I give and bequeath to my beloved wife Sarah Barker ye use & improvement of yc portion or North Easterly room in my new dwelling house if she see reason to dwell in it, ye little chamber, ye north westerly half of ye inward cellar with liberty to pass and repass through ye lean to half cellar & outward cellar, as she shall have occasion, and the privilege of taking water out of the well as she shall have occasion and to make use of ye oven in ye south westerly end of ye said dwelling house, and to take what apples she shall have occasion for in ye summer time, and two bushels for her use in ye winter time out of ye orchard belonging to ye said dwelling house, and the use of four rod square of land at ye easterly corner of my field before ye said house, and room near ye door to lay her fire wood, and ye use of one of my cows which she shall chuse and six and thirty hundred of good salt hay put and laid in ye barn yearly to winter said cow and room in my barn to lay said hay, & convenient room in ye leanto of said barn for said cow to stand in ye winter, and pasturing for ye said cow in ye summer, and when ye said cow shall fail for reason of age or otherwise then my executor to change it & provide her another in ye room of it. Also I give to my said wife ten cords of wood cut fit for her fire, brought & corded up at her door, by ye last day of October yearly, ye said hay & wood to be provided as I shall hereafter in this my will order. Also I

give to my said wife fifteen pounds a year to be paid to her by my exeentor in good bills of credit yearly, all ye parts unless privileges & improvements afore mentioned. I give to my said wife during ye time she shall remain my widow and dwell in my new dwelling house & no longer. But in case she shall see reason to remove out of my said dwelling house & my mind and will y^t all the afore mentioned parts unless privileges & improvements given to my said wife shall cease & belong to her no longer, (except ye fifteen pounds a year) and in lieu thereof she shall have five pounds a year y^t is to say y^t ye said fifteen pounds a year shall be made twenty pounds a year yearly, the fifteen pounds to be paid her in good province bills by my executor yearly and ye said five pounds a year yearly as I shall hereafter in this my will order yearly & every year during the time she shall remain my widow & no longer to be paid in good bills of credit, and further it is my mind & will, that in ease my said wife shall see cause to marry again that then & from thenceforth all the partieulars, privileges & improvements and payments afore mentioned to be given to my said wife shall cease and not belong to nor be paid to her any longer, & in such ease she shall have and enjoy only ye particulars hereafter mentioned to be given to her viz. I further give & bequeath my said wife all her wearing apparell of all sorts, her gold rings, neelaees, jewells & ornaments of all sorts, also I give to my said wife ye bed we usually lodge upon with ye bolster, two large pillows & two small pillows, two pair of sheets, two pair of pillow biers, three blankets, ye quilt that usually lies on ye bed. The bed stead, eurtains & vallens, with appurtenances to said bed & bed stead belonging. I also give to my said wife ye bible with silver clasps & ye *common Prayer book* & also one half as to value of all ye rest of ye books which I had with her in marriage, ye whole being about sixteen in number, which half of said books she shall make choise of after they be divided & valued. I also give to my said wife all the pictures she brought with her in marriage they being about ten in number. I also give to my said wife ten pounds worth of my house hold goods such as she shall ehuse before any of said goods are disposed of, ye said ten pounds worth of goods to be justly valued by persons indifferently chosen for that purpose. I also give to my said wife fifteen pounds in bills of credit to be payed her by my exeentor when she shall have forfeited ye elaim hereafter mentioned. I also give to my said wife *two years service of my Spanish Indian maid servant or slave named Mariah to serve my said wife or her assigns two years in case my said wife live so long after my decease, and then said Mariah to be free from servitude and slavery, and also in case my wife die before two years after my decease shall expire, and I do hereby set her, said Mariah, free from servitude & slavery immediately after my said wife's decease or after expiration of ye said two years which shall first happen, & that she be dismissed with two good suits of apparell suitable for a person of her condition.* Provided always & it is my mind & will & all ye aforesaid gifts & bequests expressed to be given & made to my said wife as afore said with ye limitations therein expressed are given & made on ye eonditions fol-

lowing, that is to say that my said wife shall & do within one month after my decease sign seal & will execute in ye law a good & sufficient quit claim & release of all her right of dower in my whole estate both real & personal. (Except the legacies and bequests in this my will to Her given.) & ye respectively to whom it is this my will given upon my executors offering a proper instrument for that purpose that then ye said bequest made to my wife are & shall stand good according as they are before expressed & stand limited, but if she shall refuse or neglect so to do, they are to be & shall be void & of none effect (except her wearing apparell & ornaments) and I *having as I think made large honorable provision for my loving wife's comfortable subsistance after my decease during the time she shall remain my widow, I hope she will not be so ungrateful as not to give ye greatest part of what she shall have left at her decease to share amongst my children & grand children. Especially considering she hath no children of her own nor any other relations in New England (if she hath in ye whole world) nearer than my children are, my children carrying themselves respectfully and dutifully towards her, as I hope they will & charge them to do.*

I give & bequeath to my loving son John Barker to him, his heirs & assigns forever all my estate of upland, housing, marsh & meadow land, lying & being in ye township of Marshfield and also my two lots of land lying in ye township of Pembroke which were laid out there in my right bommonage to have & to hold all ye said housing & lands before expected to be given to John Barker with ye privaleges & appointments thereunto belonging unto him my said son John Barker his heirs & assigns forever, He or they paying out of ye said lands him as aforesaid as out of his own proper estate ye sum of one hundred pounds in good bills of credit or in good passable money TO MY SON BARNABAS BARKER within four years after my decease at four equal payments, twenty five pounds at ye end of each year within ye said four years, and I hereby give & bequeath ye said one hundred pounds to my son Barnabas Barker to be paid him as afore expressed. Also I give to my said son John Barker my long gun which is in his possession & the one fifth part of my English books not before disposed of to my said wife & ye one half part of my wearing apparell.

Item. I give to my loving son Samuel Barker all y^t piece of land about one aere, lying in Scituate near the dwelling house of John Cudworth & within ye fence of the farm whereon ye said Samuel dwells. With ye privaleges and appurtenances to ye same belonging to him, his heirs & assigns forever. Also I give to my son Samuel Barker the bonds whereby he stands indebted to me, one in ye sum of twenty pounds Dated ye 20th Day of January 1708 & the other in ye sum of twenty three pounds (£20.16.6) dated Jan. 19th 1712. With ye sums therein contained & thereby due, & ye interest due thereon, also I give to said Samuel Barker my long gun which is in his possession & one fifth part of my English Books not before disposed of in this my will to my said wife & all ye afore said bequests are made & given to my said son Samuel

on condition & provided he shall & do provide for & pay to my said wife two cords & a half of wood & nine hundred of salt hay yearly & every year during the time she shall remain my widow & dwell in my now dwelling house or twenty five shillings in good bills of credit yearly & every year in case of his removal during the time she shall remain my widow according as I have before in this my will ordered for her to have the same.

I give & bequeath unto my loving son BARNABAS BARKER all yt my upland & swampland lying in Scituate near ye place called Hallefax & Taunton Dean being of all sorts about eighty acres with the housing & buildings standing upon & belonging to ye same, and also the one third part of my two lots of land lying in Hanover abutting upon ye share line, both lots containing about one hundred & thirty five acres, and also my twenty acres of marsh & meadow land lying in Scituate between the dwelling house of Thomas Colman & the Herring River, all the aforesaid lands, housing, & building expressed to be given to said BARNABAS BARKER. I give ye same with ye privileges and Appertenances thereunto belonging to him ye said BARNABAS BARKER, his heirs & assigns forever. He & they providing for & paying to my said wife two cords & one half of wood & nine hundred of salt hay yearly & every year during the time she shall continue my widow & dwell in my dwelling house aforesaid, or twenty five shillings in good bills of credit yearly & every year in case of his removal during ye time she shall remain my widow according as I have ordered her to have ye same. Also I give to ye said BARNABAS BARKER my *long gun which is here in my house, my sword & cartouch boxes & the belts belonging to them* and one fifth part of my English books not before in this my will given to my said wife, and one half my wearing apparell, also I do hereby give, forgive & remit unto said BARNABAS Barker all & all manner of debts who are now at the date of this my will due & owing to from said Barnabas upon any account whatsoever.

Item. I give & bequeath to my daughter Mary Otis my two lots of salt marsh land lying in Conihassett in Scituate aforesaid near ye dwelling house of Capt. Stephen Otis containing about one acre in each lot & also ye one half of my piece or parcell of land lying in Conihassett in Scituate aforesaid adjoining to the land of John Tilden on the north, & to ye lands of Ichabod Daman & Jonathan Elms on ye south, ye whole being about nine or ten acres, & is a part of yt. which is called ye running lot, & also one half of my lot, or parcell of salt marsh land lying near Huses Point in Scittuate aforesaid. And also the one third part of my two aforesaid lots of land lying in Hanover aforesaid abutting on ye share land aforesaid, all ye aforesaid lands expressed to be given to ye said Mary Otis as aforesaid. I give the same with their appurtenances unto her, ye said Mary Otis, her heirs & assigns forever, she & they providing for & paying to my said wife two cords and a half of wood, & nine hundred of good salt hay yearly & every year during the time she shall continue my widow & live in my said dwelling house or twenty & five shill-

ings in good bills of credit yearly & every year in case of her removal during the time she shall remain my widow, according as I have before in this my will ordered for her to have ye same & further I give unto my said daughter Mary Otis ye sum of £271 in good bills of credit & other my moveable estate (what her husband Ensign Otis oweth to me by bond with ye interest which is & shall become due thereupon to be a part of it) to be paid to her within one year after my decease. Also I give to said Mary Otis ye one fifth part of my English Books not before in this my will disposed of to my said wife, as afore said & what is before expressed to be given to said Mary I give unto her over & above what she hath already received of me out of my estate.

Item. I give & bequeath unto my four grand children Nathaniel Turner, Samuel Turner, James Turner & Lillie Stetson, ye child of my daughter Desire Turner deceased, all that my housing, upland & swamp-land where I now dwell in Seituat aforesaid, also my parell of land at the third cliff of about fourteen acres & my swamp land by my barn of about two acres, & also the other half of my aforesaid pareel of land lying in Conahassett aforesaid ye whole containing about nine or ten acres ye other half whereof is before given to Mary Otis aforesaid. And also the aforesaid parell of salt marsh land lying at Huses Point aforesaid & also ye one third part of ye aforementioned two lots of land lying in said Hanover abutting on ye aforesaid share line all ye aforesaid lands & housing before expressed to be given to my aforesaid four grandchildren. I give ye same with ye privaleges & appurtenances thereunto belonging unto them ye said Nathaniel Turner, Samuel Turner, James Turner & Lillie Stetson their severall & respective heirs & assigns forever to be equally divided betwixt them (excepting & reserving to my said wife ye privaleges in this my will given to her in ye same). Provided always that they do provide for & pay to my said wife two cords & a half of wood & nine hundred of good salt hay yearly & every year during ye time she shall continue my widow and dwell in my said dwelling house or twenty & five shillings in good bills of credit yearly and every year in case of her removal during ye time she shall remain my widow, according as I have before in this my will ordered her to have ye same. Also I give to my four grand children ye one fifth part of my English books not before in this my will not before disposed of to my said wife.

Item. I give to my grand son Samuel Barker, Junr, all my Latin & Greek books to him & his heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my four grand children (to wit) John Thompson, Robert Thompson, Jr., Anne Thompson & Desire Thompson, the children of my daughter Anne Thompson, deceased, the sum of four hundred pounds, (viz. To ye said John Thompson £100., to the said Robert Thompson £100, to ye said Anne Thompson £100, to ye said Desire Thompson £100, to be paid in good bills of credit or other current passable money at ye time of payment, & it is my mind & will y^t my son

John Barker my executor, shall keep & have ye improvement of each of ye said children's Hundred pounds until each of them respectively attain unto ye age of fourteen years, & then to pay to such persons as each of ye said children shall respectively shall choose for his or her guardian ye said hundred pounds, with four pounds & int. per annum, for the time he shall have had the improvement thereof, to and for ye use of each of ye said children respectively & in case any of my said grand children happen to dye before he or she shall attain ye age of fourteen years, my mind & will is y^t ye part & portion hereby expressed to be given to such child shall belong to & be divided amongst the survivors. And further it is my mind & will & I do hereby order my son John Barker my executor to take into his hands two hundred & fifty pounds of good province bills of credit & improve ye same or set it out at interest if he sees reason. & out of the interest or profits thereof to pay my said wife fifteen pounds yearly & every year, for so long time as the said fifteen pound payment is by this my will to continue, & it is my will y^t he pay ye said fifteen pounds payment to my wife one half thereof at ye end of every half year.

And further it is my mind & will that all ye rest & remainder of my estate both real & personal or of what kind or nature soever, & where-soever lying & being not before or otherwise in this my will disposed of as also the above mentioned £250 (when ye time is expired for which it is set apart to be improved as above or before expressed), shall belong to & be divided to & amongst those of my children & grand children, next hereafter named in manner following that is to say. To my said son John Barker one fifth part thereof. To said BARNABAS BARKER one fifth part thereof. To Mary Otis aforesaid one fifth part thereof, to my said four grand children (to wit) Nathaniel Turner, Samuel Turner, James Turner, Lillie Turner one fifth part thereof, and to my aforesaid four grand children, ye children of my daughter Anne Thompson deceased (to wit) John Thompson, Robert Thompson Jr., Anne Thompson & Desire Thompson one fifth part thereof to them their several & respective heirs & assigns forever. Lastly I hereby nominate & appoint my said son John Barker to be sole executor of this my last will & testament, & in testimony y^t, ye within & before written in the several pages thereof is my last will & testament, I have herenunto set my hand & seal the day & year first within written.

Signed, sealed ect.

JOHN BARKER (& a seal)

JOHN CUSHING

THOMAS YOUNG

JOSHUA YOUNG

The slave Maria John Barker refers to in his will, and later Sarah in her will, could not have been the Maria of Walter Briggs, for that Maria was too old, and was set free before 1700.

However, it is interesting to note that a slave Maria, possibly a daughter of Walter Briggs' slave, was in this family until set free on the death of Sarah Barker in 1729/30. Mariah was a common name for slaves in those days.

John Barker's Mariah was married, after she was free, to Lemuel Franeis, an Indian, of Pembroke, Mass., 29 June 1740 by Rev. John Lothrop of First Parish.

JOHN² BARKER ESTATE, INVENTORY

December 27, 1729	£	s	d
Purse & apparel viz. 10l. 13s. 3d. in bills of credit	125	2	3
Silver money at the 19/ weight	3	3	0
Plate of several sorts valued in paper money at	15	0	0
Arms	1	15	0
Books, Divinity, law, history, school books, latin, Greek, Heb.	53	10	0
Silver tankard	26	0	0
Silver cullender & 3 silver spoons	8	0	0
Best bed & furniture in ye easterly chamber	30	0	0
Another bed & furniture in ye west chamber	10	0	0
Black walnut table, small one ditto	5	18	0
Chest with drawers	2	10	0
Chest with drawers in chamber	5	10	0
Chest with drawers in east chamber	5	10	0
Carpet, ½ doz cloth chairs, andirons in chamber	4	5	0
Trunk, screen, close stool	2	2	0
bed & furniture in gt lower room	13	0	0
Old chest with drawers, another ditto, rest of chairs	4	15	0
Great looking glass, candlestick . . . & tongs	6	4	0
French chest, small trunk, bottle castor with two bottles	2	12	0
Earthen ware in ye little chamber, small table, cabinet, couch, glasses	5	17	0
2 Tables in West room, pr. andirons, tongs, trunnels, grid-iron, pewter, gt. brass kettle, 3 skillets	20	30	0
Little brass kettle, great copper kettle, galpot, do.	3	0	0
Little kettle & pot do., pot do., Brass candlestick & snuffers	5	0	0
Coffee mill, scales, pepper box & tin ware	5	5	0
Glass in west room, pot iron, 2 kettles	2	15	0
Pair good brass scales, wts, pair of stilliards, lumber, Iron ect.	3	17	0
Tubs, pails, keelers, bottles & lumber in ye leanto	2	10	0
Old iron tools, & lumber in ye leanto chamber	2	10	0
Iron crow, horse geers, chain, beetle, wedges, forks, axes	2	10	0

SARAH BARKER'S WILL

295

	£	s	d
14 diaper napkins	2	15	0
pair of sheets, 7 table cloths, 7 pillow coats	9	5	0
Large table cloth, six napkins	3	6	0
Pair of cotton & linen sheets, hamock	2	0	0
3 Cows & hay in barn	30	0	0
Homestead abt 40 acres & buildings	360	0	0
Six acres of meadow at Hughes Point	84	0	0
9 Acres of upland by Elmes	90	0	0
1 Acre by Jn ^o Cudworth's	18	0	0
$\frac{3}{4}$ acres near Capt. Otis's.	8	0	0
20 acres of meadow near Colman's	260	0	0
135 acres being two great lots butting on the share line in Hanover	500	0	0
80 acres near Taunton Dean & Hallifax, with ye housing & buildings	500	0	0
To ye homestead where Mr. Ju. Barker lives in Marshfield, being 50 acres with buildings.	940	0	0
The farm near Pelag Foords in Marshfield, being 70 acres of upland & 80 acres of meadow	1260	0	0
Bonds & Bils, Interest due to 1st of Dec.	2360	1	8
	6799	17	11
One Bond of 40 L. due from Capt. Sam. Barker	40	0	0
Another due from Capt. Sam. Barker of	36	13	0
Book debt due Jn ^o James of	3	0	0
A debt due from Jn ^o Barker of Marshfield	12	10	0
bold still	1	10	0
One half a pew	10	0	0
JN ^o LITTLE	£6893	10	11
THOMAS YOUNG			
JN ^o CUSHING, JR/			

SARAH BARKER'S WILL

Plymouth Records, Vol. 5, Page 765

In the name of God. Amen. Ye fourth day of February Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred & twenty nine. I Sarah Barker of Scituate in ye County of Plymouth in New England, widow, & relict of John Barker Esq^r late of said Scituate deceased, being sick & weak of body, But of perfect mind & memory, thanks be given to God. And calling to mind ye mortality of my body & being desirous to settle things in order, Do make & ordain this my last will & testament that is to say principally & first of all I give & reecomend my soul into the hands of God y^t gave it & my body I recommend to ye earth to be buried in

decent christian burial at ye discretion of my exeutor hereafter named, and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased ye Lord to bless me in this life, I give, demise & dispose of ye same in ye following manner & form.

Imprimis. I give & bequeath to my son in law John Barker of Marshfield one of my books of Bishop Hall's works which he shall chuse, also I give unto said John Barker my great Bible & ye oval table.

Item. I give unto *Desire Kent* daughter of said John Barker my *chest of drawers*. [*Owned in 1936 by L. Vernon Briggs and inlaid D. K.*]

Item. I give to Hannah Barker daughter of said John Barker the neclace with the perl belonging to it.

Item. I give to Anna Eames daughter of said John Barker my biggest plain gold ring.

Item. I give to Bethiah Barker daughter of said John Barker the one half of my small pictures.

Item. I give to my son in law Samuel Barker my two great pictures which hang up in ye chamber in ye house where I now dwell.

Item. I give to Hannah Barker daughter of ye said Samuel Barker my emerald gold ring.

Item. I give to Deborah Barker daughter of said Samuel Barker ye other half of my small pictures.

Item. *I give to my son in law Barnabas Barker* my six pewter plates, one pewter bason, three pewter dishes, and my three brass skillets & five pounds in good passable bills of credit.

Item. I give to my son in law Ensign Otis my book of Hoyle History of the World.

Item. I give to my daughter in law Mary Otis my morning suit which I had at ye decease of her father John Barker aforesaid my late husband.

Item. I give to ye Rev. Mr. Nathan^el Eells & ye Rev. Mr. Elijah Bourne each of y^m a gold ring of about forty shillings worth each. To be procured by my exeutor with my estate & delivered to them.

Item. I give to my son in law Samuel Turner ye other of my books of Bishop Halls' works.

Item. I give to Nathaniel Turner son of ye said Samuel Turner my servitor my gold buttons.

Item. I give to Samuel Turner son of ye said Samuel Turner my gold ring with one diamond in it.

Item. I give to Lillie Stetson daughter of ye aforementioned Samuel Turner my little green emerald w^{ch} I used to wear.

Item. *I give to my indian or mulatto servant maid* (evidently Maria) *the bed & bedstead which she usually logeth upon with ye bedding & furniture belonging to it, & all the rest of my estate of what kind or nature soever & wheresoever lying & being not before in this my will disposed of, I give ye same to my son in law Samuel Turner, his heirs & assigns forever. He the said Samuel Turner out thereof paying my just debts & paying & defraying my funeral charge, & taking ye care & charge of my funeral.*

Lastly I do hereby appoint & nominate my said son in law Samuel Turner to be sole executor of this my last will & testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal the day & year first within written.

Signed, sealed, cct.

SARAH BARKER.

JOHN CUSHING

THOMAS YOUNG

GEORGE YOUNG.

4. FRANCIS² BARKER (2. *Robert*¹) was born —, and lived in that part of Duxbury that is now Pembroke. It is claimed that he built and operated the first iron furnace in America in 1702 on Furnace Pond. In 1713 he had prospered, and gained sufficient wealth to rank as “gentleman.” He was a Selectman of Duxbury in 1685–86; Deputy to the General Court at Plymouth in 1686, 1694, 1701 and 1703; Constable in 1689; commissioned, in the Military Company, an Ensign 2 Oct. 1689. In 1686 he was appointed by the town of Duxbury to settle a question in dispute between that town and the town of Scituate about the division of a tract of land.

Francis² Barker married 5 Jan. 1675 Mary Lincoln, born 10 Feb. 1648, daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Langer) Lincoln of Hingham. He died in 1720.

Children of Francis² Barker and Mary Lincoln:

- i. Francis, b. 9 Oct. 1675; d. 29 Oct. 1675.
- ii. Joshua, b. 16 Nov. 1676; d. unm.
- iii. Elizabeth, b. 21 Oct. 1677; m. Jonathan Bryant; d. 17 Apr. 1711.
- iv. Josiah, b. 21 Sept. 1679; m. Sarah Macomber; d. 1718. Had no family.
- v. Francis, b. 18 Oct. 1681; m. 28 Dec. 1710, Mary Jacob. (See Chapter XI, on Otis.)
- vi. Ruth³, b. 21 Jan. 1683; m. 24 Oct. 1706 Cornelius³ Briggs (see Chapter VI, 15. Cornelius). After her marriage to Cornelius Briggs, her father gave his daughter Ruth a house in what is now North Pembroke, in which her son Joshua afterwards lived. It was sold by her heirs to Dr. Jeremiah Hall.
- vii. Thomas, b. 1686; m. 22 May 1712 Bethia Little. Their daughter Bethia, b. 1715, was the wife of Gen. John Winslow, who was in command of the New England troops, and carried out the orders for the deportation of the Acadians in 1755. (See chapter on Thomas family.)
- viii. Elisha, b. —; was Captain of a company of Indians in the expedition against Port Royal in 1710, and d. in the expedition; unm.
- ix. Ebenezer, b. —; m. 1 Nov. 1710 Deborah Randall.
- x. Isaac, b. —; m. 31 Aug. 1719 Hannah —.

5. LIEUT. ROBERT² BARKER, JR. (2. *Robert*¹), was born 27 Feb. 1650/1 in Duxbury (Pembroke). In 1684 he owned land at Pudding Brook, and "medow" at Robinson's Creek (Pembroke); also, "over against a place commonly called Palmer's landing place." In 1698/9 he was in Scituate, but returned to that part of Duxbury, later Pembroke, where in 1701 16 acres of land "adjoining his farm" were given him. He died in Duxbury (Pembroke) 25 Sept. 1729.

The first wife of Lieut. Robert Barker was Alice Snow, married about 1681, who was born in Marshfield 18 Jan. 1657/8, died 1697, daughter of ANTHONY and ABIGAIL (WARREN) SNOW, and granddaughter of RICHARD WARREN of the *Mayflower*. ANTHONY SNOW was born in England about 1615, and resided in Marshfield. It is from Abigail (Warren) Snow, descendant of Richard Warren, *Mayflower* passenger, that I trace my *Mayflower* ancestry, through the Barkers and Stetsons.

RICHARD WARREN

Richard Warren came from London and was called a "merchant" of that city (Mourt's "Relation," London, 1922). Extensive research in every available source of information — registers, chancery and probate in the London courts — proved fruitless in an attempt to identify him. As he died before 1628 it is probable that he was considerably past middle life at the date of immigration.

A careful analysis of the reading of Bradford's statement about Richard Warren in the section devoted to "Decreasings and Increases," justifies the compiler's belief that Mrs. Elizabeth Warren, who came over in the *Anne* in 1623, was his second wife. After stating that "his wife came over to him" he adds the significant statement "by whom he had two sons before (he) dyed." After stating the "increase" he adds: "but he had five daughters more come over with his wife," which can only accurately be read as his children and not hers. His separation of the sons, who were the specific issue of the wife Elizabeth, from the daughters who came over with the wife completes the picture of the family relationships. As she survived him for nearly half a century, dying in 1673, it is almost conclusive confirmation of this theory. An estimate of the probable dates of birth of the five daughters, based on the known facts, gives the following result: Mary, born 1606; Elizabeth, 1608; Anne, 1612; Sarah, 1614; and Abigail, 1616.

See Richard Warren in Thomas chapter, and Stetsons. The "Genealogist's Magazine," published in London, England, Vol. 7, No. 3, Sept. 1935, gives some Warren Families of the sixteenth century, including Warrens of Colney and Aldenham, of Harrow, of Bygrave, of St. Albans and Harpenden, of Kelshall and Horawell. This includes several Richards and is well worth consulting. The magazine is the official organ of the

London Society of Genealogists. It was Robert² Barker's daughter Lydia, born 1697, died 1776, from whom I am descended. She married 1728 Ebenczer Stetson.

The Pilgrims landed first at Truro, on Cape Cod, New England. Bradford complains that they could not come nearer the shore than three-quarters of a mile on account of shoal water, and they were obliged to wade in freezing cold water, which caused many to get colds and coughs. Their first expedition was composed of twenty men with old English matlocks and broadswords, and breast and stomach steel armor. They marched about a mile by the sea, when they espied five or six savages with a dog coming towards them. When they saw the Pilgrims they ran into the wood and whistled their dog after them. These were the Pamet Indians, who had seen the *Mayflower* lying at anchor in the harbor from the Truro Hills. In what they considered were fresh-made graves the newcomers found baskets filled with "goodly ears of corn, some of yellow, some of red, some mixed with blue, in handsomely and cunningly made baskets holding three or four bushels. Two men bore away these baskets upon a staff." Not far from the corn they found an old fort or palisade, which they conceived to have been made by some Christians. Later in their march about the country they found Indian wigwams, framed with long sapling trees, bent something like an oxbow, both ends being driven into the ground. Inside they were covered with new and richly colored mats, some beautifully embroidered with feathers, porcupine quills dyed in gorgeous colors, and other ornaments of rare beauty. They found wooden bowls, trays, dishes, earthen pots, hand baskets made of crab shells and ingeniously fastened with unseen sinews, and a great variety of other baskets very prettily wrought and ornamented with pictures of birds, beasts, fish and flowers in high colors. Taking some of the best, night coming on, they hastened to their shallop which they had built to explore the coast nearby, and returned to the ship. In their journal they say, "We intended to have brought some beads and other things to have left in their homes in sign of peace and we meant to truck with them, but it was not done; but so soon as we can meet conveniently with them we will give them complete satisfaction." On the 6th of December ten men started in the shallop; the weather was cold, the water froze their clothes "and made them many times like coats of iron." Some of the men fainted with the cold. They sailed into Wellfleet Harbor and saw Indians cutting blubber from three grampuses, also the first brooks of fresh water they had seen, and in East Ham a great burying place, with the graves "more sumptuous than those at Corn Hill." The next morning, after prayers, they heard the cry of Indians, and arrows came flying among them. Capt. Miles Standish let fly his snap lock, and another fired. After a few musket shots the Indians, having discharged a shower of arrows, took to their heels. After the skirmish, eighteen arrows, some headed with glass, some with deer horns, and some with eagle claws, were picked up, and Captain Jones carried them to England. No one was hurt, but some of the coats hung up in

the barricade were shot through and through. The spot for this first encounter has been located in Orleans near the mouth of Great Meadow Creek. After a gale of snow and rain, breaking the rudder and splitting the mast in two places, they passed the Gurnet and entered Plymouth Harbor in safety. They took a few days to examine their surroundings thoroughly, and returned to the ship with good news; and on Saturday the 16th the *Mayflower* left Cape Cod and anchored safely in the harbor across the bay. The Pilgrims were not the first to visit these shores.

"As early as 1517, fifty ships from England, Holland, France and Portugal were engaged in fisheries off the Newfoundland Banks; in 1536 a colony was attempted at Newfoundland; by 1540 the French had established fisheries there; in 1577 they employed one hundred and fifty vessels. In 1580 a joint stock company of £80,000 was formed in England to carry out the herring fisheries in rivalry with the Dutch, and in 1593 Sir Walter Raleigh declared in the House of Commons that the Newfoundland fishery was the stay and support of the West Counties of England. In 1600, 200 ships were annually there, employing 10,000 men, part of whom lived on shore curing the fish, and in 1620, before the landing of the Pilgrims, there were already 400 ships on the American coast."

Robert Barker married, second, 1 Apr. 1697/8, in Scituate, Hannah ——. One account says he married, second or third, Mrs. Phoebe Marsh.

Children of Lieut. ROBERT² BARKER and ALICE SNOW:

- i. Abigail, b. 24 Aug. 1682.
- ii. James, b. 1 Jan. 1683; res. Duxbury; m. 2 Oct. 1710 Hannah Wanton of "Drinkwater," dau. of Edward of Scituate. James d. 1718.
- iii. Caleb, b. 24 May 1685; m. Anna ——. Member of Society of Friends; d. 1772. Wife Anna d. May 1769 at Pownalboro, Me., aged 80.
- iv. Deborah, b. 7 Dec. 1686; m. Benjamin Keen of Pembroke. (See 8. Prince Barker.)
- v. Susannah, b. 20 Dec. 1689.
- vi. Robert, b. 5 July 1693. In 1735 he purchased from heirs of Widow Abigail (Hudson) Stetson, widow of Ensign John Stetson, his dwelling and land north of Church Hill. He had m. 7 Oct. 1722 Lydia Booth, dau. of John and Mary (Dodson) Booth of Scituate, b. 8 Mar. 1701.
- vii. Alice, b. 3 June 1695; m. 5 June 1712 Matthew Estes, cordwainer, of Boston, son of Richard of Lynn, keymaker. Granddaughter Alice Estes m. — Stephen Rogers of Rogers Hill, Marshfield (Nelson Hill).
- viii. LYDIA, b. 5 Sept. 1697; m. 20 Apr. 1728 EBENEZER STETSON, b. 1693. (See Stetson.)

Children of Lieut. Robert Barker and Hannah —:

- ix. Isaac, b. 15 Mar. 1699 (Windsor says 1696/7); bpt. Second Church, 1700 at Scituate. Res. Pembroke (Windsor says he returned to Duxbury).
- x. Mary, b. 13 May 1701 in Scituate.
- xi. Margaret, b. 18 Apr. 1704 in Scituate.

WILL OF ROBERT² BARKER

Plymouth County Records, Vol. 5, p. 594

1729. The 22d. Day of y^e sixth month 1729, I, Robert Barker, of Pembroke in y^e County of Plym^o in y^e province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England, being aged, & I know y^t my last & great change draweth near, Do make this my last will & testament in manner & form following —

Imprimis. — My will is that all my just debts be paid with ye necessary burial charges, whenever my burying may be.

Nextly. I give unto my grandson James Barker, y^e son of my son James Barker, deceased, a piece of land lying in Pembroke, in y^e County aforesaid joyning to a piece of land that I gave to my daughter Elizer Eustis on y^e North side & on y^e west side to y^e County road & on y^e South side by y^e road that leads to Marshfield. to a stake & a heap of stones ab^t it & so to head y^t piece of land that I have given to my said Elizer Eustis & also a piece of land y^t I sold to Matthew Eustis joining to y^t I gave to my daughter Eustis on y^e North side & so to run the same line from y^e head of Matthew Eustises north until it makes a square head with y^e stake & stones above mentioned to him y^e said James Barker his heirs & assigns forever. And as for y^e remainder of my estate both real & personal my mind & will is that it shall be prized by honest, indifferent or uninterested men so as it may be well worth y^e money that is prized or set at & then my will is that if my sons Caleb Barker & Robert Barker if they both ore either of them shall have a desire to have my lands as it is prized my will is that they shall have it, to them or either of them, & their heirs & assigns forever, provided y^t they my two sons, or either of them shall & do pay y^e sum of money that my lands is prized at within six months after my decease according as this my last will directs, & after apprizement made, my mind & will is y^t my estate be divided into ten equal parts & then to give my grand children my son James Barker, deceased, namely or by name Daniel Barker, George Barker, Stephen Barker, Alice Barker, & *Lydia* Barker, two shares or parts to be equally divided between them to them their heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my daughter Abigail Wanton one share to her & her heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my son Robert Barker two shares to him his heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my daughter Deborah Howland one share to her & her heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my daughter Alice Eustis one share to her & her heirs & assigns forever.

Item. I give to my daughter *Lydia Barker* one share to her & her heirs & assigns forever. And also I do hereby constitute & appoint my two sons Calcb Barker & Robert Barker to be executors to this my last will & testament, & I empower all or any part of my land as they may see fit or necessary, only they my said exeentors being accountable & divide said money according as this my s^d will directs for the confirmation of this my last will & testament. I the said Robert Barker do declare that I am in my perfect sense & memory & have hereunto set my hand & fixed my seal the day & year first above written.

Signed, sealed etc. before

ROBERT BARKER. Seal.

BENJAMIN KEEN

JNO. KEEN

ARTHUR HOWLAND, JUN^R

DEEDS

Robert² Barker, Jr. of Duxborough in consideration of 10.10.0.£ paid by *Edward Wanton, Jun. of Scituate, ship wright*, deeds one sixteenth (1/16) of the saw mill at *Mattakees Brook* in Duxborough together with the implements. Feb. 10, 1681. (Vol. 3, p. 228.)

Robert² Barker, Jr. of Duxborough in consideration of 19£ paid by *Isaac Little* of Marshfield, deeds one eighth part of saw-mill as aforestated. May 8, 1682. (Vol. 3, p. 229.)

Robert² Barker, Jr. of Duxborough in consideration of 10£ 10s. paid by *John Rogers Jr.* of Marshfield deeds one sixteenth part of saw mill as stated in previous deed. November 29, 1681. (Vol. 3, p. 230.)

An agreement between Lambert Despard, late of Braintree now of Duxbury, founder, one part, and on the other Frances Barker, Robert, Samuel, Joshua, and Josiah Barker all of Duxbury and Robert² Barker, Jr. and Mical Wanton of Scituate in regard to a *furness or Iron Works at Mattakesette* near where *the Herring Brook entereth* out of the *Herring Pond*. Sept. 1st, 1702. (Vol. 4, p. 148.)

Agreement concluded between Lambert Despard late of Brinbery, now of Duxboro', on one part, & Frances Barker, Robert Barker, Samuel Barker & Josiah Barker all of same. Robert² Barker, Jr. & Michael (Wanton);² they set upon a place near Hering pond. They covenant to set up a furnace together with all the appurtenances thereto. *Lambert Despard* to have part etc. November 28, 1702. (Vol. 4, p. 148.)

By another deed the above mentioned sell part of their lot near Hering pond. Nov. 28, 1702. (Vol. 4, p. 150.)

Frances Barker of Duxboro' in consideration of 25£ paid by John² Barker of Scituate deeds ¹/_s part of furnace & also part of land on Herring Brook in same. *A stock company is formed by John Barker previously. it is for obtaining iron ore etc.* November 18, 1702. (Vol. 4, p. 154.)

Robert² Barker of Duxboro, yeoman, in consideration of 25£ paid by

Lieu^t John Bryant of Scituate, deeds meadow land in Duxboro', on *North River* at a place called *Palmer's Landing Place*. July 18, 1704. (Vol. 5, p. 106.)

Robert² Barker of Duxboro: agreement, with Bethiah Little of Marshfield for 40£, regarding half of $\frac{1}{8}$ of 20 acres *with furnace*, dam &c. in the town of Duxboro' the whole of which $\frac{1}{8}$ Barker bought of Lambert Despard, founder of Duxboro'. 30 Novem. 1702. (Vol. 6, p. 99.)

Robert² Barker of Dux^o Yeoman for 57£ from Andrew Lovil of Barnstable, Husbandman, Meadow in Dux^o. 22. April 1702. (Vol. 8, p. 63.)

Robert² Barker of Dux^o, blacksmith, for 36£ from *Uncle Robert* Barker of *Jamestown alias Conanicut R. I.* land in Dux^o & Marshfield bought of Jeremy Momontague & Abigail his wife by Lambert Despard. 3 Aug. 1707. (Vol. 8, p. 119.)

Ignatius Cushing of Plymouth & Samuel & Hannah Barker (wife of Barnabas) of Scituate for 42£ from Job Otis of Scituate, shopkeeper, land in Cohasset in same. 25. Sept. 1710. (signed Samuel Williams als. Barker) (Vol. 8, p. 129.)

Robert Barker of Dux^o blacksmith, for 1000£ from Joshua Cushing of Marsh^d husbandman "my farm messuage" in Dux^o (signed also by Hannah wife) 3, Jan. 1710. (Vol. 8, p. 181.)

Josiah Holmes, Francis Barker & Robert² Barker, Sen^r all of Dux^o, division of land bought of James Magoon, 30, March 1701 13, Feb. 1706/7. (Vol. 9, p. 90.)

Isaac Barker of Dux^o husbandman, for 14£ from *Nathaniel Thomas* of Marsh^d land in Major's Purchase. 3, Feb. 1708. (Vol. 9, p. 260.)

James Barker of Abington, house carpenter, for 900£ from Edward Wanton of Scituate, *shipwright*, land in *Abington*, with half saw mill, dams &c. bounded N. by lands of Samuel Hatch S. to Frank Negro. 24, Aug. 1713. (Vol. 10, p. 203.)

Robert Barker of Pembroke, yeoman, in consideration of 40s. paid by Matthew Eustis of same, tanner, deeds small parcel of land in Pembroke, near grantee's land. June 8, 1718. (Vol. 14, p. 223.)

Robert² Barker of Pembroke, husbandman, Daniel Allen of Sandwich, husbandman, & Caleb Barker of Scituate, founder, & Hannah Barker of Abington executrix on will of her late husband James Barker, in consideration of 60£ paid by Matthew Eustis of Pembroke, tanner, deed land in Scituate which deceased *bought of Edward Wanton*. August 10, 1719. (Vol. 14, p. 223.)

Capt. Thomas Barker of Pembroke in consideration of 20s. paid by *Nathaniel Thomas* of Plymouth, gent, deeds a share in the beach at Duxborough. Jan. 20, 1715. (Vol. 15, p. 87.)

Robert² Barker of Pembroke & Daniel Allen of Sandwich, & Caleb Barker of Scituate & Isaac Barker of Abington & Hannah his wife, executrix on estate of James Barker: his estate was heavily mortgaged & therefore part of it has to be sold: in consideration of 900£ paid by *Job Otis* deeds land in Abington called *Drinkwater land* Jan. 18, 1721. (Vol. 16, p. 3.)

James Barker, late of Abington, yeoman & Francis Barker of Pembroke & Abraham Redwood of Salem, erected a furnace on land of James Barker, near a brook called Drinkwater. This is afterwards taken by Caleb Barker, Hannah Barker, Robert² Barker & Daniel Allen. Aug. 10, 1719. (Vol. 16, p. 16.)

Francis Barker of Pembroke, founder, in consideration of a valuable sum of money paid by *Caleb Barker of Scituate, founder*, deeds his interest in 5/24 of a furnace at Abington, deeded to him by his *uncle Robert Barker*. Aug. 10, 1719. (Vol. 16, p. 17.)

June 27, 1715. An agreement between Robert² Barker of Pembroke, yeoman, & John Macfarland & Joshua Turner, & Benjamin Kcen, all of same, Yeomen, & Joseph Hatch of Marshfield, yeoman, & Samuel Hatch, Jr. & Elisha Hatch of Scituate. The above named have agreed to build a *saw mill on Pudding Brook*. Said (Robert² Barker), receives 1/4 part & all the rest one eighth parts respectively. (Vol. 16, p. 18.)

Robert² Barker of Pembroke, husbandman, Daniel Allen of Sandwich, Caleb Barker of Scituate, founder, Isaac Barker & Hannah Barker his wife, both of Abington, executors on will of James Barker, deem it necessary to sell some of deceased's estate, in consideration of 350£ paid to Hannah Barker, executrix by Jeremiah Hatch of Scituate, husbandman, same land bought of Edward Wanton on the *Drinkwater line*. March 13, 1722. (Vol. 16, p. 135.)

Robert² Barker of Pembroke, yeoman, did with his brother Francis Barker & Josiah Holmes purchase of James Magoon a piece of land at the *Brick Kilns in Pembroke on North River* for a *lauding place*. They cast lots for the different parts. Robert Barker for the accommodating some of his neighbors in consideration of 7.5.0.£ deeds one half of his share to the neighbors namely: Joseph Foord, Isaac Barker, Joshua Turner, Nehemiah Cushing & John Kean etc. May 6, 1720. (Vol. 17, p. 78.)

Robert² Barker of Pembroke, Daniel Allen of Sandwich, Caleb Barker of Scituate & Isaac Barker, Jr. of Pembroke & Hannah his wife, executrix on the estate of James Barker. They decide to sell some of deceased's land to pay his just debts. In consideration of 20£ deed one half of a *saw mill on Drinkwater river*. Feb. 20, 1722. (Vol. 18, p. 56.)

Robert² Barker, Daniel Allen, Caleb Barker & Isaac Barker & Hannah his wife, executrix of the last will of her late husband James Barker late of Abington. Part of the property left was a furnace to the children, which *furnace was going into decay from lack of repair*. The same is sold to Matthew Eustis of Scituate for 230£ & the money is paid to the guardians of the children, Mr. *Job Otis* & Joseph Barstow both of Scituate. Sepr. 13, 1725. (Vol. 20, p. 46.)

6. SAMUEL³ WILLIAMS BARKER (3. *John*², *Esq.*, *John*¹) was born in Marshfield 23 Apr. 1686. He inherited the Williams farm in Scituate from his great uncle, Capt. John Williams, in

1694. He married 25 Dec. 1706 Hannah Cushing, daughter of Rev. Nehemiah Cushing of the First Church of Scituate. By her he had a family of five children. Their daughter, Hannah⁴ Barker, married, in 1737, Capt. Joshua Otis, who lived upon an adjoining farm. (See Otis family.) Deborah⁴ Barker became the third wife of the Rev. Shearjashub Bourn of the Scituate (First) Church in 1750.

SAMUEL⁴ BARKER, the oldest son of Samuel³ and Hannah (Cushing), born in 1707, inherited the Barker farm. He married, first, in 1738, Deborah Gorham of Barnstable, who died the same year, and Samuel married, second, in 1739, Patience Howland, *fifth in descent from John Howland of the Mayflower*.

WILLIAMS⁵ BARKER, the oldest son of Samuel⁴ and Patience (Howland), born in 1744, was *Captain of a Scituate company in the Revolutionary War*. Capt. Williams⁵ Barker married in 1777 Sarah Lothrop of Kingston. He inherited the farm in Scituate on the death of his father in 1782. He removed to Wiscasset, Me., about 1790 to 1792, and sold his paternal acres to Benjamin⁵ Barker of Pembroke, a descendant of Robert¹ Barker (Benjamin⁵, Prince⁴, Isaac³, Isaac², Robert¹). Benjamin⁵ Barker was a successful farmer and a man of considerable property in Pembroke and in Tiverton, R. I. He had been twice married, and by his second wife, Rebecca Partridge of Boston, he obtained a large fortune. Samuel Partridge⁶ Barker, son of Benjamin⁵ and Rebecca (Partridge), was born about the time that Benjamin⁵ purchased the farm in Scituate. Samuel Partridge⁶ Barker married Catherine Gooch of Boston. Their son, Samuel Partridge⁷ Barker, born in 1824, married Almeda Little Otis, daughter of James Little Otis of Scituate, only son of Ensign Otis, third of the name. Otis⁸ Barker, son of Samuel P.⁷, Jr., and Almeda (Otis), was the last of the name in Scituate, and it was he who sold the farm in 1910 for development into a summer colony. The old Williams-Barker house, dating from 1634, is now known (1936) as the "Hatherly Inn."

7. BARNABAS³ BARKER (3. *John*², *Esq.*, *John*¹) was born in Marshfield about 1690. He was a prosperous farmer, and according to Deane lived near Johnson's Swamp at "the beechwoods" until his house at that place was burned in 1739, at which time the town of Scituate voted to exempt him from paying taxes that year. (Johnson's Swamp was west of Beechwoods and Mount Hope.) According to his will dated 1757 Barnabas³ Barker was then living on the easterly side of Halifax Cedar

Swamp, and this farm was occupied by his son Barnabas, after the death of his father. At a later date it was Ignatius Otis', and the hill has been known as Otis Hill. It is on Grove Street, Norwell, near the corner of School Street.

Barnabas Barker of Scituate yoeman in consideration of £45 paid by Thomas Briantt of same Shipwright, deeds land in Scituate. May 16, 1726. (Plymouth Co. Deeds. Vol. 26, p. 149.)

Barnabas Barker of Scituate yoeman & his wife Mary in consideration of £258, 15s, 9d paid by Benjamin Man of Hanover deeds land in Hanover that once belonged to John Barker. Feb. 7, 1738. (Vol. 34, p. 206.)

Barnabas Barker of Scituate yoeman, in consideration of £21, 6s, 8d paid by Daniel Dammon of same, deeds a lot of salt marsh near Herring River. Aug. 31, 1752. (on Kent St. Scituate.) (Vol. 43, p. 104.)

Barnabas Barker of Scituate yoeman, in consideration of £20 paid by John Bowker deeds salt meadow in Scituate near Herring River. August 2, 1753. (Vol. 50, p. 15.)

Barnabas³ Barker married, first, 3 Apr. 1719 *Hannah Turner*, a grandniece of Timothy Hatherley. (See Turner, Jenkins, Hatherley families.) She died in 1735, and *Barnabas³ Barker* married, second, 24 May 1736 *Mary Neal*, probably a sister of *Joseph Neal*, who settled on the corner of Neal Gate Road and Main Street, just west of the Scituate line. By his two wives *Barnabas³ Barker* had a family of fifteen children. He died in Scituate in 1763.

Children of BARNABAS³ BARKER and HANNAH TURNER:

- i. SARAH, b. 11 June 1721; m. (1) Lewis Lombard; (2) Job Neal. They lived upon the south side of Church Hill.
- ii. BARNABAS, b. 13 Apr. 1723; m. 13 Apr. 1723 Sarah Green of Barnstable. He was a soldier in the Revolution, and was one of the "Roll of Honor Men" of Scituate, who loaned money to carry on the war. In 1780 he moved to Rindge, N. H. He had a family of six children, b. in Scituate.
- iii. HANNAH⁴, b. 17 Jan. 1724; m. 1745 16. JAMES BRIGGS. (See Chapter VIII.)
- iv. Thomas, b. 19 Aug. 1726.
- v. Desire, b. 25 Apr. 1728; m. — Bell, and resided in Boston.
- vi. John, b. 1729.
- vii. Lydia, bpt. 21 Apr. 1734.

Children of Barnabas³ Barker and Mary Neal:

- viii. David William, bpt. 1 May 1737; m. (1) 1761 Sarah Chandler; (2) 1766 Mary Lockwood; (3) Rhoda — . Removed to Windham, Conn.

- ix. Mercy, bpt. 4 May 1738; m. 13 Dec. 1757 Anthony Collamore and d. 1817.
- x. Joshua, bpt. 16 Nov. 1740; m. Mary Copeland 28 Oct. 1766, dau. of Jonathan and Mary (Tolman) Copeland. Resided in Boston and Hanover, Mass.
- xi. Lucy, bpt. 26 June 1743; d. in infancy.
- xii. Lucy, bpt. 7 Oct. 1744; m. 4 Nov. 1764 King Lapham of Marshfield.
- xiii. Content, bpt. 5 Apr. 1747; m. (1) 26 Sept. 1763 Capt. Benjamin Lapham of Marshfield; (2) Jonathan Sherwin of Rindge, N. H.
- xiv. Bathsheba, bpt. 28 Oct. 1750; m. 28 Oct. 1780 David Hale of Rowley, later of Rindge, N. H.
- xv. Zipporah, bpt. 23 Oct. 1752; m. Jonathan Ingalls of Rindge, N. H.

BARNABAS³ BARKER'S WILL

Plymouth Records, Vol. 16, Page 425

In the name of God. Amen. The fourth day of Nov. A.D. 1757. Barnabas Barker of Scituate in the County of Plymouth in New England yoeman, being under infirmity of body But of sound mind Do make this my last will & testament. First I Recommend my soul to God who gave it & my body to the Earth to decent burial and as for my goods & Estate I dispose of them in manner following that is to say.

Impr^s. I give unto my son Barnabas Barker the farm whereon I now live, that is to say all my upland lying on the Easterly side of Hallifax cedar swamp so called being about fifty acres by the same more or less bounded on said Cedar swamp on the westerly on Capt. Samu^l Turner's land on the northerly & easterly side and southerly on the highway which leads by my house with the buildings & appurtenances, also all my cedar swamp and also ten acres of salt marsh land lying neer to John Colmans to be taken on the westerly side of my salt marsh from the highway to the Herring river all lying in Scituate to have to hold the same unto my said son Barnabas his heirs and assigns forever saving the use to my daughters Lidia & Mercy as hereafter mentioned as I give to him all my stock of costumes of all kinds also all my farming tools of all sorts also one of my guns marked with the letters B. B. and my sword also my hay and fodder of all sorts in my barn, he paying all my just debts & funeral charges out of what I have given him.

I give unto my sons Thomas, John, and David Barker nine acres of my land lying in said Scituate at a place called Taunton Dean to be taken of on ye Southerly side of my said land adjoining to Benj. Jacob, land to be equally divided between them to have & to hold the same unto them their heirs & assigns forever.

I give unto my son Joshua Barker two acres of salt marsh land adjoining to the ten acres of salt marsh which I have given to my son Barnabas from the highway to the Herring river and also all my silver Jacket & Brushes to him his heirs and assigns forever.

I give unto my daughters Sarah Neal, *Hannah Briggs*, Desire Bell, four acres & a half of my land lying at Taunton Dean aforesaid to be taken at the north end of said land adjoining to Capt. Sam'l Turners and Mr. Stockbridges Land to them their heirs and assigns forever to be equally divided between them which with what I have before given my said daughters I judge to be sufficient Proviton out of my estate.

I give unto my daughters Lydia and Merey Barker the use and improvement of the great chamber in my house to live in themselves, so long as they shall remain unmarried but not to let out to others.

I give to my daughter Lucy Barker 1 pair gold sleeve Buttons.

I give to my daughter Content Barker a gold locket.

I give to my daughter Barsheba Barker one silver spoon marked with the letters M. G.

I give to my daughter Zipporah Barker one silver spoon marked with the letters W. G. D.

All the rest of my upland, swamp land and salt marsh land lying in Scituate aforesaid and household goods & books, I give unto my daughters Mary Barker, Abigail Bell, Lidia Barker, Merey Barker, Lucy Barker, Content Barker, Basheba Barker and Ziphorah Barker their heirs and assigns forever to be equally divided between them. Also my will and mind is that the charge of settling my estate should be paid by all my children aforementioned out of what I have given them in porportion as what I have given each of them amounts to. Also my mind and will is that all my provisions of all sorts, & leather, be for the use of my family and for my son Barnabas' family while they remain together to be used for that purpose diserimination of Executor hereafter mentioned.

Lastly I do hereby nominate and appoint my son Barnabas Barker to be sole executor of this my last will and testament and also to pay my just debts and funeral charges out of the estate I have given him. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year first before written.

Signed, sealed, published ect.

BARNABAS BARKER

seal

in presence of

JOHN BRIANT

JOHN BOWKER

JOSEPH CUSHING JUNIOR

Barnabas⁴ Barker, Jr., son of (6.) Barnabas³ and Hannah Turner, served in the Revolutionary War, and was one of the "Roll of Honor Men" in Scituate, who loaned money to carry on the war. In 1780 he moved to Rindge, N. H.

Children of Barnabas, Jr., and Sarah Greene, all born in Scituate:

- i. John, bpt. 23 Feb. 1752; m. Hannah Smith 7 Dec. 1795; d. in Rindge, N. H., 25 July 1819.

- ii. Mary, b. 7 Apr. 1754; m. 1 June 1793 Andrew Kimball; d. 27 July 1796.
- iii. David, b. —; m. 17 Mar. 1783 Sally Crumbie; d. 16 Jan. 1816.
- iv. Barnabas, b. 1757; m. 17 July 1778 Elizabeth Gardner in Bangor, Me.; removed to Rindge, N. H., 1783, and later to Charlestown, N. H.; d. 13 Nov. 1798 in Charlestown, N. H.
- v. Lemuel, b. —; m. —; removed to Coneord, N. H., about 1793.
- vi. William, b. — 1762; m. 28 Oct. 1794 Sarah Payson; d. 25 Oct. 1830.

8. PRINCE⁴ BARKER (*Isaac³, Isaac², Robert¹*) was born 9 Feb. 1716 and died 27 Jan. 1784. He married 6 Nov. 1746 Abigail Keen, born in Pembroke 6 Feb. 1721, who died 2 Sept. 1790. Abigail Keen was a daughter of Benjamin Keen and his wife Deborah³ Barker, a daughter of Robert² Barker, Jr., and his first wife, Alice Snow. (See 5. Robert Barker.)

Children of Prince⁴ Barker and Abigail Keen:

- i. Prince, b. 6 Oct. 1747; m. a Widow Bryant. He d. at sea in 1781.
- ii. Isaac, b. 1 May 1749; m. 24 Apr. 1791 Bridget Almy.
- iii. Abigail, b. 29 Jan. 1761; d. 7 Jan. 1789.
- iv. Deborah⁵, b. 29 Jan. 1753; m. 31 July 1777 57. Seth Briggs, Jr. (See Chapter VIII.)
- v. Benjamin⁵, b. 30 Sept. 1756; m. (1) Ann Barker; (2) Rebecca Partidge.

9. JACOB⁵ BARKER (*Robert⁴, Samuel³, Isaac², Robert¹*) born in 1782, died in 1866, was one of the most patriotic men of this country and a shrewd business man, able banker, successful lawyer and politician. During the War of 1812 his losses were enormous, but in spite of the fact he raised nearly \$8,000,000 for the government. He was an intimate friend of President Madison, and it was he who saved the Stuart portrait of President Washington when the Capitol was sacked by the British, after it had been cut from its frame by Mrs. Dolly Madison. He rolled the canvas up, and left it in charge of the farmer where he spent the night. It now hangs in the Blue Room of the White House.

THE TURNER ANCESTRY OF THE BRIGGS FAMILY

1. HUMPHREY¹ TURNER, a tanner, was one of the earliest of the settlers at Plymouth to take up lands at Satuit. Family tradition says that he was here as early as 1626. Deane says that he came to New England with wife and family in 1628, and had a house lot assigned him in Plymouth in 1629, upon which

he erected a house in which he resided until his removal to Seitu-ate in 1633.

May 18, 1633. Humphrey Turner having obtained leave to make use of a peece of ground by the pond on the water side the fort neere the towne, and having *enclosed the same with a firme pallisado*, hath sold his right and title to the same, as also the pallisado it self, together with a smale randevow, to Josias Winslow, the elder, for and in consideration of eight pounds sterling, to be pd in money or beaver at 10ss 9t, at or before the 15th of October next ensuing. (Plymouth Col. Rec., Vols. 1, 2.)

Humphrey¹ Turner was born in England in 1594, and because of his assoeiation with the so-called "Men of Kent" in the settlement of Seitu-ate, it was supposed that he came from County Kent, England, as had his friends Nathaniel Tilden, Thomas Hiland, Henry Merritt, Thomas Bird and others. (See inscription on memorial shaft.) It has later been thought more probable that his English home was in Devonshire, and that he embarked from some port in Essex. His wife was LYDIA GAMER, about whose family name there is much speculation. The name *Gamer* has not been found elsewhere, and many believe it to have been *Garner*, a name synonymous with *Gardner* (so found on Hingham Records). She died before 1669.

The first assignment of house lots at Satuit was made in Aug. 1633, along a way that they named Kent Street, extending south from the mouth of Satuit Brook at the harbor, towards the "high hills," later known as Colman's Hills; but before that time several planters had taken up lands and laid out plantations on the Third Cliff and adjacent territory. Among them was Humphrey Turner, whose farm was southeast of the hills. These plantations on the Third Cliff were made very early, certainly before 1628, as that year Henry Merritt sold to Nathaniel Tilden "all the land which I had of Goodman Byrd, lying within the fence at the north end of the third cliffe, unto the land of Nathaniel Tilden." (Colony Records.) In Aug. 1633 the fourth house lot along Kent Street was assigned to Humphrey Turner. He did not erect a house upon it, but built it on his farm near Colman's Hills, to which he removed that year. By 1636 he had a tannery on his farm, the first one in the settlement. This house and the tannery near it were on the north side of the way now (1936) known as the Driftway, nearly opposite to the house in which several descendants of his grandson, Samuel Turner, have lived, owned for several years past by the Boston Sand and Gravel Company.

Humphrey Turner was one of the seventeen organizers of the Church of Scituate, 18 Jan. 1634 O.S. He was a constable, surveyor of highways, grand and traverse jurymen. In the latter capacity he was a member of the jury at the trial of four white men indicted for the murder of the Indian named Penowanyanquis. They were found guilty, and sentenced to be hanged. One of the four escaped, while the others were executed. On this same jury with Humphrey Turner were Edward Foster, Deacon Richard Sealis and Elder William Hatch of Scituate. Humphrey Turner was a Deputy to the Colony Court for thirteen years, between 1640 and 1654, with the exception of 1643. He assisted in fixing the bounds of the Hatherley grant; was on the committee to dispose of lands in the Two-Mile, and, with two others, was chosen to protect the "common lands" of the town against trespassers.

In 1636 when the great lots along North River, of 60 and 80 acres each, were granted to the earliest settlers, Humphrey Turner received a lot of 80 acres adjoining that of Edward Foster on the east and Ephraim Kempton (later John James) on the west, upon which his eldest son, John Turner, Sr., settled in 1645.

COMMENTS ON NOTE 2431. TURNER. FEB. 9, 1931. H. T. N.

"Casco" writes: "Perhaps I can contribute a few casual notes . . . as a result of many years gleanings in the effort to place Humphrey Turner, an ancestor, in his English home. Turner is an occupational surname, and is found in every county of England. Humphrey as a baptismal name is quite rare, but I have not found the combination in any of the available (as well as numerous) lists of names in printed records, and in MS., except as stated below. I think tradition may be ignored as confusing, conveying the idea that he came from three different counties by a roundabout journey."

"Casco" continues: "I have found the following instances of persons named Humphrey Turner before 1640 in English records, viz.: Humphrey of Wigam, Lancashire, 1587; Humphrey of Stockport, Cheshire, inkeeper, 1638; Humphrey of London, gentleman, of Lyon's Inn, will 1615; Humphrey of Plymouth, Devon, grocer 1616; Humphrey of Thornton, Devon, gentleman 1639. These instances show numerous families of Turner in Lancashire, Cheshire and Devonshire which used the name of Humphrey." (From "Boston Transcript.")

HUMPHREY¹ TURNER died 1673, age 79 (Scituate Records), and was buried in the old burial ground in Meeting House Lane, with the other members of his family. None of the old stones remain, but there has been erected to the memory of Humphrey

and others of his descendants a rather modern monument, erected in 1869 by Job A. Turner, which bears this inscription:

Here lyes		
HUMPHREY TURNER		
who was born in Kent, England		
in 1594, and died in Scituate		
in 1673 aged 78.		
1671	David Turner	1698
1671	Col. Amos Turner	1739
1687	Mary, his wife	1729
1670	Capt. Samuel Turner	1759
1686	Abigail, his wife	1744
1703	Nathaniel, their son	1734
1720	Abigail, their daughter	1732
1706	Capt. James Turner	1778
	Mary, his wife aged 73	
1738	Lydia, their daughter	1740
1706	Left. Seth Turner	1743

In the First Parish Cemetery at Norwell (South Scituate) is a tall granite shaft, placed there, it is said, by the effort of Hon. Samuel Adams Turner in 1856. It bears this inscription:

HUMPHREY TURNER
 CAME FROM ENG.
 TO SCITUATE
 1626
 DIED 1673.
 HIS WIFE
 LYDIA GAMER.
 THEIR CHILDREN
 JOHN, JOHN, THOMAS
 DANIEL, NATHANIEL
 WILL^m, LYDIA, MARY
 1856.

The story of this shaft has been told by a descendant, as follows:

In 1856 Hon. Samuel Adams Turner, at that time living at Scituate Harbor, was desirous of placing in the old First Parish Cemetery on Meeting House Lane a memorial shaft in memory of his ancestor, and collected from other descendants of Humphrey money for the same.

He ordered the shaft from a firm of granite workers in Quincy, and when completed it was to be delivered to the old First Parish Cemetery. It was ready for delivery in the winter of 1856, and hauled over the snow on sleds drawn by oxen. When the team reached South Scituate Village the men with it inquired where Hon. Samuel A. Turner lived, and were told "a little way below here," for he had removed from the harbor village to his wife's old home near Union bridge, South Scituate (now Norwell).

The road from Quincy to South Scituate with an ox load was a long one, and the men were anxious to leave their load and get back to Quincy before dark. They then inquired where was the First Parish Cemetery, and were told that it was the one there in South Scituate Village, which it was — the First Parish Cemetery of South Scituate.

The shaft was unloaded, and the men returned to Quincy. When the bill was presented to Squire Turner he refused to pay it until the monument was delivered to the proper place. On the other hand, it was a long road from Quincy with a team, to reload and transport the shaft five miles further on. Each party stood firm, and it is said that the bill was never paid.

For more than twenty years the monument lay prostrate in the cemetery, and finally a descendant of another branch of the family from that of Squire Turner collected funds to set it up on the spot where it had lain for so many years.

WILL OF HUMPHREY TURNER

Plymouth Records, Wills, Vol. 3, Page 71

In the name of God, Amen. The last day of February 1669 I Humphrey Turner of Scittuate in the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth in New England, tanner, being weak in body but of sound and perfect memory praise be given to God for the same and knowing the uncertainty of this life on earth and being desirous to settle things in order do make this my last will and testament in manner and form following. That is to say first and I comitt my soole to Almighty God my Creator assuredly believing that I shall receive full pardon and remission of all my sins and (transgressions?) by the glorious death and (resurrection?) of my Blessed Saviour and redeemer Jesus Christ and my body to the earth from whence it was taken to be buried in such decent manner as to my executors hereafter named shall be thought meet and convenient and as touching my worldly estate as the Lord in mercy hath lent me my will and meaning is the same shall be (enjoyed) employed and bestowed as hereafter by this my will is expressed: and first I revoke . . . and make void all wills and testaments by me formerly made and . . . appoint this my last will and testament and no other. First I give and bequeath to my eldest son John Turner (the farm on which he lives?) Whereas I have lately given and possessed to my son Joseph Turner forty pounds as a portion for him. Item, I give and bequeath unto him twelve pounds.

I give and bequeath unto my son John Turner (Jr.?) five pounds. Item, I give and bequeath unto my son Daniel Turner Twelve pounds. Item, I give and bequeath unto my son Nathaniel Turner Fifty pounds. Item, I give and bequeath unto my daughter Mary (Gnawks?)* ten pounds. Item I give and bequeath unto my daughter Lydia Doughtey twelve pounds. Item I give and bequeath unto my grandchild Humphrey Turner five pounds. Item I give and bequeath to my grandchild Mary Doughtey ten pounds. Item I give and bequeath unto my grand children Jonathan Turner, Josiah Turner and Elizabeth Turner being the fruits of my eldest son, ten shillings a year. Item I give son Nathaniel Turner all my live stock both cattle horses sheep etc. Item I *give and bequeath unto my son Thomas Turner* all my wearing clothes one wood bed and blankets [closing of will omitted]

(Signed)

HUMPHREY TURNER

(presented for probate) 5 June 1673.

HUMPHREY¹ and LYDIA (GAMER) TURNER had a family of eight children, the four oldest born in England.

Children of Humphrey¹ Turner and Lydia Gamer:

2. i. John, b. England between 1620 and 1624; m. Mary Brewster 1645.
- ii. Lydia, b. England; m. James Doughty 15 Aug. 1649, a soldier in King Philip's War. In 1678 the town of Scituate paid him for nine weeks' campaign in 1676. This payment may have been in Connecticut land, as Deane suggests that his family removed to that place, where the name was extant in 1830. Their daughter, Mary Doughty, m. (1) Samuel Russell, and was later the first wife of Capt. Cornelius Briggs. (See Chapter VI, Capt. Cornelius Briggs.)
- iii. Joseph, b. England. Called by Pratt "a scapegoat and ne'er-do-well" in his younger years; retrieved his reputation by his services in King Philip's War, in which he was an Ensign. He was severely wounded in the expedition against the Narragansetts in 1673. On his return to Scituate the town "chose Serj. John Damon to go with Joseph Turner and procure a cure for him; also to support him at the town's expense so long as he liveth." He recovered, and rejoined the troops under Governor Winslow, and was at the storming of the Narragansett fort 19 Dec. 1675. In 1681 Joseph Turner, having served in the Narragansett fight, is freed from military duty. He was unm.
3. iv. John, Jr. ("young son John"), b. England; m. Ann James 1649.
4. v. THOMAS, b. abt. 1630 New England (Plymouth?); m. SARAH HILAND.

* Mary Turner married William Parker 1661.

- vi. Mary, b. New England; m. 13 Nov. 1661 William Parker, as his second wife. William Parker settled about 1640, upon a tract of 60 aeres, north of Edward Foster's lot on the North River. His house upon this traet was west of a small brook on Parker's Lane, now (1936) known as Parker Street (Norwell). His first wife was Mary, dau. of Thomas Rawlins, whose property was later that of Deacon Thomas King. (See John² Briggs, Chapter VI.)
- vii. Daniel, prob. b. Seituete; m. 20 June 1665 (or 1666) Hannah Randall, dau. of William Randall, who lived on River Street (Norwell) on the site of the home of Elisha Foster, the ship-builder, beside Dwelley Creek Brook. (See 100. Joseph Warren⁶ Briggs.) Daniel Turner resided in Hanover near Barstow's bridge over the North River.
- viii. Nathaniel, b. Seituete; m. Mehitable Rigby (Bigbee) 29 Mar. 1664-65, and lived upon his father's farm east of Colman Hills. Nine generations of his deseendants have lived upon this farm. The house now (1936) standing on the property is on the opposite side of the way from the site of the original house and tannery. It is called the "Samuel Turner house," and is owned by the Seituete Sand and Gravel Company, who used it as a clubhouse for its employees for a few years.

2. JOHN² TURNER (1. *Humphrey*¹) known as John, Sr., was the oldest son of Humphrey, was born in England, probably about 1620 to 1624. He settled on his father's 80-acre lot on the North River, and there built a tannery near the river, by a spring and a hillock known as the "island." He held numerous town offices, and with his younger brother, John² Turner, known as John, Jr., served on many committees for division of common lands, and on those chosen to carry out various aetions of the town. The brothers were often serving together on juries at the Plymouth Court, as well as upon inquests. John², Sr., served in the campaign against the Narragansetts with his brother, Joseph² Turner.

John² Turner, Sr., married 10 Nov. 1645 Mary³ Brewster, born at Plymouth 16 Apr. 1627, daughter of Jonathan² and Lucretia (Oldham) Brewster, and granddaughter of Elder William¹. She died after 23 Mar. 1697/8, upon which date she signed a receipt in connection with the settlement of her husband's estate. John² Turner, Sr., died between 4 Mar. 1695, on which day he made his will, and 20 May 1697, the date that it was probated. By it he divided the 80-acre tract on which he was then living into four parts of 20 aeres each, and bequeathed them to four of his

eight sons, — to Jonathan, his eldest son, he gave the southwest 20 acres "upon which he (Jonathan) was then living" (now (1936) Schuyler Dillon's); to Joseph, the northeast 20 acres (north of the public way, Main Street) "upon which he was then living" (now James H. Barnard's); to John, the northwest 20 acres (north of the way) "upon which he *had at one time dwelt*" (now the *May Elms property*). This John was known as "Little John," and lived on what was later the Dr. Barnes property (Horace T. Fogg's). The fourth 20 acres with dwelling, in which he (John², Sr.) lived, was given to his wife Mary for the term of her natural life, and after her decease to his son, Benjamin³ Turner. Benjamin³ Turner lived on Winter Street. John⁴ Turner, son of Benjamin³ and Elizabeth (Hawkins), settled on the last mentioned 20 acres after the death of his grandmother, Mary (Brewster).

After the death in 1778 of John⁴ Turner (son of Benjamin³), this property was divided between four daughters by his second wife: Mary Turner, wife of Abijah Otis; Ruth Turner, wife of Deacon Thomas Cushing; Rachel Turner, wife of James N. Sparrell; and Lucy Turner, wife of Thatcher Tilden. Thatcher Tilden purchased the interests of the other heirs, and some years later built upon the property the house which after his death was purchased by Seth Thomas. The old town way to the ferry (Bisbee's, later Oakman's) and the toll bridge (Union bridge) was the lane that leads to Schuyler Dillon's, and on through his property to the ferry. About 1850 Bridge Street was cut through the Thomas farm, leaving the house built by Thatcher Tilden upon its east corner. The house and farm is now (1936) owned by James H. Barnard.

Children of John² Turner, Sr., and Mary Brewster:

5. i. Jonathan, b. 20 Sept. 1646; m. (1) Martha Bisbee; (2) Mercy Hatch.
- ii. Joseph, b. 12 Jan. 1647; d. 15 Jan. 1647.
6. iii. Joseph, b. 12 Jan. 1649; m. Bathsheba (Hobart) Lane.
- iv. Ezekiel, b. 7 Jan. 1650; m. Leah Simmons (Simons) 6 June 1675.
- v. Lydia, b. 24 Jan. 1652; m. John James 1675, who settled on the adjoining property, once Ephraim Kempton's. He d. from wounds received in the Indian Raid of 1676, a few days after the birth of his son John. Widow Lydia James m. 1680 William Barrell, son of William of Boston, who with his brothers George and John Barrell settled in Boston and Charlestown 1636. William, Sr., d. in Boston in 1639. Her son John² James m. (1) in 1700 Eunice

Stetson, granddaughter of Cornet Robert; (2) Lydia³, dau. of Nathaniel² Turner. He succeeded to the James homestead near the "block-house" at the bend of North River (the elbow). John³ James (Deacon John, Jr.) son of Deacon John² and Eunice, m. Rhoda King. (See Deborah³ Briggs, Chapter VII.)

Lydia (Turner) James and William Barrell had children, William, Lydia, Mary and James. William and Lydia left descendants in Scituate. William m. Elizabeth Bailey, and their descendants have been remarkable for longevity, each living nearly to the age of 100 years. Lydia² Barrell m. Samuel Stockbridge, son of Charles, the miller at Greenbush. They were the ancestors of the Stockbridge families in Mount Blue and vicinity.

- vi. John ("Little John"), b. 30 Oct. 1654; m. Abigail Padeshall abt. 1694. Abigail Padeshall, b. 29 Sept. 1663, dau. of Richard & Abigail Padeshall of Boston. He resided on the main road west of Herring Brook Hill, where Rev. David Barnes built a new house in 1770 (H. T. Fogg's). It is believed that his house stood on the site of that purchased by the Rev. Samuel Deane from Dr. Barnes, called by the latter "my old house." Sons of "Little John" and Abigail (Padeshall) Turner were Richard and Abiel. The latter m. Elizabeth Robinson, a lineal descendant of John Robinson the Leyden pastor.
- vii. Elisha, b. 8 Mar. 1656; m. Elizabeth Jacob 6 June 1687, bpt. Second Church, Scituate, 8 July 1666, dau. of Mary of Hingham (Church Records).
- viii. Mary, b. 10 Dec. 1658.
- ix. Benjamin, b. 5 Mar. 1660; m. Elizabeth Hawkins 14 Apr. 1692. He lived on Winter Street (Norwell) south of the residence of Charles Turner. A son, John Turner, b. 1692/3, m. Mercy Bartlett of Duxbury 1714. They had a dau., Grace Turner, who m. Ichabod Soule of Duxbury, and their dau., Abigail Soule, was the first wife of Capt. Elijah Curtis, Sr., of Curtis or Buttonwood Hill, who lived later in the Dr. Cushing Otis house. John Turner m. (2) Widow Mary Vinal in 1769, at the age of 76. He lived, as before mentioned (see John, Sr.), on the 20 acres of the original Turner grant, which his father Benjamin inherited after the death of Mary (Brewster) Turner. The late Charles Albert Tilden of East Boston is authority for a statement that some of the timbers of the Benjamin Turner house on Winter Street were used in building the house of John Foster in 1793 (now, 1936, Dr. Frederick Burns').
- x. Ruth, bpt. 17 May 1662 (Second Church).
- xi. Isaac, bpt. 30 Apr. 1665.
- xii. Grace, b. — 1667; bpt. 2 Aug. 1668; m. — Christopher.
- xiii. Amos (Major Amos), bpt. 4 June 1671; m. (1) 6 Apr. 1695 Mary Hiland, dau. of Thomas, Jr., and Elizabeth (Stockbridge) Hiland. Thomas Hiland, Jr., father of Elizabeth, *died in Phipps Canadian*

Expedition, 1690. Major Amos Turner m. (2) 19 Nov. 1730 Hannah (Gill) Clap, widow of John Clap, and dau. of Lieut. Thomas Gill of Hingham. (See Otis.) When he d. 13 Apr. 1739, ae. 68, he was known as Col. Amos Turner. He resided in the Country Way near the Tan Brook on the western side of the way, nearly opposite to the residence of his uncle, John Turner, Jr. ("young son John"). His son, Col. Amos Turner, m. 29 Jan. 1721, Elizabeth, dau. of Charles and Abigail Stockbridge of the Stockbridge mansion-house. He resided in Hanover.

3. JOHN² TURNER, JR. (1. *Humphrey*¹) was born in England, it is believed, a short time before the family's emigration. To distinguish him from his brother of the same name he was called by his father "young son John." Although an active man he was not physically strong, and was freed from military duty or training. He was active in town affairs on various committees with his elder brother, John, Sr.; was one of the local Council of War, and a colonial collector of the excise on "tarr, boards and oysters." He lived northeast of Hick's Swamp, on the Country Way, near the old Clap mansion-house at Greenbush. He married in 1649 Ann James, daughter of widow Anna James of Marshfield, and a sister of Will James, the shipbuilder at "Will James's Dock" at Scituate Harbor.

Children of John Turner, Jr., and Ann James:

- i. Japheth, b. 9 Feb. 1650; m. Hannah Hudson of Duxbury (Pembroke). He d. 1690, aged 40 years.
- ii. Israel, b. 14 Feb. 1654; m. Sarah Stockbridge.
- iii. Miriam, b. 8 Apr. 1658; m. Nathan Pickles 3 Aug. 1687. Their dau., Mersey Pickles, m. Deacon Joseph Cushing 1710/11. (See Cushing, chapter on Thomas.)
- iv. Ann, b. 23 Feb. 1652; m. Joseph Green of Weymouth 1695.
- v. Sarah, b. 25 July 1665; m. Ichabod Holbrook.
- vi. Jacob, b. 10 Mar. 1667; m. Jane Vining.
- vii. David, b. 5 Nov. 1670; d. 3 May 1698, aged 27 years, 6 months.
- viii. Philip, b. 18 Aug. 1673; m., about 1700, Elizabeth Nash, sister of Joseph Nash, who came from Weymouth and settled beside Stony Cove Brook (see Otis chapter). Philip Turner resided east of Hoop Pole Hill in the South Parish, where he owned an extensive tract between Joseph Henchman's on the east and Deacon Stephen Clap's on the northerly side of the main road around Henchman's Corner, west of Norwell Village. Israel Turner, son of Philip and Elizabeth, inherited these lands, whose son, Philip Turner, is sometimes referred to as "King Philip of the broad acres and many wives." The latter m. (1) 1771 Judith Hatch of Pembroke; (2)

1777 Mrs. Merey Turner of Pembroke; (3) 1783 Sarah Vinal. Philip Turner died 22 Jan. 1793, and his widow, Sarah (Vinal), m. 1794 Lazarus Bowker, whose residence was on the site of the house now (1936) owned by Humphrey W. Turner. This house now standing was formerly known as the Nelson Bowker house. Nelson was a grandson of Lazarus. Deane says Widow Sarah (Vinal), wife of Lazarus Bowker, was living in 1830 on the Philip Turner property.

Nathaniel Turner, son of Philip and Elizabeth (Nash), m. 28 July 1748 Mary Bailey, dau. of William and Judith (Booth) Bailey, and built at the time of his marriage the house now (1936) standing at the four corners, where Pine and Green streets meet, north of Studley Hill, Norwell. The house was known for many years as the home of his granddaughter, Miss Luey Turner. Job Turner, son of Nathaniel and Mary (Bailey), m. Abiah, dau. of John Bryant of Farm Neck, whose farm was that given by Timothy Hatherley to the First Church of Scituate. John Bryant Turner, "Squire Bry," son of Job and Abiah, was an influential citizen, prominent in town affairs; Representative to the General Court 1824-25, and again in 1829 and 1831. He was an intimate friend of John Quincy Adams, and between them it is said that a strong affection existed. Pratt relates that Turner refused an election to Congress in 1830 in order that his friend Adams might occupy a seat in the lower branch of the national Legislature.

ix. Ichabod, b. 9 Apr. 1676.

4. THOMAS² TURNER (1. *Humphrey*¹) was probably born in New England about 1630. He succeeded his father at the tannery south of Colman Hills, but lived on Kent Street on the lot laid out in 1633, the fourth lot from the corner of Kent Street and First Parish Road. The house that is now standing on this lot was formerly the parsonage of the Rev. Edmund Quincy Sewall of the First Church, the successor of Rev. Nehemiah Thomas. It was later the residence of Charles Vinal.

THOMAS² TURNER married in Scituate, 6 Jan. 1651/2, SARAH HILAND, who was baptized in Tenterden, County Kent, 9 Mar. 1633/4, daughter of THOMAS HILAND of Tenterden and aunt of Mary, wife of Maj. Amos Turner.

THOMAS HILAND was baptized in Waldron, Sussex, 23 Apr. 1604, and married, about 1628, Deborah ——. He removed first to Tenterden, where Sarah was born, and later came to Scituate. He died in Scituate in 1683. He resided on Kent Street opposite a lane called "Drift Way," and had a farm on the Fourth Cliff. (The old lane called "Drift Way" in early records has later been known as Ridgehill Street or Road, and is not to be confused with the present road around the hills, called the "Drift Way.")

Thomas² Turner died in Scituate Nov. 1688. His wife had died previously.

WILL OF THOMAS² TURNER, SR.

Plymouth Probate Records, Vol. 1, p. 34

1688. In the name of God — Amen. The fourth day of december in the year of our Lord 1688. Thomas Turner Sen^r of Scittuate being weak & sick of body, but of perfect memory & understanding praise be given to God for the same & knowing the uncertainty of this life & being willing to settle things in order, Doe make this my last will & testament in manner and form following, first & principally I comitt my soule to Almighty God creator & redeemer Assuredly believing that I shall receive free pardon & forgiveness for all my sins, and be saved by the precious merits of Jesus Christ my blessed saviour & redeemer & my body to the earth from whence it came to be buried in such decent manner as by my executor hereafter named shall be thought meet & convenient & as for my worldly goods which God in Marcy hath lent unto me, my mind & meaning is they be thus implied & bestowed. It: I give & bequeath to my daughter Grace Turner one feather bed & boulder & two pairs of sheets & one coverled & one blankett & bedstead and five pounds to be paid to her within one (year) after my decease & five pounds to be to her at her marriage or within three years after my decease. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son Nathan Turner being my Eldest son all the rest of my estate both Housing, lands, and chattels named & unnamed excepting the loom & all the tackling belonging to it which my mind is *that my son Thomas Turner shall have towards his portion as it is prized.* Item. I give & bequeath all my children five pounds apiece to be paid within five years after my decease & my mind is that the debts which I owe or that are owing to me be equally payed & received by my son Nathan Turner, who I doe appoint my executor of this my last will & testament in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal the day & year above written,

Witnesses.

THOMAS TURNER.

seal

JOHN WETHEREL

THOMAS YOUNG

NATHANIEL TURNER.

Children of THOMAS² TURNER and SARAH HILAND:

- i. Nathan, b. 1 Mar. 1654; m. Oza Wing.
- ii. Elizabeth, b. July 1656.
- iii. Mary, b. 15 Sept. 1658.
- iv. Eunice, b. 10 Apr. 1661; m. Thomas Buck, Jr., grandson of Lieut. Isaac Buck, blacksmith, who lived on the "Buck Field," so called, to the present day (1936).
- v. Humphrey, b. Sept. 1663; m. Mary Hall.



CUP GIVEN BY L. CABOT BRIGGS OF HARVARD LACROSSE
TEAM, 1927-31, TO THE LACROSSE LEAGUE, 1935

- vi. Grace, b. 1665; m. Benjamin Stetson, grandson of Cornet Robert Stetson. They lived on what is now known as Stetson Road near Church Hill, Norwell. He built the original part of the fine old mansion burned in 1897, known as the old Haskins house. The home of Edward Haskins now stands on its site. Margaret Stetson, dau. of Benjamin Stetson and Grace Turner, was the second wife of 12. James Briggs.
- vii. Ephraim, b. 16 June 1667.
- 7. viii. THOMAS, b. Dec. 1670; m. HANNAH JENKINS.
- ix. JOSIAH, b. Jan. 1672; m. Hannah Holbrook.
- 8. x. CHARLES, b. 3 May 1675; m. Mercy Curtis.

5. JONATHAN³ TURNER (2. *John*², Sr., *Humphrey*¹), the oldest son of John², Sr., and Mary Brewster, was born 20 Sept. 1646. He succeeded to the tannery that his father had built, and built a house on a part of his father's grant upon the southwest section of the 80 acres. He married, first, in 1677, Martha Bisbee, baptized 27 Apr. 1751, a daughter of Elisha Bisbee, the keeper in 1644 of the first ferry where Union bridge now crosses the river, whose house was near the ferry. Jonathan Turner married, second, about 1692, Mercy Hatch (probably daughter of Jeremiah and granddaughter of Elder William), who was born 15 Apr. 1665.

He lived on the southwest 20-acre section of his father's property, which was bequeathed him. (See will of John Turner, Sr.)

Children of Jonathan³ Turner and Martha Bisbee:

- i. Deborah, b. 2 Dec. 1678; m. Jonathan Smith of Providence 10 Aug. 1704.
- ii. Jemima, b. 9 Oct. 1680; m. Edward Foster of Dorchester 21 June 1705, son of Timothy and grandson of Edward, Esq. (See *Edward Foster*.)
- iii. Isaac, b. 27 Feb. 1682; m. 31 Oct. 1711, his cousin, Ruth Turner, dau. of Ezekiel (son of John, Sr.).
- iv. Kesiiah, b. 3 May 1685 (no further record).
- v. Jonathan, b. 13 Mar. 1687; m. (1) 12 Sept. 1721 Lydia Vinton; (2) 15 Nov. 1738 Abigail Stockbridge, dau. of Samuel and Lydia (Turner), his cousin.

Children of Jonathan³ Turner and Mercy Hatch:

- vi. Ruth, b. 16 May 1693/4; m. 8 June 1720 Amos Perry, b. 10 Mar. 1690/1, son of William and Elizabeth (Lobdell). Amos Perry lived near the Cornet's dam on the Third Herring Brook, where Samuel Tolman, Sr., later resided.
- vii. Ignatius, b. 15 Mar. 1697/8; m. 28 Dec. 1724 Elizabeth Wilson.

- viii. Martha, b. 24 Apr. 1700; m. 17 Oct. 1723 Jonathan Lovel (also given Lowel) of Barnstable.
- ix. Jesse, b. 24 Dec. 1704; m. (1) 8 Dec. 1734 Grace Dwelley (dau. of Richard), from whom he was "divorced." (Second Church Records.) Grace Dwelley, "*alias* Turner," m. (2) Aug. 1742 Joseph Church. Jesse Turner m. (2) 29 Mar. 1741 Lydia Neal, dau. of Joseph and sister of Abigail, wife of John Briggs. (See Chapter VIII, 34. John.) Jesse Turner inherited his father's house, and Deane says that he built the house that is now (1936) owned by Schuyler Dillon. It is probable that he enlarged the earlier house as before mentioned. Elisha Turner, son of Jesse and Lydia Neal, succeeded. He m. Lydia Briggs (see 34. John Briggs), who was his cousin, and their only child, Lydia Turner, was the first wife of Samuel Adams Turner. (See Charles Turner line from 4. Thomas.)
- x. Mary, b. 28 July 1706; may have been the Mary Turner who m. David Hatch 25 Apr. 1729, who was (in that event) her cousin.

6. JOSEPH³ TURNER (2. John², Sr., Humphrey¹) was born in Scituate South Parish 12 Jan. 1647/8. He married about 1676 Bathsheba (Hobart) Lane, a daughter of Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham, and widow of John Lane of Hingham. She was a sister of Israel Hobart, the shipbuilder at the Hobart shipyard on North River, later James Briggs'. The late Horace T. Fogg owned a book of sermons published in England, inscribed "Joseph Turner, — his book." (See Edward Foster.) Joseph Turner built his home on the northeast section of 20 acres of his father's farm. (See John Turner, Sr.'s, will.) He died 12 Feb. 1722 (family record) age 75 years (cemetery record 1724). Bathsheba (Hobart) Turner died 6 Apr. 1723 (family record) (cemetery record 1724). After the death of Joseph Turner, Deacon Hatherley Foster purchased the interest of the other heirs, and the house was occupied by his son, Joseph Foster, who married Abigail Steel 11 Jan. 1727. They removed to Topsham, Me., after 1760.

An interesting story is told of this family, as having occurred in 1747. They were then living in Scituate, not far from the blockhouse on the bank of the North River. To reach this place of safety they must go over "London Hill," on the old Turner farm.

The tradition is that "Old Joseph Foster of Topsham had a large dog that he had trained to attack an Indian whenever he met one. During the French and Indian War the women and children were sent to the blockhouse for safety. One afternoon the children wanted to go to the riverside berrying. As no Indians had been seen about for some time, permission was given, but the dog was sent with them. While the chil-

dren laughed and picked the berries, the big dog became excited, and getting between a pile of brush and the children growled and showed his teeth, as if there were mischief lurking there. Mrs. Foster was nearest the pile. Her attention being called by the unwonted fierceness of the dog, she looked and saw an Indian there. She screamed, and all the children ran up the hill to the blockhouse, the dog protecting the rear. Several years after, the same Indian was seen in the vicinity and referred to the incident by saying that if it had not been for the dog he would have "made a great haul of pappoose." (Foster Genealogy (Pierce)).

Although this adventure is said to have happened in Topsham, it is more likely to have occurred in Scituate, where Joseph Foster's seven children were born between 1728/9 and 1750.

Joseph Foster's son, Hatherley Foster (later of Georgetown, Me.) was born in Scituate 21 Apr. 1737. Another son, Steele Foster, was born in Scituate 17 Dec. 1750, which date proves that the family was still in Scituate at the time of the above episode. Steele Foster's daughter married Peter Greene, Esq., High Sheriff of Maine.

Children of Joseph³ Turner and Bathsheba Hobart:

- i. Margaret, b. 20 Sept. 1677; m. 20 Oct. 1697 Joseph Stockbridge, b. 1672 in Stockbridge mansion-house (the Garrison), son of Charles and Abigail Stockbridge. They removed to Hanover, and settled first near Barstow's bridge on the site of the E. Q. Sylvester house. Somewhat later they removed to the Pembroke side of Indian Head River beyond Luddam's Ford, where Haviland Torrey later resided. A dau., Margaret Stockbridge, m. Samuel Barstow of Hanover. Grace Barstow, dau. of Samuel and Margaret (Stockbridge) was the wife of Elisha Foster, Sr., the shipbuilder at the Wanton shipyard, Norwell.
- ii. Bathsheba (Bathshua), b. 30 Dec. 1679; m. 1 Dec. 1698 Deacon Hatherley Foster, grandson of Edward, Esq., and Lettice (Hanford). (See Edward Foster.) The Deacon Hatherley Foster property adjoined that of Joseph Turner upon the east. Elisha Foster, Sr., the shipbuilder, was a grandson of Deacon Hatherley and Bathshua (Turner). His father, Lieutenant Elisha, of the French and Indian War, m. Temperance Freeman of Harwich, a descendant of Governor Thomas Prence, and resided in the old Foster house built by Deacon Hatherley in 1697/8. One of the original windows of this house is preserved in the Kent Memorial house at Norwell Village. Its small diamond panes set in lead have been surprisingly preserved for two hundred and thirty-seven years, after having remained in the attic of the house until the sash was given to Mrs. Lloyd Briggs by the last owner of the house, James Green, who lived across the road; he had acquired the property from Mrs. Ellen Foster James.

Humphrey⁸ Turner (William⁷, Charles⁶, Charles⁵, Charles⁴, Charles³, Thomas², Humphrey¹) wrote of the old Foster house in 1885:

It has the low stories, the immense beams hanging below the ceiling, the great fireplaces, the portholes up under the eaves, where the sturdy old pilgrim watched the treacherous Indians, with rifle in hand, while some member of the family went down across the road to the well for water.

The front of the house has been newly covered with siding, and new-fashioned windows have taken the place of the little diamond shaped panes that were there forty years ago, but the great chimney in the center of the house, the quaint gables, the little old windows in the kitchen, the workshop attached to the end of the house, where the frugal and industrious old Pilgrim spent his many days, and mended the shoes and the harness, hooped the great barrell or the washtub, and kept the family furniture in repair, are all reminders of generations that lie in the old family burying ground near by.

7. THOMAS³ TURNER, ESQ. (2. *Thomas*², *Humphrey*¹) was born in Scituate in Dec. 1670. He began to practice law in 1690, and became a lawyer of note, a contemporary of Judge John Cushing, the first, and of Judge Joseph Otis. He was likewise contemporary with the Quaker preacher, Michael Wanton, and although of different religious beliefs, they became very friendly. In 1711 *Thomas Turner* was a Representative to the Provincial Legislature, and served on various committees. He was a member of the committee for promoting the trade of the Province; to take account with the Treasurer and destroy torn and defaced bills of colonial currency, etc. He was returned as Representative in 1718 and 1719. In Dec. 1720 he made his will, and died in 1721.

WILL OF THOMAS³ TURNER, ESQ.

Plymouth Probate Records, Vol. IV, p. 292

1721. I, THOMAS TURNER of Scituate in y^e County of Plymouth in New England Esq. Being sick & weak of body, but of sound mind & memory, (praised be God for it) do make & ordain this my last will & testament in manner & form following: viz:

First of all I commit my soul to God that gave it, & my body to decent burial at the discretion of my executors hereafter named, and touching my worldly estate, I give devise & dispose thereof in manner & form following.

Imprimis, I do hereby order, appoint and empower my executors hereafter named viz: — my two sons David Turner & Thomas Turner

to make sale of so much of my lands & real estate as may be sufficient for the payment of my just debts: And what shall remain of my estate both real & personal, after my just debts paid as afores^d I give to my beloved wife Hannah Turner the use or improvement thereof during her natural life, for her own support & the bringing up of my children, she remaining my widdow, and after her death or remarriage which shall first happen, my mind & will is that the remainder of my estate both real & personal shall be equally divided, unto & among all my children viz — David Turner, Hannah Barker, Thomas Turner, Ephraim Turner, Relief Ewell, Ruth Turner, Sarah Turner, Jemima Turner, Lettice Turner, Abigail Turner & Mary Turner to them their heirs & assigns forever. To be equally divided betwixt them, as aforesaid, & in case of my wifes remarriage my mind & will is that my s^d wife shall have 30£ paid her out of my estate that then the remainder of my afores^d estate, shall be equally divided unto & among my s^d children their heirs & assigns as aforesaid.

Lastly, I do hereby nominate & appoint my afores^d sons David Turner & Thomas Turner to be joynt executors to this my last will & testament. I the s^d Thomas Turner have hereunto set my hand & seal this nineteenth day of December, Anna Domini one thousand and seven hundred & Twenty. In the seventh year of his majestys reign.

Witnesses,

THOMAS TURNER seal

CALEB LORING

SAMUEL BARKER,

NATHANIEL PITCHER.

David⁴ Turner & Thomas⁴ Turner Exec^{rs} to the will of Thomas³ Turner Esq^r of Seitate deceased — Sell to Thomas Jenkins (grandfather) for 250£ 100 acres of upland & swamp land near a Place called Church's Hill adjoining to the Country Road, being 10 ten acre lots which said Turner³ Esq^r bought of Charles Josselyn. —

They also sell to said Jenkins for 100£ 10 acres of upland at the 2d Cliff. both Deeds dated October 11, 1722 & Recorded B^k 16 F. 123. No conditions in the Deeds.

They also sell (as Exec^{rs}) to said Jenkins for 160£ 4 acres of upland & 20 acres of Salt meadow in 3 Parcels. The upland bounded on the west by Simon Delis's land, northerly by the Common or highway &c. The Salt meadow one Piece of 3 acres bounded Easterly by the Causey, Northerly by Stony Brook &c. (Satuit Brook) The other Piece of 17 acres bounded westerly by the Causey & highway, Easterly & Northerly by the Creeks &c. Deed dated March 7 1723/4 B^k 18 F. 101.

Tho^s Jenkins conveys to (grandson) Tho^s⁴ Turner the 4 acres of upland & 20 acres of Salt meadow above mentioned. — also one third of the Housing & Buildings where his daughter Hannah Turner dwelt with the one third Part of 5 acres of Land thereto adjoining which he purchased of the Heirs of Eliz^a Hewett — Also 10 acres of upland on y^e 2d Cliff. The Condition of the Conveyance being that he sho^d maintain his mother

the s^d Hannah Turner during her natural Life. Deed dated July 20, 1725. B^k 20 F 23.

Tho^s 4 Turner sells to John Doggett for 10£ all his Right in the 5 acres where he dwelt with the Housing & Buildings thereon. Deed dated Nov. 14, 1727. The Deed absolute B^k 22, F 134.

He also conveys to said Doggett (upon Condition that he would maintain his s^d mother Hannah Turner) the whole of what was conveyed to him by his Grandfather Jenkins as above said. Also the Improvement of 12 acres of Salt marsh joyning to the s^d Cliff during his Grandfather's Life. Deed dated Nov^r 18, 1727. Book 22, F 135.

Tho^s Jenkins sells to (son-in-law) Tho^s 3 Turner his Farm Messuage & Tenement in Scituate containing 40 acres bounded northerly to the way that lyeth to the northward of Stony Brook &c. Together with a Piece of meadow or Pasture land lying to the souther^d of the aforesaid 40 acres. — Also 15 acres of Salt Meadow bounded Westerly to the Crossway & Street &c. with all Islands in the Creeks adjacent. Also 8 acres of Upland at the 2d Cliff. Deed dated April 29, 1715 & recorded B^k 11 F 49.

Thomas Colman sells to Tho^s 3 Turner 10 acres of Land in Conihasset that was laid out May 29, 1688 for Gowing White. — Deed dated April 25, 1706 B^k 6 P 35/6.

Charles Church sells to Tho^s 2 Turner *Taylor* & Tho^s 3 Turner *Shipwright* ¼ of an acre (with the Dwelling House on it) w^{ch} he had of the Town of Scituate, and a Piece of Land he bought of John Whistons Heirs. — and 5 acres adjoining lot of Jno^a Briant — and his whole Interest in the Commons. Deed dated March 11. 1707/8 & recorded B^k 6 F. 154/5. John Whiston was in Scituate in 1636, and a Conihasset Partner in 1646. His houselot, granted him in 1636, was “nearly opposite to Meeting House Lane on the west”. He married Susanna Jenkins, a sister of *Edward Jenkins*, and died intestate in 1664. John Whiston, son of John Sr. & Susanna (Jenkins) inherited in 1666, then 18 years of age, property from his elder brother Joseph. His uncle *Edward Jenkins* was his guardian.

THOMAS³ TURNER, Esq., married 9 Feb. 1693 HANNAH JENKINS, daughter of THOMAS and HANNAH (RIPLEY) JENKINS and granddaughter of EDWARD JENKINS and his first wife, LETTICE (HANFORD) FOSTER, a niece of *Timothy Hatherley*, and widow of Edward Foster, Esq. They resided on Kent Street in Scituate.

EDWARD¹ JENKINS was born in County Kent, England, about 1618. He came to New England in 1634 with Nathaniel Tilden of Tenterden in the *Hercules*, of Dover, England, listed among her passengers as one of Tilden's five servants, as were George Sutton, Thomas Lapham, James Bennett and Edward Ford, and William Witherell, Henry Ewell of Sandwich, John Lewis and others, were fellow passengers. Edward Jenkins became a Conihasset Partner in 1646, and was a “freeman” in

1647. Deane says: "He purchased a part of Edward Foster's house lot, 1647, and built his house at the corner of Kent Street near the bridge, where the house of Capt. Lemuel Webb now stands."

Lemuel Webb's house was later the residence of his son, Capt. Seth Webb, and of George H. Webb, the latter's son. After the death of George Webb's widow the property was purchased by Arthur Williams of Boston. He removed the house, which was very near the street, to a location on the southwest part of the lot of land, turning it around to front upon Kent Street, and adding to the older structure very materially. The old house is now the front part of the mansion. The Williams family occupied it as a summer home until the death of Mr. Williams. It then passed into the possession of the De Roehers. It is now (1936) the rectory of the Church of the Nativity.

The house built by Edward Foster on this lot was sold to John Allen in 1679. Edward Jenkins kept an ordinary for many years; his first license was in 1677. He belonged to the liberal party of the Puritans, as evidenced by his will, by which he gave "to the Minister that shall preach my funeral sermon 20s" (Rev. Jeremiah Cushing). The more strict party of the church forbade sermons and even prayers at funerals, because the Church of England "said prayers at funerals," and the Church of Rome "prayed for the dead." (See Neal's "History.") An item of his will read, "It is my will that bread and beer be given at my funeral." He died in 1699.

EDWARD JENKINS married, first, between 1646 and 1650, Widow LETTICE (HANFORD) FOSTER. He married, second, in 1684, Widow Mary Ripley of Hingham.

LETTICE (HANFORD) FOSTER, first wife of EDWARD JENKINS, and the mother of his children, was born in Fremington, Devon, near Barnstaple, England, about 1615, the eldest daughter of JEFFREY HANFORD of Fremington, born about 1585, and died in England before 1635. He married March 1611 *Eglin (Hatherley) Downe*, born in England about 1589, a sister of Timothy Hatherley. *Eglin Hatherley* had married, first, in Fremington, — Downe (a common name at that time in Fremington, Devon), who must have died very soon after their marriage, as his widow *Eglin* was but twenty years of age when she married, second, JEFFREY HANFORD. After the death of her second husband, before 1635, she came to Scituate to join her brother, Timothy Hatherley, and her eldest daughter Lettice, who had come on an earlier date, and had been married to Edward Foster two days before her mother sailed from England. Mrs. *Eglin (Hatherley) Hanford*, aged 46, sailed on 10 Apr. 1635 in the ship *Planter*, arriving in Boston 7 June with her two youngest daughters, Margaret Hanford, aged 16, and *Elizabeth Hanford*, aged 14. Also in this ship came Rodolphus Elms, Sarah Pitney and family, and THOMAS SAVAGE. (See John Briggs, Jr.)

A deed dated 26 Sept. 1634, before *Eglin Hanford* left England, was recorded 10 Mar. 1640. By it Timothy Hatherley gave to *Eglin Hanford* 5 acres of land, more or less, on north side of Stony (Satuit)

Brook, third lot from the brook, bounded on east by common path (now Front Street) running from brook to harbor's mouth; on the south, with lands of Richard Sealis; on the west by common drift path or lane running north and south; on north, by land of Gowin White.

Widow *Eglin (Hatherley) Hanford* married, third, in Seitate, Deacon Richard Sealis, a widower with daughters, whose house lot in 1636 was north of THOMAS ENSIGN'S. He was a Deacon of the First Church, and a Conihassett Partner in 1646. Mrs. Eglin (Hatherley) Sealis died in 1666.

Timothy Hatherley made several voyages to New England. He arrived at Plymouth, New England, on the ship *Anne*, 10 July 1623, "a feltmaker from St. Olaves, Southwark, Surrey"; also Mrs. Warren, wife of Richard, Anthony Annable, Mrs. Barbara Standish, wife of Myles, and others. Returning to England he arrived in Boston July 1630 on the ship *Friendship*, the only known passenger. Again returning to England he arrived at Boston 10 Apr. 1632 in the ship *Charles* from Barnstaple, England. He was the only passenger of the twenty she carried whose name was preserved. He is put down as of Barnstaple, County Devon, "for Plymouth N E". Once more returning to England he arrived at Plymouth, New England, in 1633, in the ship *William*, and again his was the only passenger's name preserved. There is a record at St. Olaves, Southwark, Surrey, of the marriage of Timothy Hatherley 26 Dec. 1614 to Alice Pollard. He apparently had no children. The Fremington Registers, Devon, contain the baptism of Marie, daughter of Henrie Hatherleighe, 30 Sept. 1607; marriage of Christopher Hatherleigh and Helen Ward, widow, 4 Sept. 1625; burial of Henrie Hatherleigh's daughter Marie 22 Oct. 1607; and burial of Henrie Hatherlie 27 Sept. 1618.

1637. Last will of Elinor Mortimer, otherwise Tanner of Fremington England, widow. She desires to be buried in the parish churchyard, just by the chancel door, near the sepulchre of her husband William Mortimer, *alias* Tanner, and leaves 10s to poor of parish. Mentions sons Matthew and Henry Mortimer, *alias* Tanner, and daughter Elinor Friend; also son *Timothy Hatherley* and *Eglin Hanver*.

Notes from Fremington Registers refer to these families:

Elinor Mortimer, baptized 12 July 1607, married 22 Oct. 1627 William Friend Alexander, son of William Tanner (or Mortimer) and Eleanor, baptized 27 Feb. 1604, buried 29 Jan. 1624. William Tanner (Mortimer) buried 27 July 1615.

Children of *Eglin Hatherley* and *Jeffrey Hanford*:

- i. Thomas Hanford, b. Fremington about 1612; was on the list of those able to bear arms in Seitate in 1643. He was later the minister at Norwalk Conn. In 1673 he relinquished his claim to the estate of his uncle, Timothy Hatherley (a claim that had been pending since 1666), for a consideration of £20 to Nathaniel and John Tilden. The release declared him to be "the alone son of Eglin Sealis deceased, who was the natural sister of my unkle Mr. Timothy Hatherly deceased."



TIM FOSTER HOUSE, SCITUATE, USED AS A GARRISON OR BLOCKHOUSE DURING KING PHILIP'S WAR, 1676. A LEADED WINDOW FROM THIS HOUSE IS IN THE KENT MEMORIAL. THE WALLS WERE FILLED WITH BRICK



LLOYD BRIGGS AND HIS SON
LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, 1869



L. VERNON BRIGGS, 1876

- ii. *Lettice Hanford*, b. Fremington about 1615; m. (1) Edward Foster; (2) *Edward Jenkins*. She married Edward Foster, Esq., on 8 April 1635 at the house of Capt. James Cudworth (later Thomas Ensign's). There being at the time no magistrate in Scituate, Capt. Myles Standish journeyed from Plymouth to perform the ceremony.
- iii. *Margaret Hanford*, b. Fremington 1619; m. Isaac Robinson, son of John Robinson, the Leyden pastor. Isaae Robinson was a freeman in Scituate in 1636. He had a house lot on the southeast of Colman's Hills, near the Herring Brook, opposite to "Schewsan's Neck," which lay to the northeast of Belle House Neck. He removed to Barnstable with Mr. Lothrop in 1639, and sold his house and lot to *John Twisden*.
- iv. *Elizabeth Hanford*, b. Fremington 1621; m. about 1642 *Nicholas Wade*. (See chapter on OTIS.)

Edward¹ Foster, Esq., was born in Frittenden, County Kent, England, 24 Jan. 1590, a son of Timothy Foster of Frittenden. He had practised law in England before emigrating to New England, which he did before 1628, with the first of the "Men of Kent," who explored the lands around Satuit that year, if not a little earlier. (See Humphrey Turner.) Edward Foster was assigned lands on the Second Cliff in 1633, also the first house lot on Kent Street south of Satuit Brook, upon which lot he built his house. He was the first lawyer in the settlement. In 1636 when the "greate lottes" on North River were granted to the first comers, Edward Foster received a lot of eighty acres, between that of Anthony Annabel on the east, and Humphrey Turner on the west. It was upon this North River lot that Edward's grandson, Deacon Hatherley Foster, built a house in 1697, which stood upon the site until demolished in 1898. Deacon Hatherley Foster was born in Dorchester in 1671, the only son of Timothy and his first wife, Ruth (Tileston).

Edward Foster was constantly employed in public affairs. With Anthony Annable he was Deputy to the first Colony Court in 1639. He died in 1644. His will dated that year gave —

To wife Lettice all my cattle and movable goods, (except my books, which are to be my son Timothy's), also the use of my house and three parcels of land, viz: at the North River — at the 2d Cliff — and at Satuit Brook, until Timothy come of age. To son Timothy one third of all my property at 21 years of age. To an infant yet unborn another third part, whether male or female, at 21 years of age. Timothy Hatherly, father Richard Sealis, Edmund Edenden, and brother Isaae Robinson to hold the same in trust.

Children of Lettice Hanford and Edward Foster:

- i. Timothy Foster, bpt. 7 Mar. 1636; bur. Dec. 5, 1637.
- ii. Timothy Foster, b. 1640; on reaching his majority, removed to Dorchester, where he m. (1) 13 Oct. 1663, Widow Ruth (Tileston) Dunton, dau. of Thomas Tileston. She d. 5 Dec. 1677. Timothy m. (2) in Dorchester 9 Mar. 1680 Widow Relief (Holland) Dowse, dau. of John Holland. By his two wives he had a family of ten children. The births of these ten children are recorded on a flyleaf in a book of sermons published in England in 1609. Inscribed "Hatherly Foster, his book — 1730." It had been formerly owned by his father-in-

law, Joseph Turner, and was so inscribed. It is now owned by the family of the late Horace T. Fogg, a descendant. It was given him by his uncle, Hambleton E. Smith of Duxbury, a great-great-grandson of Deacon Hatherley's son, Deacon Elisha Foster.

- iii. Elizabeth Foster, b. 1645 (after death of father); m. 9 Nov. 1665 Ephraim Huit (Hewitt) of Hull.

Children of LETTICE HANFORD and EDWARD JENKINS:

- i. Mary Jenkins, b. —; m. 1670 Marmaduke Atkinson, and in 1674, "being deserted, was divorced." (Colony Records.) She m. about 1690, Robert Cocke (Cook), who settled in Scituate east of the Great Swamp, near Mungo's Corner. Robert Cook of Scituate m. 1703, Agnes Kent of Boston. This may have been a second marriage of Robert, above mentioned.
- ii. THOMAS JENKINS m. 1678 *Martha* — (probably Ripple or Ripley). Their dau. *Hannah Jenkins*, b. 1679, m. 1694 THOMAS TURNER. Thomas Jenkins settled on a lot of land on Brook Street, Scituate, that was his father's.
- iii. Sarah Jenkins, m. — Bacon, perhaps of Taunton (Deane).

Children of THOMAS³ TURNER, ESQ., and HANNAH JENKINS:

- i. David, b. 27 Oct. 1693; m. — Howard. Settled as minister of a church in the southeast part of the town of Rehoboth, Mass., called the "neighborhood of Palmer's river," organized in 1721.
- ii. Ephraim, b. 1694; probably d. young.
- iii. Silas, b. —.
- iv. HANNAH, b. 15 June 1697; m. BARNABAS BARKER. (See Barker.)
- v. Thomas, b. 3 Mar. 1699; m. Mary Bryant 1732. Removed to Pembroke, and about 1760 to Southampton, Va., and afterward to North Carolina. The youngest son of Thomas and Mary (Bryant) Turner was Governor James Turner of North Carolina, and for several years United States Senator from that State.
- vi. Relief, b. 8 June 1701; m. Gershom Ewell of Scituate. (See chapter on Joseph Briggs.)
- vii. Ruth, b. 26 Mar. 1703; m. Silas Titus of Attleboro.
- viii. Sarah, b. 19 Jan. 1704/5; m. David Burr of Rehoboth.
- ix. Jemima, b. 7 Jan. 1706/7; m. Capt. John Doggett of Marshfield, ferry man at Doggett's Ferry (Little's bridge) 1730.
- x. Ephraim, b. 17 Mar. 1708/9; m. (1) — Hodges; m. (2) Dorothy Foy.
- xi. Lettiee, b. 17 Apr. 1711; m. Thomas Tilden of Marshfield; 6 children, b. in Marshfield, bpt. in Quaker Church. Removed to Norwich, Conn.; had 4 children b. in Norwich. ("Transcript.")
- xii. Abigail, b. 15 Aug. 1714.
- xiii. Mary, b. 2 July 1717; m. Capt. Joseph Tolman of Scituate.

8. CHARLES³ TURNER (2. *Thomas*², *Humphrey*¹) was born on Kent Street, Scituate, 3 May 1675. He married in 1700 Mercy Curtis, born 1678/9, daughter of John and Miriam

(Brooks) Curtis, and a sister of Hannah Curtis who married Joseph Nash. (See Otis.) Her mother, Miriam Brooks, was daughter of William Brooks, who had married in 1644 Widow Susanna (Hatherley?) Dunham, a niece of Timothy Hatherley and of Mrs. Eglin (Hatherley) Hanford. Charles³ and Mercy (Curtis) Turner settled on Winter Street (Norwell) opposite the end of Parker Lane. The large house built by them in 1700 was the residence of five generations of their descendants, and was burned in 1847. (A house now (1936) the residence of John Burns was built by William⁷ Turner over the old cellar.)

Charles³ and Mercy (Curtis) Turner were the ancestors of a distinguished branch of the Turner family.

Charles³ Turner married, second, 26 June 1716 Joana Tilden of Marshfield.

Children of Charles Turner and Mercy Curtis:

- i. Ephraim, b. 26 Nov. 1701; d. Oct. 1702.
- ii. Mercy, b. 24 Sept. 1703; m. 11 Sept. 1722 Benjamin Turner, Jr.
- iii. Charles, b. 30 Sept. 1705; m. Eunice James.
- iv. Miriam, b. 31 Oct. 1707; d. 7 Nov. 1707.
- v. Ephraim, b. 15 Aug. 1709; d. 20 Aug. 1709.
- vi. Thomas, b. 9 Mar. 1710/11; m. Mary Bryant 14 Feb. 1732.
- vii. Miriam, b. 3 Feb. 1713/14; m. Elisha Tolman 3 Dec. 1740.

Child of Charles Turner and Joana Tilden:

- viii. Joseph, b. 28 Oct. 1718.

9. CHARLES⁴ TURNER (8. *Charles*³, *Thomas*², *Humphrey*¹) was born in Scituate (South Parish) 30 Sept. 1705. He married 5 May 1729 Eunice James, born 5 Feb. 1706/7, daughter of Deacon John and Eunice (Stetson) James. (See John Turner, Sr.) They lived in half of the Charles Turner house on Winter Street at the head of Parker Lane. Charles Turner died 3 Oct. 1782, "aged 77 years, wanting 5 d." His widow, Eunice Turner, died 16 Aug. 1798 in her 92d year.

Children of Charles Turner and Eunice James:

- i. Eunice, bpt. 3 May 1730; d. 22 Oct. 1737.
10. ii. Charles, bpt. 5 Aug. 1733; m. Mary Rand.
- iii. George, b. Apr., bpt. 26 May 1738; d. 27 May 1738, aged 1 month.
- iv. Edward, bpt. 3 Sept. 1739; d. in infancy.
- v. Mary, b. —; d. in infancy.
- vi. Sarah, b. —; d. in infancy.
11. vii. William, bpt. 25 Nov. 1746/7; m. (1) Betty Oakman; (2) Eunice Clap.

10. REV. CHARLES⁵ TURNER (9. *Charles*⁴, *Charles*³, *Thomas*², *Humphrey*¹) was born in the family home in Scituate (South Parish), and baptized in the Second Church 5 Aug. 1733 by the Rev. Nathaniel Eells. He prepared for Harvard College under Rev. Mr. Eells, and graduated in 1752. On 23 July 1755 he was ordained pastor of the Duxbury Church at a salary of £73 6s 8d. Winsor's "History of Duxbury" says of his ministry:

The ministry of Mr. Turner was particularly happy. . . . Nothing happened to sever the ties of friendship and break the bonds of happiness between the pastor and his flock. Possessed of eloquence and judgment, and with fine powers of communicating his thoughts to others, he was met on the Sabbath day by a concourse of his people, who listened attentively to his teachings. And finally, when the limit he had assigned to his ministry in the town had expired, it became necessary, also on account of continued ill health and bodily infirmities, for him to ask a dismissal.

His dismissal was reluctantly granted 10 Apr. 1775, after a pastorate of twenty years, when he returned to his father's house in Scituate, and, being one of the most popular men in the district at the time, became very active politically. He had been a State Senator for several years. He was a member of the Convention that formed the Massachusetts State Constitution in 1779, and of that which adopted the Federal Constitution in 1788. Winsor says that at first he was decidedly opposed to the Federal Constitution, thinking it not liberal enough. He had previously expressed himself in Duxbury as determined to resist it step by step, but being convinced of his error by Theophilus Parsons and others, openly declared in the assembly that he should vote in its favor, greatly to the surprise of those who were opposed, causing one of that number, Dr. Matthew Spring of Watertown, to rise and exclaim, "Help, Lord, for the godly man ceaseth." In 1790 Rev. Charles Turner was appointed chaplain of the Castle in Boston Harbor. In 1786, when a State Senator, he had actively interested himself in establishing titles to the lands at the plantation known as "Silvester Canada" in the State of Maine, which lands had been granted in 1765 to the heirs of Capt. Joseph Silvester, and members of his company, who lost their lives in the Canadian expedition of 1690. In 1791 the plantation was incorporated as a township, bearing the name of "Turner," in acknowledgment of Rev. Charles Turner's services in establishing the titles. He removed there with his family

the year of its incorporation, and in 1803 was one of the electors of President and Vice-President, and came to Boston in discharge of that duty. He died in Turner, Me., 10 Aug. 1813, at the age of 81 years.

Rev. Charles Turner married in 1756 Mary Rand, born 16 Aug. 1731, daughter of Rev. William and Bridget (Cook) Rand of Kingston, Mass. The Reverend Mr. Rand was settled over the Kingston church for more than half a century. Mary (Rand) Turner died in Turner, Me., 15 Dec. 1815, aged 84 years.

Children of Rev. Charles Turner and Mary Rand:

- i. Eunice, b. 9 June 1758 in Duxbury; m. 28 Nov. 1782 James Torrey, b. 15 Jan. 1755, son of Caleb and Mary (Clap) Torrey. Their son, Charles Torrey, b. 1791, m. Hannah Tolman Turner, 1813. (See Charles Turner.)
12. ii. Charles, b. 20 June 1760 in Duxbury; m. Hannah Jacob.
- iii. William, b. 8 Apr. 1762 in Duxbury.
- iv. John, b. 7 July 1763 in Duxbury; m. (int.) 2 Mar. 1799 Deborah Cushing, b. 9 Dec. 1774, dau. of Francis and Temperance (Foster) Cushing of Scituate. They lived in Turner, Me.
- v. Mary, b. 5 June 1764 in Duxbury; d. 26 June 1769.
- vi. Persis, b. 19 Apr. 1768 in Duxbury; d. 5 July 1769.
- vii. Mary, b. 27 Nov. 1770 in Duxbury.
- viii. Persis, b. — in Duxbury; m. Abner Thayer.

11. COL. WILLIAM⁵ TURNER (9. Charles⁴, Charles³, Thomas², Humphrey¹) was born in the family mansion at the head of Parker Lane and Winter Street, and was baptized in Scituate Second Church 25 Nov. 1746/7 by the Rev. Nathaniel Eells. He graduated from Harvard College in 1767, and became a teacher of Latin. He taught for many years in Scituate.

William Turner was a gallant officer in the Revolution. At the beginning of hostilities he raised a company of volunteers in Scituate, and they marched to Boston. His company occupied the batteries at Dorchester Heights, where his ability soon afterward was rewarded by his appointment as aide to General Washington, with rank of Major. He served in many campaigns of the revolution, and served as aide to Generals Lee, Greene, Lincoln and Knox. At the close of the war he returned to Scituate with rank of Colonel. He represented the town of Scituate as delegate to the Convention at Cambridge to prepare a State Constitution in 1779 with Israel Vinal and Judge William Cushing, who was its Vice-President. Col. William Turner was Representative to the General Court from Scituate in 1779, and again in 1786.

He lived on Central Street (Norwell) in the house that was later Joseph Litchfield's, and now (1936) the summer residence of Joseph's granddaughter, Miss Mary L. Knight. Col. William Turner removed to Turner, Me., in 1801, where he died in 1807, aged 62 years. He married, first, 27 Apr. 1769, in Marshfield, Elizabeth (Betty) Oakman, born 9 Feb. 1748, daughter of Samuel and Deborah (Turner) Oakman. (See John Turner, Sr.) She died 28 Aug. 1771. He married, second, 18 Nov. 1773, Eunice Clap, baptized 15 Apr. 1753, daughter of Nathaniel, Esq., and Desire (Bourn) Clap.

Children of Col. William Turner and Betty Oakman:

- i. William, b. 22 Sept. 1769; m. Elizabeth Smith.
- ii. Betty, b. 14 Aug. 1771; m. 13 Jan. 1794 Jotham Tilden of Marshfield, who with his brother, Luther Tilden, father of Rev. William Phillips Tilden, built vessels at the Block-house Shipyard. They were sons of Deacon Samuel Tilden and Mercy Hatch, who lived near, if not upon, the site of the first house built on the Two Mile tract by the sons of Deacon Joseph Tilden. (See Tilden.) Dr. Calvin Tilden was a brother of Jotham and Luther, and son of Deacon Samuel. Jotham Tilden lived upon the site of the residence (1936) of Mrs. Edith Clapp Lincoln, and the front part of the present house is a replica of the house built by Jotham, and many of the original timbers are incorporated in it.

Children of Col. William Turner and Eunice Clap:

- iii. Zoa (Xoa), b. 12 Feb. 1775 (no further reference).
- iv. Charles Lee, b. 14 Apr. 1777; m. Casearilla Child.
- v. Eunice, b. 6 Feb. 1782; m. Martin Burr.
- vi. Frances, b. 20 May 1784; m. William Lee.
- vii. Oriens, b. 28 Aug. 1786; m. Benjamin Humphrey of Boston.
- viii. Naney, b. 8 May 1789; m. Henry Briggs Sampson, son of Job and Betsy (Winsor) Sampson of Duxbury.
- ix. Aphia, b. 9 Oct. 1791 (no further reference).
- x. George, b. 28 Nov. 1793 (no further reference).

12. HON. CHARLES⁶ TURNER, JR. (10. *Charles*⁵, *Charles*⁴, *Charles*³, *Thomas*², *Humphrey*¹), born in Duxbury 20 June 1760, was educated at home by his father, and his early manhood was spent in Seitate, where his father had removed in 1775, in the opening years of the Revolution. Charles, Jr., followed in his father's footsteps politically, after the latter had removed to Turner, Me., in 1791. He was Representative to the General Court 1803-05-06-07-08, 1816-17 and 1823; was a member of the Convention in 1820, for revising the State Constitution. He

was a Justice of the Peace, and for five years was a member of the United States Congress. When the United States Marine Hospital at Chelsea was instituted, Hon. Charles Turner, late member of Congress, was its first steward, serving in that capacity until his death at Scituate in 1839, aged 79. It has been said that "his urbanity, readiness, accuracy and facility in doing business, made him a favorite of all classes."

When but 16 years of age he served in the Revolutionary army. "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. XVI, p. 157, gives his service as follows:

Charles Turner, Scituate, Private, Capt. Joseph Stetson's Co., Col. Dyke's regt; pay abstract for rations to and from camp and travel allowance home, dated Boston, Nov. — 1776, and endorsed "Regiment at Dorchester Heights"; 60 miles travel allowed said Turner; *also*, same co. & regt pay abstract for gun and blanket money, dated Boston, Feb. 24, 1777; *also*, same co. & regt; muster roll for Dec. 1776; regiment raised to serve until March 1, 1777.

Hon. Charles⁶ Turner married 21 Sept. 1789 Hannah Jacob, born in Scituate 4 Apr. 1763, daughter of Col. John and Hannah (Tolman) Jacob. Col. John Jacob was a soldier in the Revolution.

Hannah survived her husband for four years, and died in Scituate in Oct. 1843, aged 80 years.

Children of Col. Charles Turner and Hannah Jacob:

- i. Charles Henry, b. 21 Nov. 1790, was the fifth Charles bpt. "Quintus Carolus" Turner. When he became of age his name was legally changed to that of Charles Henry Turner. He m. 14 Nov. 1814 Deborah Turner, dau. of Israel and Merey (Oakman) Turner. Charles Henry Turner was a mariner, and d. 26 Aug. 1821 on the island of Cuba. His widow m. (2) 20 May 1829 Timothy Foster, son of John and Sarah (Jacob) Foster, who lived in the old Deacon Hatherley Foster house. (See Foster.)
- ii. Samuel Adams, b. 22 Mar. 1792; represented Scituate in both branches of the Legislature. He was State Senator in 1831. He m. (1) 16 Oct. 1814 Lydia Turner, b. 11 Sept. 1793, dau. of Elisha and Lydia (Briggs) Turner. (See Jonathan Turner, also 34. John⁴ Briggs.) Samuel Adams Turner m. (2), late in life, Phoebe Humphrey of Chelsea, who survived him. He d. 7 June 1890, aged 98 years, 2 months.
- iii. Hannah Tolman, b. 28 Jan. 1794; m. 21 Mar. 1813 her cousin, Charles Turner Torrey. (See 10. *Rev. Charles Turner*.) She d. 29 Mar. 1817, aged 23 years. Charles Turner Torrey d. 15 Oct. 1815. Their son, Rev. Charles Turner Torrey, called the "Abolition Martyr," was b. 21 Nov. 1813. Both father and mother dying

when he was very young, he was brought up in the families of his grandparents, James Torrey and Col. Charles Turner. He became very active in the Abolition cause, was imprisoned for his activities in Maryland, and d. in the State Prison at Baltimore in 1846. While in prison he wrote "Home, or the Pilgrim Faith Revived," copies of which have been preserved by local families. It contains much interesting information and an account of his early life in Scituate. His wife was Mary Ide of Medway, Mass.

- iv. Theodore, b. 13 Sept. 1795; m. 1 Dec. 1825 Hannah Main of Marblehead, Mass., b. 1802. Lived in father's house on Winter Street.
- v. Mary Rand, b. 22 Dec. 1796; m. 20 May 1817 Galen C. James of Medford, son of John and Patience (Clap) James. She d. in Medford 13 Dec. 1831.
- vi. Francis, b. 6 Oct. 1799; m. 21 Dec. 1828 Temperance Foster, dau. of Timothy and Hannah (Clap) Foster. Lived in Charlestown, where he d. 6 Dec. 1851.
- vii. William, b. 16 Mar. 1805; m. (1) Sarah Tilden 14 Apr. 1829, dau. of Luther and Philenda (Brooks) Tilden, and sister of Rev. William Phillips Tilden of the South Congregational Church of Boston for many years. She d. 4 Jan. 1844. William m. (2) 20 Dec. 1846 Sophronia Ford, dau. of Charles Ford. Lived in half of father's house until it was burned, 1847 or 1848, and then built a smaller house (now (1936) standing) on same site.

CHAPTER X
DESCENDANTS OF WALTER BRIGGS
GENERATION V
THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS

JAMES⁴, JAMES³, CORNELIUS², WALTER¹

ICHABOD, ENOS, SETH, ELISHA, DANIEL — ALL SHIPBUILDERS

41. JOHN⁵ BRIGGS, JR. (20. *John*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 17 Nov. 1744. He was a yeoman, and lived in the North Parish. He is doubtless the John Briggs who died in Scituate in 1800. John⁵ Briggs, Jr., and his brother Ichabod⁵ of Cohasset were administrators of the estate of their father, John⁴ Briggs of Scituate, in 1791.

John Briggs of Scituate yeoman & Seth Briggs of Cohasset wheelwright own together a piece of upland & Salt Marsh situated on Briggs Farm on the Neck. They make an equal division between themselves. April 14, 1787. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 70, p. 19.)

5 June 1792. John Briggs Jr. of Scituate yeoman, in consideration of £55, 9s, 5d paid by Consider Merritt of Scituate yeoman, deeds parcel of land in same near house of grantee, touching the land of Mr. Joseph Otis. Also signed by Judith Briggs, wife of John Briggs. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 86, p. 86.)

Joseph Otis lived in the "Two Stacks" on Mann Lot Road. William Otis Merritt, who married a granddaughter of Consider Merritt, Sr., lived at junction of Mann Lot Road, Grove and High streets, a short distance south of the Two Stacks (possibly land above mentioned).

John⁵ Briggs, Jr., married 5 Mar. 1780 Judith Collier, born 4 May 1754, in the Walter Briggs house at Farm

Neck, a daughter of William and Judith⁴ (Briggs) Collier. (See 30. Judith⁴ Briggs.)

Children of John⁵ Briggs, Jr., and Judith Collier:

- i. SUSANNA, b. 20 Feb. 1781; m. 1802 Charles Cudworth, son of John, Jr., and Elizabeth (Clap) Cudworth.
- ii. JANE (Jenne), b. 18 Jan. 1783; bpt. 1786 in First Church.
74. iii. JOANNA (Joa), b. 29 Oct. 1784; m. Abiel Cudworth, brother of Charles (above).
- iv. JUDITH, b. 16 July 1788; m. 1832 Joseph Gannett (2d wife).
75. v. SOPHIA, b. 24 Apr. 1791; m. Nathaniel Peirce.
- vi. JOHN, b. 1793 (C. B. Mss.); m. 1835 Lucy Studley; d. 1839.
- vii. POLLY, b. 24 Sept. 1795; d. 1815.
- viii. LUCY, b. 4 June 1799; d. 1799.

42. ICHABOD⁵ BRIGGS (20. John⁴, Joseph³, James², Walter¹) was baptized 30 Sept. 1753 in First Church, Scituate, and died 1 July 1831 in Cohasset. He was a shipwright, and lived on South Main Street, Cohasset.

Ichabod Briggs of Cohasset shipwright, in consideration of £82 paid by Job Turner of Scituate yeoman, deeds land on Farm Neck in Scituate, near land of Job Bailey. Also signed by Sarah Briggs wife of Ichabod Briggs. April 18, 1792. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 73, p. 188.)

Ichabod⁵ Briggs married, first, 30 Nov. 1783 Sarah Collier, baptized 29 Oct. 1752, daughter of William and Judith (Briggs) Collier, and sister of Judith, wife of Ichabod's brother, 41. John Briggs. Sarah (Collier) Briggs died 26 Jan. 1810, and Ichabod married, second, 18 Oct. 1811 Elizabeth Mott, born in Scituate 11 Oct. 1747, daughter of John Mott of Scituate and Lydia Snow of Eastham. Her grandfather, Ebenezer Mott, settled at Hatchet Rock in 1700. Deane says he probably came from Braintree. He married Grace³ Vinal, daughter of John², son of Widow Anna¹ Vinal, who came to Scituate with three children in 1636, and was one of the Conihassett Partners. Elizabeth (Mott) Briggs died in Cohasset 14 Apr. 1841.

Children of Ichabod⁵ Briggs and Sarah Collier:

- i. RUTH, bpt. 8 July 1787 in Cohasset.
- ii. HANNAH, bpt. 5 Apr. 1789 in Cohasset; d. 26 Nov. 1807.
- iii. ZILPHIA, bpt. 7 Aug. 1791 in Cohasset.
- iv. CYNTHIA, bpt. 1792 in Cohasset; d. 8 Feb. 1808.
- 76. v. ABNER, b. 14 Nov. 1795; m. Betsey —.

43. JUDITH⁵ BRIGGS (20. *John*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was baptized in First Church of Scituate 30 Oct. 1763 by Rev. Ebenezer Grosvenor. She married 3 Sept. 1789 Ebenezer⁵ Woodworth Ellms, born 7 Mar. 1770, son of Robert⁴ Ellms, Jr. (Robert³, Jonathan², Rodolphus¹) and his wife, who was probably Sarah Woodworth. (See Ellms chapter.)

Children of Judith⁵ Briggs and Ebenezer Ellms:

- i. JUDITH ELLMS, b. 11 Nov. 1789.
- ii. SALLEY ELLMS, b. 17 July 1791.
- iii. EBENEZER W(OODWORTH) ELLMS, b. 4 Sept. 1793; drowned 1813, ae. 19.
- iv. HANNAH ELLMS, b. 27 Nov. 1794; m. Gershom Wheelwright of Cohasset.
- v. JOHN BRIGGS ELLMS, b. 22 May 1796.
- vi. MARGET, b. 15 Dec. 1799; d. 1803.
- vii. CUSHING OTIS ELLMS, b. 14 Feb. 1801; m. (1) Susan Litchfield; (2) Sarah Pratt. Nancy Ellms, dau. of Cushing Otis Ellms, was the first wife of Melvin Shaw Litchfield (son of Enoch), who with his brother, Zenas Holbrook Litchfield, had a shoe factory and store on the northeast corner of Summer and Cedar streets, Scituate, where for many years during and after the Civil War they carried on a successful business. By thrift and careful investments they accumulated a large fortune.
- viii. ARCHABEL (Archibald?) ELLMS, b. 9 Jan. 1806.
- ix. ANSON ELLMS, b. 17 Nov. 1809.

44. SETH⁵ BRIGGS (21. *Joseph*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Cohasset, and baptized 20 June 1756. He was a yeoman and a shipwright. Seth Briggs was a soldier in the Revolutionary War, in the campaign against

Burgoyne in 1777. ("History of Cohasset.") "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," gives his service as follows:

Seth Briggs, Hingham. Capt. Isaiah Cushing's Co., Col. Benjamin Lincoln's regt. which assembled on the Alarm of April 19, 1775; service 3 days; also, Capt. Charles Cushing's Co., Col. Charles Greaton's regt.; order for bounty coat or its equivalent in money, dated Camp at Cambridge, Dec. 18, 1775; also, Capt. Peter Cushing's (3d Hingham) Co., Col. Solomon Lovell's regt.; company assembled at Dorchester March 4, 1776; service 4 days; also, same Co. and Reg't; company assembled at Hingham to guard the shore March 15, 1776; service 4 days.

Seth Briggs, Sergeant, Capt. Thomas Nash's Co., Col. David Cushing's regt.; engaged Dec. 20, 1777; service to Feb. 26, 1778, 2 mos. 6 days, with Major Edward Proctor's detachment at Fort Hill, Boston. (Vol. II, p. 521.)

Seth Briggs appears with rank of private on a Muster Roll of Capt. Loring's Co., Col. Greaton's Reg't, dated Aug. 1, 1775; time of enlistment April 27, 1775; time of service, 3 mos., 12 days. Belonged to Hingham. (Mass. Archives. "Eight Months Service," Vol. 14, p. 61.)

Seth Briggs appears with rank of Private on Company Return of Capt. Cushing's Co., Col. Heath's Reg't. Dated In Camp Fort No. 2, Oct. 5, 1775; res. Hingham. (Mass. Archives, Vol. 56, p. 247.)

Seth Briggs of Cohasset shipwright, in consideration of £138 paid by Job Turner of Scituate yeoman, deeds upland and salt marsh in same on Farm Neck so called. Partly bounded by land of Widow Juda Briggs, also a piece known as the old orchard. Jan. 11, 1793. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 73, p. 162.) [Was the "old orchard" above named that of Timothy Hatherley on the border of Mushquashcut Pond, where the ancient pear tree stood? (See "Old Scituate," p. 88).]

Seth Briggs of Cohasset yeoman, in consideration of \$50 paid by Peter Lothrop of same, gentleman, deeds salt meadow in Scituate near Bailey's Wood Island. Signed also by Deborah Briggs wife of Seth Briggs. April 18, 1799. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 85, p. 156.)

Seth Briggs married 31 Jan. 1779 Deborah Lothrop, born 14 Nov. 1761 in Cohasset, daughter of Col. Thomas and Ruth (Nichols) Lothrop. Her father, Col. Thomas Lothrop, was a Revolutionary soldier. Seth and Deborah

(Lothrop) Briggs lived in the west half of his father's (21. Joseph) house on Ship Cove Lane (Elm Street) Cohasset. Seth Briggs died in Cohasset 6 Apr. 1822. His widow, Deborah (Lothrop) Briggs, died 29 Apr. 1848 in Cohasset.

Children of Seth Briggs and Deborah Lothrop:

- i. THOMAS, bpt. 6 Aug. 1780; d. unm. 16 Oct. 1839.
- ii. RACHEL, bpt. 28 Apr. 1782; m. Adna Bates, b. 18 Feb. 1781, son of Adna and Ruth (Beal) Bates; d. in Boston 10 June 1857, aged 75 years.
- iii. WARREN, b. 1784; d. 4 May 1796.
- iv. BETSEY STODDER, bpt. 23 Mar. 1793; m. George Wade.

45. JOSEPH⁵ BRIGGS (21. *Joseph*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), yeoman, was born in Cohasset 1758, and lived in the east side of his father's house on Ship Cove Lane. He died in Cohasset 3 Sept. 1812.

Joseph Briggs of Scituate, as private in Capt. William Turner's 3d Company, Col. Anthony Thomas' Regiment, marched on the Lexington alarm of 19 Apr. 1775 from Scituate. The following year he marched on the alarm from Scituate to Hingham, after the taking of Dorchester Heights.

Joseph Briggs, Cohasset. Private, Capt. John Lincoln's co., Col. Joseph Webb's regt.; marched to camp Aug. 21, 1781; discharged Nov. 29, 1781; service, 3 mos., 23 days; enlistment 3 mos. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 515.)

Joseph Briggs of Cohasset yeoman, in consideration of £70 paid by Seth Briggs of same yeoman, deeds parcel or tract of salt marsh land in Scituate on Farm Neck. April 3, 1787. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 73, p. 161.)

Joseph⁵ Briggs married 2 Mar. 1785 Betsey Stodder, born in Hingham 4 Mar. 1761, and died in Cohasset 26 Dec. 1850. She was a daughter of Reuben and Elizabeth (Glover) Stodder of Hingham.

Children of Joseph⁵ Briggs and Betsey Stodder:

77. i. SEABURY (Sabra), b. 6 Aug. 1785; m. Martin Bassett.
- ii. JOSEPH, bpt. 10 Nov. 1792; d. young.
- iii. POLLY, b. 12 Nov. 1794.

78. iv. JOSEPH, b. 14 Mar. 1796; m. Catherine (Higgins) Briggs, widow of his brother George.
79. v. GEORGE, b. 28 Oct. 1798; m. Catherine Higgins.
vi. ELIJAH, b. 1804; d. 8 Nov. 1826, "Capt. Elijah, on shipboard in his cabin."

46. EZRA⁵ BRIGGS, JR. (23. *Ezra*⁴, *Joseph*³, *James*² *Walter*¹) was born 1758 in Scituate, and died in Hanover 2 Nov. 1815. He was a yeoman, and lived for a time on Main Street, Hanover (in the house that in 1911 was that of Agnes Cooper), and later on Washington Street.

Both Ezra, Sr., and Ezra, Jr., were in the revolutionary service, and it is not easy to determine which Ezra is meant in several records. Ezra, Sr., was born 1725, and would have been but 50 years of age in 1775, while Ezra, Jr., born 1758, would have been 17. Later returns specify "Junior," or "age 20 years," showing definitely when the younger Ezra is the one whose service is given. In "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors" the father and son seem confused, therefore Abstracts from the State Archives are used in this connection, which seem to show more clearly the service that father and son rendered.

SERVICE OF EZRA BRIGGS, JR.

Ezra Briggs appears on A List of Men as private in Capt. Amos Turner's Co. Service from April 1777, 2 mos. 9 days. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 55, p. 098½.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank — on A Pay Abstract of Capt. Amos Turner's Co., Col. Titcomb's Regt. for service at Rhode Island, 2 mos. 6 days, by Resolve of April 11, 1777. (Abstracts of Rolls, Vol. 23, p. 175.)

Ezra Briggs Jr. appears with rank of Private on Muster & Pay Roll of Capt. Seth Stower's Co., Col. J. Robinson's Regt. Time of enlistment Aug. 1, 1777. Time of service 5 months. (Various Service, Vol. 23, p. 25.)

Ezra Briggs Jr. appears in a List of Men Mustered in Plymouth County to serve in Capt. Stower's Co., Col. Robinson's Regt. by a return made between Aug. 18 & Sept. 10, 1777 by James Hatch Muster Master. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 42, p. 335.)

Ezra Briggs appears in a Descriptive List of the Men enlisted from Plymouth Co. in 1779 to serve in the Continental Army.

Age 20 years. Stature 5 ft 10 in. Complexion Light. He belonged to Hanover. Delivered to Ens. E. White. (Books: Enlisted Men, etc., Vol. 29, p. 51.)

Ezra Briggs appears in a Descriptive List of men raised to reinforce the Continental Army for the term of Six months agreeable to resolve of June 5, 1780. Age 21 years. Stature 5 ft 8 in. Complexion Light. Residence Hanover. Arrived at Springfield July 10, 1780, under command of Capt. George Webb. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 35, p. 193.)

Ezra Briggs appears in a List of Six Months Men raised by the town of Hanover for Service in the Continantal Army during 1780. (Six Months Town Rolls, Vol. 27, p. 19.)

Ezra Briggs, Hanover, appears among a List of Men Raised for Six Months Service and returned by Brig. Gen. Paterson as having passed muster, in a return dated Camp Totaway, Oct. 25, 1780. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 25, p. 234.)

Ezra Briggs appears in a Pay Roll for Six Months Men raised by the town of Hanover for service in the Continental Army during 1780. Marched July 5, 1780, discharged Jan'y 10, 1781. Service 6 months 17 days. (Six Months Town Rolls, Vol. 4, p. 97.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank of Private on a Pay Abstract of Capt. Joseph Soper's Co., Col. Theophilus Cotton's Plymouth Co. Regt. Service 40 days. Expedition to Rhode Island. Service in March 1781, 15 days. (Books: Abstracts of Rolls, Vol. 55, p. 0102.)

Ezra Briggs appears in A List of Nine Months Men. Time of entering Service Aug. 1, 1779. Time of discharge May 1, 1780. Lieut. Col's Co. 9th Regiment. (Books: Enlisted Men and Officers, Vol. 27, p. 54½.)

Ezra Brigs appears with rank of Private on Lexington Alarm Roll of Capt. Joseph Soper's Co. (2d Plymouth Co. Regt.) which marched (April 20) on the alarm of April 19, 1775 from Hanover (north company) to Marshfield. Res. Hanover. Length of Service, 3 days. (Lexington Alarms, Vol. 13, p. 123.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Jos^h Soper's Co. — Regt. Time of enlistment July 17, 1775. Time of discharge Dec. 31, 1775. Time of Service 6 months, 28 days accounted as 1 month. Service under direction of Field Officers of 1st Plymouth Co. Regt. (Sea Coast Defence Muster Rolls, Vol. 36, p. 226.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Lemuel Curtis' Co., Col. Anthony Thomas' Regt (Plymouth Co. Regt.) Marched on alarm to Cohasset. Time

of enlistment March 5, 1776. Time of discharge March 9, 1776. Time of service 4 days. Roll dated Hanover Jan'y 20, 1777. (Various Service, Vol. 18, p. 40.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Hayward Pierce's Co. Col. Jeremiah Hall's Regt. Time of enlistment Dec. 28, 1776. Time of Service 2 months, 14 days. Raised from Scituate or Hanover to serve at Bristol R. I. (Various Service, Vol. 53, p. 241.)

Ezra Briggs appears with rank of Private on Lexington Alarm Roll of Capt. Amos Turner's Co. Col. John Bailey's Regt. which marched on the alarm of April 19, 1775, from Hanover to ——. Res. Hanover. Length of service 14 days. (See Lexington Alarms, Vol. 13, p. 123, given above. Father and son marched on this Alarm. No way to distinguish service of each.) (Lexington Alarms, Vol. 13, p. 139.)

Ezra Briggs appears among a List of Men in Capt. Soper's Co. In Service at Marshfield & the Gurnet 3 mos. and at Scituate Harbor 3 mos. from June to December 1775. (Mass. Muster and Pay Rolls, Vol. 55, p. 0101 a.)

Levi Man, and Ezra Briggs Jr., both of Hanover yeomen, in consideration of \$90 paid by Alden Briggs of Pembroke gentleman, deed a piece of meadow at *Brickils landing place in Scituate* bought of Joshua Barstow. Also signed by wives of grantors Patience S. Man & Lydia Briggs. January 30, 1798. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 84, p. 103.)

Joseph Brooks, Mezer Hatch, John Curtis, Ezra Briggs Jr., Thomas Hatch Jr., Caleb Mann, Charles Mann, Azis Whiting all of Hanover yeomen, and Hosea Cushing of Hingham yeoman, in consideration of \$11.25 received of Benjamin Mann Jr. and Levi Mann & Caleb Whiting all of Hanover yeomen, deed a piece of Cedar Swamp in Scituate near James Jacobs share at the Sixty Forty Tenth Lot. December 17, 1800. (Vol. 89, p. 228.)

Ezra Briggs, Jr., married 13 May 1784 Margaret Curtis, born in Hanover 28 June 1758, daughter of William and Martha (Mann) Curtis. She died 16 Aug. 1788, and Ezra married, second, 1 May 1789, Lydia Southworth, born in Duxbury 8 Nov. 1766, daughter of Thomas of Duxbury and his wife, Anna Hatch of Scituate. She died in Hanover 1 May 1840.

In Hanover Records, under date of 4 July 1783, is found intention of marriage of Ezra Briggs, Jr., and Thankful

Curtis, but no record of the marriage having taken place. About a year later he married Margaret Curtis.

Children of Ezra Briggs, Jr., and Margaret Curtis:

- i. MARTHA, bpt. 22 Oct. 1786; d. 13 Aug. 1792.
- ii. RACHEL, bpt. 22 Oct. 1786; d. 13 Aug. 1792.
- iii. EZRA, bpt. 21 Sept. 1788; d. 14 Feb. 1790.

Children of Ezra Briggs, Jr., and Lydia Southworth:

- iv. HANNAH, b. Oct. 1789; d. 13 Aug. 1792.
- 80. v. EZRA, b. 16 May 1791; m. Elizabeth Fickett.
- 81. vi. JOSEPH, b. 22 Dec. 1793; m. Jane Paine.
- 82. vii. LYDIA, b. 6 Sept. 1795; m. Stephen Estes.
- 83. viii. HANNAH, b. 5 Mar. 1799; m. Deacon Ara Brooks.
- ix. THOMAS J., b. 20 Apr. 1801; d. 5 May 1808.
- 84. x. SARAH W., b. 3 Sept. 1803; m. Judson Vining.
- xi. BETSEY, b. 19 Apr. 1805; m. Rev. J. M. Spear of Boston 1831.
- 85. xii. MARTHA, b. 22 Dec. 1806; m. David Vining.
- xiii. THOMAS J., b. 24 Sept. 1809; d. 20 Aug. 1813.

47. CAPT. BENJAMIN⁵ BRIGGS, JR. (25. *Capt. Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 23 May 1760 in Cohasset, and resided in Cohasset until 1795, when he purchased the house, which is now (1936) standing, on the north corner of Summer and Cedar streets, Norwell, then Scituate, from Silas Litchfield, who had married Benjamin's cousin, Polly Briggs. It is said to have been built by Nicholas (Nichols) Vinal, who married Polly Cole 1758.

Capt. Benjamin⁵ Briggs was a "master mariner," and in 1797 was the owner of the *Almira*, and in 1801 of the schooner *Mary*.

He married 16 May 1790 Sarah Pratt, born in Cohasset 7 July 1769 (family records 26 Jan.), daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Neal) Pratt of Cohasset. She died in Scituate 6 Mar. 1835.

Children of Capt. Benjamin⁵ Briggs, Jr., and Sarah Pratt:

- 86. i. BILLINGS, b. 1 Jan. 1792; bpt. in Cohasset; m. Olive Rice.
- ii. SARAH, b. 20 Apr. 1793; bpt. in Cohasset.

- iii. POLLY CURTIS, b. 29 June 1794 in Scituate; d. 29 Sept. 1813.
- 87. iv. SOPHIA (Soffa), b. 7 Apr. 1795; m. Thomas Ellms.
- 88. v. PAUL, b. 22 Mar. 1797; m. Siba Litchfield.
- vi. JAMES, b. 12 July 1798; d. 25 July 1798.
- 89. vii. JAMES PRATT, b. 23 Aug. 1799; m. Adeline Bridges.
- viii. HARRIET, b. 21 Apr. 1801; d. 12 Apr. 1885.

48. REBECCA⁵ BRIGGS (25. *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born 3 Oct. 1769 in Scituate, and died 9 Aug. 1861. She married 18 June 1803 John Mann, born 10 May 1761, son of Capt. Thomas Mann and 26. Deborah Briggs. He died 26 June 1841, aged 80.

Children of Rebecca⁵ Briggs and John Mann:

- i. LEOISA (Louisa) MANN, b. 1 Oct. 1804.
- ii. BRIGGS MANN, b. 7 Jan. 1807.
- iii. LYDIA CURTIS MANN, b. 24 Dec. 1808; m. Noah Bodge of Boston 1832.
- iv. REUBEN MANN, b. 21 Nov. 1811.

49. HULDAH⁵ BRIGGS (25. *Benjamin*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹), whose birth has not been found on the Scituate Records, but whose name appears on records in possession of the family, married 24 Nov. 1799 Caleb Merritt, born in Scituate 11 Mar. 1770, son of Seth Merritt (Seth⁵, James⁴, Henry³, John², Henry¹, Scituate before 1628) and Mercy Stodder of Hingham.

Children of Huldah⁵ Briggs and Caleb Merritt:

- i. ELIZA ANN MERRITT, b. 13 Sept. 1803; bpt. 1 Sept. 1805 in First Church; m. (int.) 24 Sept. 1831 Capt. William E. New of Boston.
- ii. HAYWARD MERRITT, bpt. 19 Aug. 1805 in First Church.
- iii. MARY STODDER MERRITT, b. 17 Aug. 1806; d. young.
- iv. MARY BRIGGS MERRITT, bpt. 24 Apr. 1810.
- v. SETH MERRITT, b. 27 June 1810; m. Elizabeth L. Merritt 1840.
- vi. SAMUEL STETSON MERRITT, bpt. 8 Aug. 1814.

50. BETSEY⁵ BRIGGS (27. *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) or Betty Briggs, was born in Scituate 30 Oct. 1756, and died in Scituate 7 Dec. 1830. She married 15 June

1788 Asa Merritt, born in Scituate 4 July 1761, son of James Merritt, Jr., and Elizabeth Cole. He died 19 Mar. 1815, aged 54.

Ambrose Cole came to Scituate about 1695, when he purchased Conihassett lands from Capt. Stephen Otis. His house was on the Country Way at North Scituate, forty rods southeast of Bound Brook bridge, on northeast side of way. He married for a second wife Abigail Sutton 1715. Ambrose, Jr., married Elizabeth Lincoln 1720. Daughter Elizabeth born 26 June 1721.

Children of Betsey⁵ Briggs and Asa Merritt:

- i. BETSEY MERRITT, b. 31 Dec. 1788.
- ii. ASA MERRITT, b. 31 Oct. 1792; m. Betsey Cudworth 1815.
- iii. SHADRACH BRIGGS MERRITT, b. 4 May 1797; m. Arvilla Litchfield 1821.

The brothers Asa and Shadrach Merritt (sons of Betsey Briggs) made a bass viol in 1820, for the First Parish Church of Scituate, and it is often used at various services in the church at the present day. When the division came in 1824-25, they made a second instrument for the Congregational Society, and this is now in the custody of the Historical Society at the Cudworth House. They also made a bass viol for the Episcopal Church on Church Hill, which viol is in the possession of L. Vernon Briggs, and is loaned to the Hanover Historical House at Centre Hanover.

51. BARTLETT⁵ BRIGGS (27. *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) born 2 June 1772 at Scituate, was a prosperous farmer, and built at the time of his marriage the house now standing on Old Oaken Bucket Road, Greenbush, in which his great-granddaughter, Mrs. Samuel Wilson, now (1936) lives. It adjoins the property of his father and grandfather.

He married 29 Jan. 1804 Deborah Otis, born 20 Oct. 1777, daughter of David⁵, born 1716 (*Job*⁴, *Job*³, *John*², *John*¹), and Mary (Vinal) Otis. (See Otis.)

Widow Anna Vinal, with children Martha, Stephen, aged 6 years, and John, a year or two younger, came to Scituate

in 1636, and erected a house north of Stockbridge mill pond in 1637. She was a woman of considerable property, and in 1646 was a Conihassett Partner. Martha Vinal married Israel Chittenden 1646. Stephen married Mary Baker 1661, daughter of Rev. Nicholas Baker of the First Church, and John married Elizabeth Baker, her sister, 1664.

Children of Bartlett⁵ Briggs and Deborah Otis:

- i. DEBORAH, b. 27 Dec. 1808; m. 23 Jan. 1856 Abel Sylvester (2d wife).
- 90. ii. OTIS, b. 2 Feb. 1809; m. Charlotte Wade.
- 91. iii. DAVID, b. 8 Mar. 1811; m. Charlotte Bradford.
- 92. iv. RHODA, b. 20 Jan. 1814; m. Rufus Curtis.
- 93. v. WILLIAM, b. Nov. 1817; m. Fanny Cook.
- vi. HARRIET ATWOOD, b. Nov. 1819; d. 13 Mar. 1837, aged 17 years.

52. POLLY⁵ BRIGGS (27. *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 10 Apr. 1775 and married 7 Sept. 1794 Silas Litchfield, born 12 July 1772, son of Capt. Daniel⁵ (*Josiah*⁴, *Nicholas*³, *Josiah*², *Lawrence*¹) and Sarah (Whitcomb) Litchfield. He died 3 June 1839, aged 67.

Silas Litchfield sold to Capt. Benjamin⁵ Briggs the house on the corner of Summer and Cedar streets, Norwell, in 1795.

Children of Polly⁵ Briggs and Silas Litchfield:

- i. EMELY LITCHFIELD, b. 31 Mar. 1795; m. James Lincoln Merritt 1815.
- ii. FREEMAN LITCHFIELD, b. 7 Mar. 1799; m. Lucy Damon 1822.
- iii. EUNICE LITCHFIELD, b. 13 June 1804; m. Francis Litchfield 1817.

53. JOSEPH⁵ BRIGGS (27. *James*⁴, *Benjamin*³, *James*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 1 Feb. 1777 and died in Scituate 2 Feb. 1846, aged 70. He was called a "meehanic," and may have been a ship carpenter, as his sons James S. and Barnabas W. both followed that calling. He lived at Scituate Centre, in the house that was later that of his son James Sylvester Briggs.

Joseph Briggs married 28 Mar. 1798 Miriam Silvester, born in 1774 and died 17 Dec. 1820. She was probably from Marshfield.

Children of Joseph⁵ Briggs and Miriam Silvester:

- i. SHADRACH, b. 4 Feb. 1799.
- 94. ii. JAMES SYLVESTER, b. 14 Apr. 1800; m. Selina Curtis.
- 95. iii. BETSEY, b. 10 Feb. 1802; m. Zeba Cushing (2d wife).
- iv. HANNAH, b. 24 Nov. 1803; m. Job Otis (no children).
- 96. v. BARNABAS WEBB, b. 25 May 1805; m. Deborah Otis.
- vi. JOSEPH, b. 25 Oct. 1807; d. 10 Apr. 1827; unm.
- vii. CLARISA, b. 17 Feb. 1810.
- viii. EUNICE, b. 20 Sept. 1811.
- ix. MARY, b. 4 Feb. 1814.

54. RUTH⁵ BRIGGS (31. *Joshua*⁴, *Cornelius*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) married 14 Oct. 1765 Abner Magoun, born in Pembroke 11 Aug. 1743, son of David Magoun, who married in Duxbury 26 Sept. 1728 Rachel Soule of Duxbury.

Abner Magoun was a ship carpenter, and worked on vessels built in Hanover yards. He died in Pembroke 11 May 1818. His wife Ruth (Briggs) died 17 Oct. 1801. They lived on what is called "the Magoun place" on Scooset Street.

Children of Ruth⁵ Briggs and Abner Magoun:

- i. CYNTHIA BRIGGS MAGOUN, b. 29 Aug. 1766.
- ii. LUCY MAGOUN, b. 4 Aug. 1768.
- iii. ABNER MAGOUN, b. 16 June 1770; m. 16 Dec. 1796 Mary Bates of Hanover.
- iv. RUTH MAGOUN, b. 31 Mar. 1772; m. Reuben Healy 19 May 1804.
- v. CHRISTIANA MAGOUN, b. 17 July 1774.
- vi. ZERVIAH MAGOUN, b. 3 Sept. 1776.
- vii. ELIZABETH MAGOUN, b. 25 Dec. 1778.
- viii. ANNE MAGOUN, b. 4 Mar. 1781.
- ix. CORNELIUS BRIGGS MAGOUN, b. 12 July 1783.

55. ELISHA⁵ BRIGGS (34. *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 10 Aug. 1761. He lived near Stony Cove Brook, in a house which had belonged to his grandfather, James³ Briggs, who had died there in 1754,

leaving the property to his eldest son, John⁴, who lived there and left the property to Elisha⁵. After Elisha's death it was sold to Charles Ford, and now (1936) belongs to Henry C. Ford. Elisha Briggs died there on 21 Sept. 1843, aged 82 years. He was a Revolutionary soldier.

Elisha Briggs, Sergeant, Capt. Calvin Curtis's Co. engaged Sept. 10, 1779; discharged Dec. 1, 1779; service, 2 mos. 1 day at Rhode Island; company raised from 1st and 3d Plymouth Co. regts. for 2 months service in Col. Jacob's (Plymouth Co.) regt.; engaged July 26, 1780; discharged Oct. 30, 1780; service, 3 mos. 1 day; company raised to reinforce Continental Army for 3 mos. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 503.)

Elisha Briggs married 2 Oct. 1791 Abigail Foster, born 6 Mar. 1766, daughter of John and Sarah (Jacob) Foster. She died 1 Apr. 1832, aged 66 years. John Foster was a soldier in the French War, and was at Crown Point in 1759. He was a son of Deacon Elisha and Temperance (Freeman) Foster, and a grandson of Deacon Hatherley Foster. Returning from the French War he became a tavern keeper in the old Deacon Hatherley Foster house, where his father lived. This house was a busy center during the days of the Revolution, and many important meetings were held at "Landlord" Foster's. The old Foster house built in 1697, was occupied by five generations of Fosters, and was demolished in 1898, then in a ruinous condition.

As has before been stated, one of the original windows of this house is preserved in the Kent Memorial house in Norwell Village. The diamond panes set in lead are of the earliest type. The window had been preserved in the attic of the old house, and was given to Mrs. Lloyd Briggs when the house was demolished. It was loaned to the Kent Memorial collection by her son, Dr. L. Vernon Briggs.

Sarah Jacob, wife of John Foster, was daughter of Deacon Joseph and Mary (Foster) Jacob. Mary Foster was from Dorchester, granddaughter of Timothy² Foster and his second wife, Relief (Holland) Dowse (Mary⁴, Edward³, Timothy², Edward,¹ Esq.).

Children of Elisha⁵ Briggs and Abigail Foster:

97. i. ANNA, b. 4 June 1793; m. Nathaniel Clap.
ii. SARAH JACOBS, b. 17 Mar. 1795; m. Warren Poole of Weymouth (2d wife) 1851.
98. iii. MARY FOSTER, b. 5 Mar. 1797; m. Elijah Whiton Lewis.
iv. HANNAH STOWELL, b. 3 Mar. 1799; d. 6 Aug. 1815, aged 16 years.
99. v. ABIGAIL SMITH, b. 4 Mar. 1801; m. James S. Lewis.
vi. JOHN, b. 4 Nov. 1803; m. Salome — and resided in South Boston.
100. vii. JOSEPH WARREN, b. 27 Jan. 1808; m. Susanna Ewell.
viii. JAMES, b. 23 May 1810; left home, and was not heard from after.

56. LYDIA⁵ BRIGGS (34. *John*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 24 Feb. 1763 and died in Scituate 9 Apr. 1852. She married 28 Oct. 1792 Elisha⁵ Turner, son of Jesse⁴ Turner and Lydia Neal. Jesse's father, Jonathan³ Turner, eldest son of John², Sr., and Mary (Brewster) Turner, built a house on the southwest part of the homestead lot of John² Turner, as shown by his will. Deane states that the house now standing was built on this lot by Jesse⁴, but there is some evidence that it was built at an earlier date. It is now (1936) the residence of Schuyler Dillon, who has enlarged it by adding an ell. (See Turner.)

Elisha⁵ Turner and Lydia Neal were cousins, for their mothers, Lydia and Abigail Neal, were daughters of Joseph Neal, who lived at the head of Neal Gate Road on Main Street. The cellar of this old house is still visible (1936). Their brother, John Neal, was Judge William Cushing's farmer, who managed the Walnut Tree Hill farm in his absence, and built the "Neal Gate" that gave its name to the present road, then a private way to the old Cushing farm, and the Briggs shipyard, in 1778, as recorded in the Judge's so-called "diary." John Neal later became a shipwright, and removed to Duxbury.

The only child of Lydia⁵ Briggs and Elisha Turner was —

LYDIA TURNER, b. 11 Sept. 1793; m. 5 Oct. 1828 Hon. Samuel Adams Turner, b. 22 Mar. 1792, son of Hon. Charles, Jr., and

Hannah (Jacobs) Turner. He was usually known as "Squire Sam," and was an active politician and a State Senator in 1831. They had five children:

- i. Abigail Turner, b. 23 Sept. 1819; m. Marshall H. Litchfield of Egypt (Scituate) (2d wife).
- ii. Matilda Turner, b. 24 Oct. 1824; m. Stephen Curtis 1846.
- iii. Charles Turner, b. 3 Sept. 1826.
- iv. John Turner, b. 1 Nov. 1829; m. Julia M. Tilden.
- v. Elizabeth Turner, b. 18 June 1837; m. E. Franklin Brooks.

57. JAMES⁵ BRIGGS, 3d (35. *James*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹), was born in Scituate in the house on the lane now known as Cross Street 14 Mar. 1753. He was a housewright, and probably carried on the tannery which he and his younger brother THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS purchased in 1780 from Joseph Thomas.

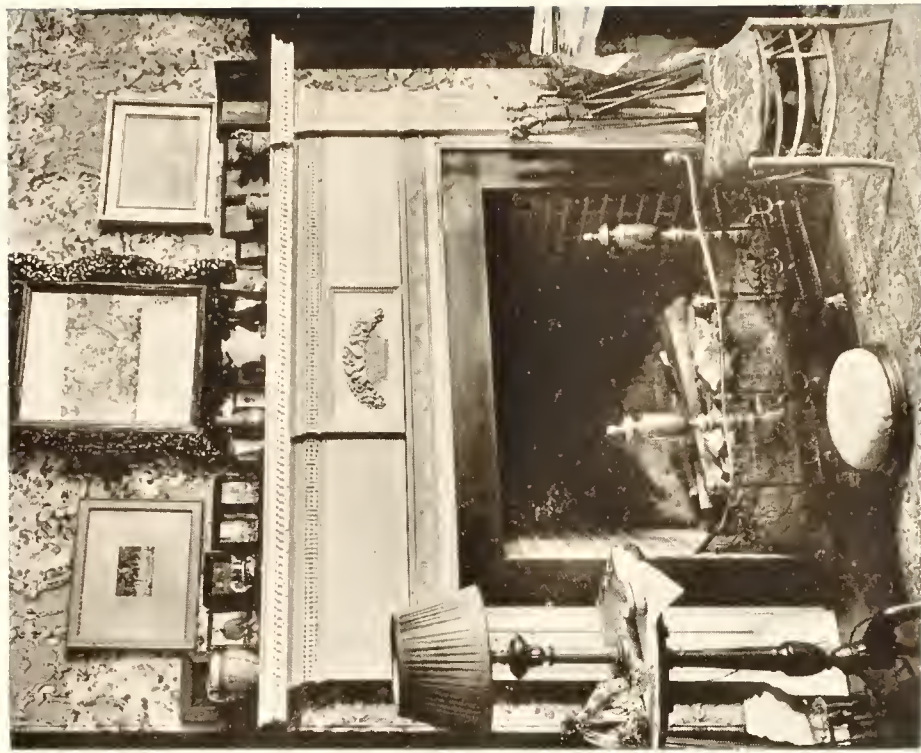
Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 60, p. 61. Rec. 8 March 1780

March 8, 1780. Joseph Thomas of Plymouth, tanner, deeds to James Briggs 3d & Thomas Barker Briggs, the first housewright, the second shipwright, in consideration of Four Thousand & five hundred Pounds lawful money, the whole of s^d Joseph Thomas' homestead in Scituate, containing Thirty acres more or less, bounded Northerly on the land of Elijah Curtis & James Curtis, Easterly on the land of the Heirs of Dea. John James and the land of Dr. James Otis, Southerly on the land of Thomas Pinein, & Westerly on the land of Charles Turner. Together with dwelling House, Barn, Tan House & Currying Shop, with their appurtenances standing thereon. and certain rights of way through James & Elijah Curtis' land. Also including Stock consisting of one Cow & Horse, all Farming Tools, Tanning & Currying Tools or utensils, and household furniture. Reserving to s^d Joseph Thomas and wife the use and improvement of one room in s^d dwelling, with privilege in the Garret, Cellar & Buttery, also use and improvement of such part of the Household Furniture as he and his wife shall want for and during the term of their natural lives. Wife Abigail relinquishes her right of dower in said premises.

Signed	Signed	JOSEPH THOMAS
Sealed & Delivered		her
in Presence of		ABIGAIL × THOMAS
WILLIAM TURNER		mark
ELIJAH BRIGGS (Elisha?)		



CORNER OF PARLOR, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON
(See Chapter XXVI)



CHAMBER, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON, RESIDENCE
OF DR. AND MRS. L. V. BRIGGS
(See Chapter XXVII)

Joseph Thomas was from Tiverton, R. I. His wife Abigail was a daughter of Samuel Curtis of Curtis Hill and wife Elizabeth. Abigail was born in 1703, and married Joseph Thomas in 1744.

The Tan House and Currying Shop were situated at the foot of the hill, which the house overlooked. On this brook on the north side of the road, James Wiswell and Gamaliel Damon Sampson had an ice house within the recollection of many now living.

Thomas Barker Briggs, Shipwright, relinquishes to brother James Briggs 3d of Scituate housewright, interest on undivided half of land, houses etc. purchased by them of Joseph Thomas. Dated 29 Dec. 1781. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 61, p. 97.)

The following deeds and notes show in part James 3d's business activities:

On 23d day of April 1775, William Gilmer gives note payable to James Briggs 3d for £1, 18s. On May 4, 1776 "Rec one pound", noted on paper.

Elizabeth Malcom, note to James Briggs for 13 shillings, dated Georgetown the 21st day ——— 1776.

15 Aug 1783, Recorded 9 Aug. 1791, Barnabas Simmons of Scituate deeds in consideration of £54, 16s, 6d paid by James Briggs 3d Foar Acres and one half and Eleaven Rods Salt Marsh in Scituate bounded North & West on Jonathan Jackson, Philip & James Turner's land. Southerly on the River & Easterly on Job Tilden.

Wife of Moses Simmons & of Barnabas Simmons give up their right in above premises. Signed, Barnabas Simmons, Lydia and Abigail Simmons.

Plymouth County Records, Vol. 66, p. 246. Mortgage Deed. Rec. 18 May 1787.

May 7, 1787. John Neall of Duxborough shipwright, in consideration of £1, 11s paid by James Briggs Third of Scituate housewright, deeds all his farm land with Housing Buildings Fencing and Orchard that came to him from his father Job Neall deceased. If John Neall his heirs or assigns, at end of three

years pay the full and just sum of £13, 11s with lawful interest and necessary charges, this deed becomes null & void.

In presence of	Signed	JOHN NEAL	(Seal)
NATH'L WHITON		SARAH NEALL	(Seal)
SAM'L OAKMAN			

Job Neall was a son of Joseph Neall from Provincetown and wife Abigail Smith. He married Sarah Barker in 1743, and according to Deane lived on the south of Church Hill. Sarah Barker was a daughter of Barnabas Barker and Hannah Turner, and a sister of Hannah Barker, wife of James Briggs, Jr. John Neall the shipwright was therefore a cousin of James Briggs 3d. (See Barker.)

James Briggs 3d of Scituate Shipwright, in Consideration of £46 from Henry Josselyn of Pembroke yeoman, sells 4½ acres of Salt Marsh, bounded on the river and by Robert Estes, Philip Turner and James Turner. Dated 10 Nov 1789. (Vol. 83, p. 181.)

Dec. 1791. Samuel Veasey of Penobscot gives note £2, 13s, to pay to James Briggs.

1 Oct. 1791, James Clap of Scituate Housewright in consideration of £3, 8s paid by James Briggs ye 3d of Scituate, Shipwright, deeds a certain piece of land lying partly in Scituate and partly in Hingham, being land that was sett off to the said James Clap by execution on David Farrow of Hingham. Also signed by Elizabeth Clap, wife of James, in presence of Lewis Clapp & Joshua Young.

Plantation No: 2 April y^e 24th 1793 for Value Received we promis to pay to James Briggs Jr. Ad-m^r on the Estate of James Briggs y^e 3^d Deccssed the Sum of Nine Pound five Shilling & 14^d in money or Coard wood Delivered at a good Landing on or befoure the first Day of October Next With Interest till paid Witness our hand —

Attet
ENDAD HETH

EDWARD BRIDGS
HENERY BRIDGES

Reg. 25 June 1790. James Briggs Tertius of Scituate, shipwright, in consideration of £18 paid by Obediah Stodder of Hingham, conveys 5a ¾ & 6r of land in South Parish of Hingham, adjoining land of David Farrow, Solomon Garnett & Job Loring. Dated 10 June 1789. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 168, p. 43.)

Jan. 26, 1792. Samuel Booden gives note to James Briggs for "Twelve Pound 17 shilling 6d to be Pade in timber. To be Pade in April next."

March 16, 1792. Zachucs Kenisston note to James Briggs for "£1, 10s, same to be Pade in good ash Stavcs."

July the 17 day 1792. Note from Roger Mcrithe to James Briggs 3d for "£20, 16s, 1d on demand with intres till Pade." "Sept. 7 day 1792, then Received £10, 18s, 2d." Signed James Briggs 3d.

25 July 1792. William Nickerson of Offen (?) Island in the County of Hancock in the State of Massachusetts (afterwards State of Maine) Ycoman in Consideration of thirty Pounds paid by James Briggs the 3d of Scituate in the County of Plymouth Shipwright deeds to said James Briggs one hundred acres of land on *orffen* (?) Island so called. Viz. No. 28 ajoyning to a lot formerly ocopied by James Scott on the South and James Cunningham on the North and Easterly on the water extending back to compleat one hundred acres. (Hancock County Records, Lib. 1, Fol^o 383.)

Sept. 8, 1792. Samuel Soper received from James Briggs 3d the sum of 10s in full of all accounts, Dus, Dets & Demands, from the being (beginning) to this day.

James⁵ Briggs' father, James⁴ Briggs, who lived on Cross Street, at the head of Neal Gate Street, had cousins Joseph³, Cornelius³, Jr., and the two Mary Briggses. Benjamin Turner and wife Mary, of Pembroke, appear among the heirs of her father, Cornelius³ Briggs, Jr., which proves that Capt. Benjamin Turner's wife was Mary Briggs, daughter of Cornelius³, Jr.

James⁵ Briggs, 3d, was called a shipwright in 1790, and with his brother Thomas⁵ Barker Briggs, also a shipwright, built vessels at the Briggs yard at Hobart Landing, succeeding their father James⁴ who built the *Columbia* there.

James⁵ Briggs, 3d, married 17 May 1781 Deborah Clapp, born in Scituate 19 Jan. 1761, daughter of Increase⁴ Clapp (David³, Samuel², Thomas¹), whose ancestor, Thomas¹ Clap, was born in Dorchester, England, in 1597, came to Dorchester, New England, then to Weymouth, and to Scituate in 1640, where he settled north of Stockbridge Mill Pond.

The wife of Increase⁴ Clapp and mother of Deborah was Delight⁵ Nash (Joseph⁴, Jr., Joseph³, Joseph², James¹ of Weymouth) a granddaughter of Joseph³ Nash who settled beside Stony Cove Brook in 1700. (See Isaac Otis, M.D.)

Deborah (Clapp) Briggs died 11 Aug. 1782, a little more than a year after her marriage, aged 21 years, soon after giving birth to a daughter, Deborah Clapp Briggs, born 10 Apr. 1782, and died 10 Aug. 1799 aged 17 years 4 months.

In the so-called "Tomb Yard," east of the First Parish Church in Norwell Village, is a tomb bearing this inscription on the flat slate covering:

This Tomb was erected and these bodies Deposited by ye desire of Miss Deborah Clapp Briggs. She Died Aug. ye 10th 1799 — AEtat 17 Years & 4 Months. She was the orpan Dau^{tr} of Mr. James Briggs ye 3^d & Mrs. Deborah his wife her Mother M^{rs} Deborah Briggs Died Augst 11th 1782 AEtat 21 Years M^{rs} hannah [Hannah Barker Briggs] ye wife of M^r James Briggs Died may ye 16th 1792 AEtat 67 Years her Father M^r James Briggs ye 3^d Died Oct^r ye 12th 1792 AEtat 40 Years Who are here Deposited untill the General Resurrection.

James⁵ Briggs, 3d, died 12 Oct. 1792, aged 40 years. An inventory of his estate presented on 18 Dec. 1792, amounting to £1,834 13s 4d was made by his father, James Briggs, Jr., administrator.

58. THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS (35. *James⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹*), born in Scituate 13 July 1757 and died 26 Oct. 1806, aged 49 years. He was the youngest son of James⁴ Briggs, Jr., the shipbuilder, and succeeded his father at the Hobart's Landing Shipyard when the Revolutionary War was over. He is undoubtedly the Thomas Briggs referred to as serving in the War, as he would have been 18 years of age in 1775; and in the fleet of war vessels or privateers under Commodore John Manley in 1777, when he would have reached 20 years; and again on the brigantine *Hawke* under Capt. Jonathan Oaks, in 1782, then 25 years of age. This Thomas Briggs is recorded as belonging to Scituate, and there is no record of any one else bearing that name in Scituate at the time.

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with rank of Private on Lexington Alarm Roll of Capt. Samuel Stockbridge's Co., Col. Bailey's Reg't, which marched on the Alarm of April 19, 1775 from Scituate to —. He belonged to Scituate. Length of service 2 days. (Lexington Alarms, Vol. 13, p. 113.)

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with rank of Private on Muster & Pay Roll of Capt. Jos^h Soper's Co. Col. — Reg't. Time of enlistment, July 19, 1775. Time of discharge, Dec. 31, 1775. Time of service, 5 months, 27 days. (28 days reckoned as one month.) Service under direction of Field Officers of 1st Plymouth Co. Reg't. (Sea Coast Defence Muster Rolls, Vol. 36, p. 226.)

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with rank of Drummer on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Hayward Peirce's Co. Col. Jeremiah Hall's Regt. Time of enlistment January 2, 1777. Time of service 2 mos. 10 days. Raised from Scituate or Hanover to serve at Bristol R. I. (Various Service, Vol. 53, p. 241.)

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with grade of Carpenter on Muster and Pay Roll dated Sept. 20, 1782, of the officers and crew of the Brigantine "Hawke" commanded by Jonathan Oakes. "No description given". Service from May 3 to June 3, 1777 in fleet under Commodore John Manley. (Naval Service, Privateers, etc., Vol. 52, p. 74.)

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with rank of Private on Muster and Pay Roll of Capt. Abel Babbitt's Co. Col. John Hathaway's Regt. for service at Rhode Island on the alarm of —. Time of enlistment, Aug. 1, 1780. Time of discharge, Aug. 7, 1780. Time of service, 8 days. Marched by order of Council of July 22, 1780. (Rhode Island Service, Vol. 1, p. 101, and Vol. 2, p. 91.)

THOMAS BRIGGS appears with grade of Seaman on A Warrant to pay officers and crew of the Brigantine "Hawk" — "Capt. Jonathan Oaks", on a Roll bearing date Nov. 2, 1782. (Books: Warrants to Pay Rolls, Vol. 29, p. 195.)

On 8 Mar. 1780 the brothers James, 3d, and Thomas Barker Briggs purchased from Joseph Thomas, tanner, his homestead at Curtis or Buttonwood Hill, tannery, farm lands, tools, horses, cows and household furniture, for £4,500. (See 57. James Briggs, 3d.) After Thomas Barker's⁵ marriage in 1784, this estate, then a valuable and productive one, became the residence of his family. His oldest son, Thomas Briggs, lived in the Thomas house until his death in 1861. A few years later it was sold to Cushing O. Hatch, whose heirs are still (1936) in possession

of part of the land, though the old house was demolished more than fifty years ago.

In 1781 Thomas Barker⁵ Briggs relinquished to his brother James his interest in the above estate. (See 57. James⁵ Briggs. 3d, deed of 29 Dec. 1781.) After the death of James in 1782, following that of his wife, it eventually returned into the possession of Thomas Barker Briggs.

IN SENATE, — On the petition of James Briggs, praying that Thomas Barker Briggs and James Briggs Jun^r as they are administrators of the estate of James Briggs the Third of Scituate in the County of Plymouth, Shipwright, deceased, may be authorized and impowered to make and execute to the said James Briggs the petitioner a deed of sale of certain salt marsh mentioned in said petition to the amount of twenty two pounds ten shillings according to the promise of the said deceased in his lifetime. —

Resolved that the prayer of the said petition be granted & that the said Thomas Barker Briggs and James Briggs, Jun^r administrators as aforesaid be and they hereby are fully authorized and impowered in their said capacity to make and execute to the said James Briggs the petitioner, a good and lawful deed of sale of three acres of salt marsh at the northerly end of the lot belonging to the heirs of said deceased, which he purchased of James Rogers of Marshfield.

In the House of Representatives

Read and Concurred

Approved by the Governor.

(Court Rec., p. 132. Jan. 27, 1794.)

Thomas Barker⁵ Briggs was a prominent man, never wealthy, but of moderate means. For an account of the vessels built by him at Hobart's Landing, see "Shipbuilding on the North River."

A record of some of the ships built by him is gleaned from the following memorandum of material used in his shipyard:

LIST OF IRON WORK FOR A SHIP 300 TONS (BUILT ON NORTH RIVER BY THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS ABOUT 1803)

5 Thimbles for penants of Mizzen Stay. 4 Thimbles for Slings.
9 Thimbles for Cross Jack Slings & Spring Stays. 10 Pair of
Lock Thimbles for Braces. 4 Truss Thimbles welded. 2 Thim-

bles for Cross Jack Truss & Mizzen Sheat Welded. 4 Thimbles for Bowsprit Shrouds & 2 Hooks. 6 Dozen Small Thimbles. 4 Hooks for Runners & Takles. 2 Hooks for Fish Takle. 18 Fuddick Hooks. 6 Small Fuddick Hooks for Mizzen T. Shrouds. 10 Hooks — Suitable for Top G. Halyards Bowlin Takles &c. 30 Small Hooks. 2 Eye Bols for Cheaks of Main Masts — 8 Inches Drive. 4 Jewel Bolts — $6\frac{1}{2}$ Inches Drive. 1 Bolt for End of Gaff. 1 Jibboom Traveler 9 Inches in Clear with an Iron Roll. 2 Travelers for Top G Masts $6\frac{3}{4}$ Inches in Clear; 1 for Mizzen Top G Mast $5\frac{1}{4}$ Inches in Clear. 4 Small Jewel Bolts for Top G yards.

For Capⁿ Moses Inghe

JOHN WYER.

MEMORANDUM OF HOOKS AND THIMBLES FOR PHINEAS SPRAGUE
SCHONER (BUILT BY THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS ON NORTH
RIVER, 1804)

viz 3 Large hooks and thimbles for Purches blocks. 2 hooks and thimbles for Jib halyards. 1 hooks & thimble for flying Stay tackle. 2 Small hooks & thimbles for flying Jib gyes. 4 Large thimbles for Peak halyards. 2 hooks & thimbles for luff halyards. 4 Small hooks & thimbles for tack, tackles. 2 hooks and thimbles for main boom tackles one of them with a Swivel hook; 2 for fore boom tackle. 2 Large thimbles for m & Fore toping lift. 1 Large thimble for main sheat Strap. 1 hook and thimble for fore sheat. 6 Reef thimbles for the top sails. 8 Small hooks & thimbles for back stay tackles. 4 Large thimbles for the Slings of the yard. 2 Truss thimbles. 2 Small hooks & thimbles for truss tackles. 1 Large thimble for boom penant. 4 Lock thimbles for the brace blocks. 2 Dozⁿ Small thimbles. 2 Small hooks & thimbles for the brace blocks. 2 Marling Spikes. 20 hart thimbles for the top mast Shroud & back stays. 2 Clew thimbles and Rings for the fore & mains sail. 4 Lock thimbles for Brace pendants.

A MEMORANDUM FOR A BRIG IRON WORK 155 TUNS CAPT.
BARKER OWNER (BUILT BY THOMAS BARKER BRIGGS ON
NORTH RIVER)

Sept. 23 1805 2 Large Round thimbles For pandants. 16 hoist thimbles For Top Gallant Shrouds. 4 Walded thimbles For Truses. 4 Large hoist thimbles For Slings to the yards.

3 Thimbles For Boom pendant and Shroud; 3 one sise Larger For Spring Stays. 3 Dozen small thimbles; 2 Dozen one sise Larger; 2 For man Rops; 2 For Jib gyes; 2 For Fore Sheet. 1½ Dozen Small hooks with thimbles; 1 one sise Larger; ½ tow sises Larger. 1 Travler For Jib Boom. 1 pair of Can hooks For Barrel; 1 pair For hoghead. 1 Fish hook. 2 marlen Spikes; 1½ Dozen tow Sises Larger. 1 thimble Reng For main Sheet. 2 Bolts with thimbles For Brace Blocks. 4 Jewls Bolts with thimbles. 1 Small Bolt with 1 thimble For Down hall. 4 Bolts with thimbles For Lifts Blocks. 4 pair of Lock thimbles For Brace Blocks; 4 pair one sise Smaller For Top sail yard yards. 2 Large hooks with thimbles For takle Blocks; 2 one sise smaller For Burton Blocks. 2 hooks with thimble For Boom takle. 12 Duck Bill hooks with thimbles.

A MEMORANDUM FOR IRON WORK FOR A MORFETDITE BRIGG
110 TUNS — MR EZRA WESTON OWNER (BUILT BY THOMAS
BARKER BRIGGS ON NORTH RIVER)

October 25 1805 2 hoist thimbles For the Slings to the yards; 8 For main Top mast Shrouds; 8 For Fore Top Gallant Shrouds. [Torn] Walded thimbles For Truses. 4 Large Round thimbles For pendants a Loft; [Torn] one sise smaller to set up Spring stays; 4 2 sises smaller For Boom pendant halyards Blocks. 3½ Dozen Small Thimbles; 2 Dozen one sise Larger; 1½ Dozen tow Sises Larger. 1 thimble and Ring For main Sheet Block. 4 pair of Lock thimbles For Loer yards; 4 pair one sise smaller For Top sail yards. 2 Bolts with thimbles For Brace Blocks. 2 jewels Bolts For Top sail yards. 2 Bolts with thimbles For Lofts Blocks. 2 Large hooks with thimbles For purches Blocks; 2 one size Smaller For Burtons. 2 hooks with thimbles For Boom takle 1 Swevel. 10 puttuck hooks; 2 Fore Sheet one sise Larger. ½ Dozen small hooks with thimbles; ½ a Dozen tow Sises Larger. 1 Travler For Jib Boom. 2 pair Can hooks. 1 Boat hook. 2 marlen Spikes. 1 Fish hook.

THOMAS BARKER⁵ BRIGGS married 10 Oct. 1784 LUCY OTIS born in Scituate, 15 June 1763, daughter of Dr. James and Lucy (Cushing) Otis, who lived in the Isaac Otis house beside Stony Cove Brook, now (1936) Miss Antoinette Pray's. Lucy (Otis) Briggs died 25 Dec. 1832. (See Ancestry of Lucy Otis Briggs, in chapter on the Otis and Cushing families.)

The following are a few of the many letters which are still extant, found among her effects:

MRS. LUCY BRIGGS, DIGHTON, MASS., FROM HER BROTHER,
DR. CUSHING OTIS

(ABSTRACTED)

SCITUATE 24 1786.

We have had snow storm on snow storm, till the people incapacitated by the depth of snow, and scarcity of water to procure bread, are become quite emaciated with fasting, and their meagre appearance indicates the wretchedness of their circumstances. But how sensibly must every one be affected, whose soul is capable of sympathy, when he hears of the havoc made *by the late storm* among the poor seamen: *No less than 11 vessels shipwrecked on this coast within the small circumference of this bay*, and the beach strewed with the dead corpses of those unhappy persons who fell victims to the merciless wave. Such is the instability of fortune, and such the uncertainty of all sublunary enjoyments, that while we think we are in the fruition of them, they are always ready to elude our embraces. Hannah has nothing new to communicate,

C. OTIS.

ELIZA RICHMOND (MRS. BAYLIES RICHMOND) TO LUCY OTIS
BRIGGS

DIGHTON, April 25, 1800.

DEAR MRS. BRIGGS: — . . . I am very sorry that you could not make it convenient to attend your father in his tour to Dighton — but I live in hopes that you, as your father has flattered me, will visit us soon. He and Abbie I expect will tell you all the news circulating here. Last fall I met with an event a little extraordinary, which was forming an acquaintance with your cousin King of Newport. I went one morning to call upon Mrs. Shaw, and she introduced me to a very plain looking lady who I observed with her and who was talking very fast and my coming interrupted but very little. As Mrs. Shaw introduced me as Mrs. Richmond, only, and as I was a stranger, she took no more notice than common, but as Mrs. Shaw was rather busy and Mrs. King appeared to be fond of talking I took up the conversation. Mrs. Shaw said,

“If I had time I would tell you what delightful news we have from Europe of the Society formed in Great Britain for the

propagation of the Gospel, and that they are joined by the Society of United Brethren and many others in all parts of the World" — as it happened, I was pretty well acquainted with the history. I began to ask her some questions of their latest proceedings, by which we soon discovered each other's knowledge — when in the midst of our discourse she broke off and looked very thoughtful — "Your name is Mrs. Richmond — pray is it Mrs. Baylies Richmond?" I told her yes — "Were you not acquainted with a cousin of mine, Mrs. Briggs, who lived in this town?" — I was; "Oh, it is the very same! I knew it must be you; I am sure of it", she exclaimed, "Why, what, why", she said, "I will tell you Mrs. Briggs, when I was to see her, gave me such a description of you that I knew you by your Conversation — I am very happy to meet with you; do pray spend the day with us!" I did, and very much pleased with her. She appears a very amiable woman, though a little enthusiastie. She told me that she talked of taking her son to Bethlehem School, and had been to Raynham to ask his Unele's advice. . . .

Give my kind love to Mrs. Thomas. With love and compliments to yourself and friends, I am,

Yours,

ELIZA RICHMOND.

JAMES OTIS TO MRS. LUCY BRIGGS, SCITUATE.

BOSTON, April 26, 1800.

SISTER BRIGGS: — There is a brig that is in from the Cape commanded by Captain Wiman and there were a number of Captain Bridgeis' people came home in her. The Second Mate, John Woods, brought Fifteen English Guineays, and Benjamin Princee brought Fifteen more likewise. You must write a line to each of them and give them orders to pay to me the money, and I will keep the money till you send for it, in the same pieces that he pays me for they are in Guineays, and you must give these Receipts likewise, for they are very particuar, so that they may not command any blame. Mr. Briggs was in the Cape when they left there and they were paid off. Captain Bridgyis (Briggs) paid him 255 dollars in the Cape in paper money, and he paid twenty per cent to exchange it into hard money. You must write me a line for I think that the sooner it is done the better.

You must excuse this writing, for I am in a very great hurry, for the packet is under way.

JAMES OTIS.

Sailed from Boston the 9th of may 1813. taken
prisoners on the 12th on the 17th arrived in Halifax prison
remained there until the 21st of november then sailed for England
arrived at Spithead on the 24th of december laid there about 4^{to} 5 weeks
then sailed for Chatham when arrived there was put on board of the
prison ship Ramson remained there about 1st to 2 weeks then were put on
board of the prison ship Bahama where we remained until the 2nd of
september 1814 was then put on board of the Scyden transport
which sailed for Plymouth, from thence were marched to Dartmoor
prisons where we arrived on the 3rd of october this day 30 of december
the American Ensign was displayed on these prisons on account of the news
of peace being signed between England and the United States of America

Children of THOMAS⁵ BARKER BRIGGS and LUCY OTIS:

- i. THOMAS, b. 20 June 1785; d. 29 Aug. 1861; unm.
- 101. ii. CUSHING OTIS, b. 25 Feb. 1787; m. MERCY LITTLE THOMAS.
- 102. iii. HENRY, b. 11 Mar. 1789; m. (1) Betsey Ruggles; (2) Widow Rachel Clapp Gardner.
- 103. iv. CHARLES, b. 12 Oct. 1791; m. Rhoda Reed.
- v. DEBORAH CLAPP, b. 16 Nov. 1801; d. 26 Dec. 1875; unm.

Thomas⁶ Briggs, the oldest son of Thomas B.⁵ and Lucy Otis Briggs, never married. During the War of 1812 he was taken prisoner on a privateer by the British, and carried to Halifax, Nova Scotia. A memorandum in his own handwriting found among his effects says:

We sailed from Boston on the 9th of May, 1813. Was taken prisoner on the 12th and on the 17th arrived in Halifax prison, remained there until the 21st of Nov. then sailed for England. Arrived at Spithead on the 24th of Dec. and laid there about two weeks, then sailed for Chatham. When I arrived there I was put on board the prison ship "Samson," where I remained about two weeks. Then we were put on board the prison ship "Bahama," where we remained until the 25th of Sept. 1814. Was then put on board of the Leyden transport, which sailed from Plymouth, (Eng.) from thence were marched to Dartmoor prison where we arrived on the 8th of Oct. *This day* the 30th of Dec. the *American Ensign* was displayed on these prisons on account of the news of peace being signed betwixt England and the United States of America.

A letter from his mother, Lucy Otis Briggs, addressed to "Mr. Thomas Briggs, Halifax Prison," shows her philosophical character and the stern stuff of which she was made (see Briggs' "History of Shipbuilding on North River"):

JUNE the 13th, 1813.

DEAR THOMAS:—I am glad to hear no worse fate has befallen you. It is what I expected. I am sorry for your misfortune; keep up good spirits. I hope all these things will be for your good. If you was out privateering you might get disabled for life. It is an employment that will circumvent the frown of

Divine Providence and business is preferable. An exchange may take place sooner than you anticipate. I am glad you are so well reconciled to what has befallen you. That all these things are directed by Wisdom superior to man's ought to console us under all the disagreeables of life. You wrote me a letter some years past that in trouble you always rejoiced yourself in your God. I wish it now may be your recourse, if so, you cannot be unhappy in the most abject situation. I have not anything interesting to communicate. We are all well.

I remain your Affectionate mother,

L. B. [Lucy O. Briggs]

P. S. Charles is here waiting for more favorable times for the Sailor he has been taken, carried into St. Christopher, came home in a vessel from New London.

An uncle, Thomas Otis, brother of Dr. Cushing Otis and Lucy Otis Briggs, was in England at this time, and wrote to his nephew as follows:

Mr. Thomas Briggs, Prison Ship *Bahama*, Chatham.

DEAR THOMAS: — Your last letter I received yesterday only — some friend must have taken it out of the Dead Letter office in London and forwarded it to me. I commiserate your situation although I can't approve of the Cause in which you were embarked. There is every prospect of a Peace this summer; when you will get your pardon, if you do not before by exchange of Prisoners. I have letters from the U. S. to Jan'y 22d — all friends are well. I shall return to America in a few days, you will accept the inclosed five Pounds (£5)

And Believe me your
Affectionate Uncle,
THOMAS OTIS.

Liverpool, Feb. 19, 1814.

P. S. Your first letter has never come to hand.

In answer to a letter addressed by Maj. F. H. Briggs of Boston (who died a few years ago) to the Admiralty Bureau at London, the following was received:

The Admiralty Librarian presents his compliments to Mr. Frank H. Briggs and begs to state that the accompanying particulars of one Thomas Briggs have been extracted from the Records (in the custody of the Public Record Office, Chancery

Dear Thomas

Your last letter letter I received yesterday only - Some friends must have taken it out of the Dead letter office & send it and forwarded it to me - I commendable your situation although I can't approve of the cause in which you were embarked - This is very prospect of a Peace this summer when you will get your freedom - If you do not before by discharge of business, I have letters from the 1st. to July 22 - all friends are well - I shall return to America in a few days, you will make the enclosed give bonds

and believe me yours
Wm. Briggs July 14. 1844 Affectionate Uncle

Thomas Otis

Your first letter has now come to hand

LETTER TO THOMAS BRIGGS FROM HIS UNCLE, THOMAS OTIS

(See page 364)

Lane, London, W. C.) of the Prisoners of War during the period named in Mr. Briggs' letter of the 13th instant. The practical agreement in the matter of the dates given in the attached memorandum and those quoted by Mr. Briggs points to the individual referred to in both cases being one and the same.

THOMAS BRIGGS, Seaman of the "Julian Smith," Privateer, (Commander, Henry Cooper), captured by the "Nymph," 12th May 1813; received at Halifax, 18th May 1813; transferred to England, 9th November 1813, in H. M. S. "Success." Released from Dartmoor, 15th June 1815.

Born, Massachusetts;
Age, 26;
Height, 5, 6¼;
Person, Medium size;
Visage, Round and dark;
Hair, Brown;
Eyes, Blue;
No. in Dartmoor Prison Register, 4456.

Thomas Briggs died in South Scituate (1936, Norwell, Mass.) 29 Aug. 1861.

Capt. James D. Edgar, United States Army, retired, wrote in "The Military Surgeon" of Mar. 1927:

The War of 1812 is important in the political history of the United States, as it definitely changed the loose confederation of the thirteen colonies into a united nation. The Revolution brought freedom to the colonies, the War of 1812 created a central government.

The military history of the war is disappointing. The chief cause of this was the organization of the army, which had been dictated by the policy that kept each state independent and jealous of its neighbor. Under a pacifist president, the regular army was abolished, and reliance for defence was placed in a militia controlled by the state governments. This militia was officered by political favorites.

Consequently, with overwhelming numbers in our favor, we suffered a series of the most disgraceful defeats in our history. Instead of seizing Canada in a few months, as President Madison predicted, we were invaded and our capital was burnt. Only the victories of the naval forces saved the country from disintegration. During the war, over half a million militia were raised,

but, through mismanagement, failed to subdue the British forces of twenty-five thousand.

As a result of defeats, both the army and the civil administration were criticised. So intense was the popular feeling that the veterans of this war had difficulty in securing pensions and were never treated with the respect shown to survivors of the Revolution.

Less than twenty years after the Treaty of Ghent, which terminated hostilities between the United States and Great Britain, Rev. Samuel Deane wrote of the conflict, as follows:

The war which was declared against England June 18, 1812, and which was terminated by the Treaty of Ghent, December 1814, had its theatre remote from New England principally, and was scarcely felt by the people of this Town [Scituate] save by the privations which were sustained in the interruption of business, and in the scarcity of foreign articles of produce. . . . The war was conducted chiefly by soldiers voluntarily enlisted. . . . It is too recent and too well known to be related as history at this time that a majority of the citizens of this Town and of New England did not agree to the necessity of this war; and at its close did not believe that any advantage had been gained, which might not have been gained by negotiation without the war: and on the other hand the majority of Congress and of the citizens of the United States, declared the war to be just and necessary. . . . France and England were at war. In their struggle they paid but little regard to the rights of neutral nations. England with her thousand ships of war blockaded many of the ports of France; and France declared England to be blockaded without any naval force. . . . England retaliated in kind, and both powers made prize of American vessels with little regard to neutral rights. In addition to this there was another and more irritating grievance of which the United States complained against England. England alleged that many of her own seamen had fraudulently obtained certificates of protection as American citizens in the American merchant service, which was true beyond doubt. The common artifice practiced in such cases was to purchase these certificates of American seamen and adopt their names. England feeling herself strong in her right to the services of her own citizens in time of war, proceeded to search American vessels wherever they were met with, and in reclaiming British seamen, the officers were not very accurate in making distinctions,

so that it sometimes happened that American seamen were impressed. These subjects of irritation were agitated with increasing violence from 1806 to 1812, when the United States proceeded to declare war.

The War of 1812 was considered by the people of Scituate as greatly detrimental to their interests, and they would rather have overlooked the aggressions of England than suffer the hardships of a state of war. It interrupted business generally and stopped their shipbuilding, drove their vessels into the harbor, raised the price of all the necessities of life — flour rose to \$18 a barrel, corn to over \$2 a bushel and other provisions in like proportion. For these reasons not many soldiers enlisted. The feeling against those who might be in any way responsible for the war was very strong, and showed itself in the treatment received by Col. Charles Turner on his return from Washington. He was member of Congress from that district, and the only member from Massachusetts who had voted for the war. This raised such a furor of indignation that his fellow townsmen of Scituate avoided all intercourse with him, and upon his going to Plymouth he was mobbed in the streets of that old seaport.

The war was brought home to Scituate as early as the spring of 1812, when the British man-of-war *Bulwark* was anchored off Scituate Harbor for several weeks, and repeatedly sent demands on shore for fresh meat and vegetables, which the people disliked to furnish. Many cattle were saved at this time by hiding them in the woods away from the shore, until the enemy sailed away. On the early morning of 11 June 1814 two barges manned by marines came into the harbor and set fire to the shipping, and ten fishing and coasting vessels were lost. Rev. Nehemiah Thomas, says Deane, had the resolution immediately to go on board the *Bulwark* from which the tenders had come, and to request of the commander a candid declaration what further violence might be proposed, and received the assurance that nothing further was intended, after their having destroyed the vessels, which might bring some revenue to

the government. In consequence of this and of the frequent presence of English vessels off the coast, the militia was mustered and marched to the shore and men were drafted for duty on the coast guard.

Col. John B. Barstow's (Hanover) regiment was stationed for a short time on Cedar Point, at the entrance to Scituate Harbor. In this way many served for weeks and months, as the shore and river were constantly guarded, from the time of the burning of the shipping until the close of the war a few months later, but no encounter took place. On account of these services, for which some men were drafted and some volunteered, many men of Scituate and their widows received bounty lands.

The coasting vessel *Rosebud*, Capt. Nehemiah Manson, was carried off by the *La Hogue*, but was afterwards returned. As the enemy did not appear in sufficient numbers to indicate another raid on the village, discipline relaxed as time went on. Scituate lighthouse, at the extremity of Cedar Point, had been authorized by act of Congress on 1 May 1810 with an appropriation of \$4,000. Its first keeper was Capt. Simeon Bates, who lived with his wife and family in a substantial dwelling attached to the tower. When on duty, the detachment of Colonel Barstow's regiment made the lighthouse its headquarters for observation and storage for equipment, but the relaxed discipline found the guard oftentimes absent. On one such occasion, 1 Sept. 1814, the *La Hogue* appeared again off shore and anchored near the lighthouse. Two American girls in their teens, Nabby and Becky Bates, daughters of the keeper, watched proceedings; they saw the troops preparing to disembark from the man-of-war, which meant that further damage was in store for the little port. Taking the fife and drum of the absent soldiers, which the two girls had amused themselves with by learning to play, they concealed themselves among the cedar trees which at that time covered the point. Becky began playing "Yankee Doodle" on the fife, while Nabby beat the drum. Two boats packed with British soldiers had covered about half the distance between their ship and the shore when the roll of the drum and the strains of

"Yankee Doodle" from the fife called the soldiers to arms. Seeing nothing, but fearing that a large detachment of soldiers was ready to attack the invading force, the commander-in-chief, watching from the frigate, became alarmed, and, by the firing of a gun, recalled the boats. The *La Hogue* hoisted her sails and left the harbor. A British man-of-war and its force of soldiers had been routed by two quick-witted American girls. This story, called "The Army of Two," has been told and retold many times in various papers and periodicals, but it will never fail to cause a thrill in the hearts of the people of Scituate as long as the lighthouse stands a monument to the memory of Abigail and Rebecca Bates.

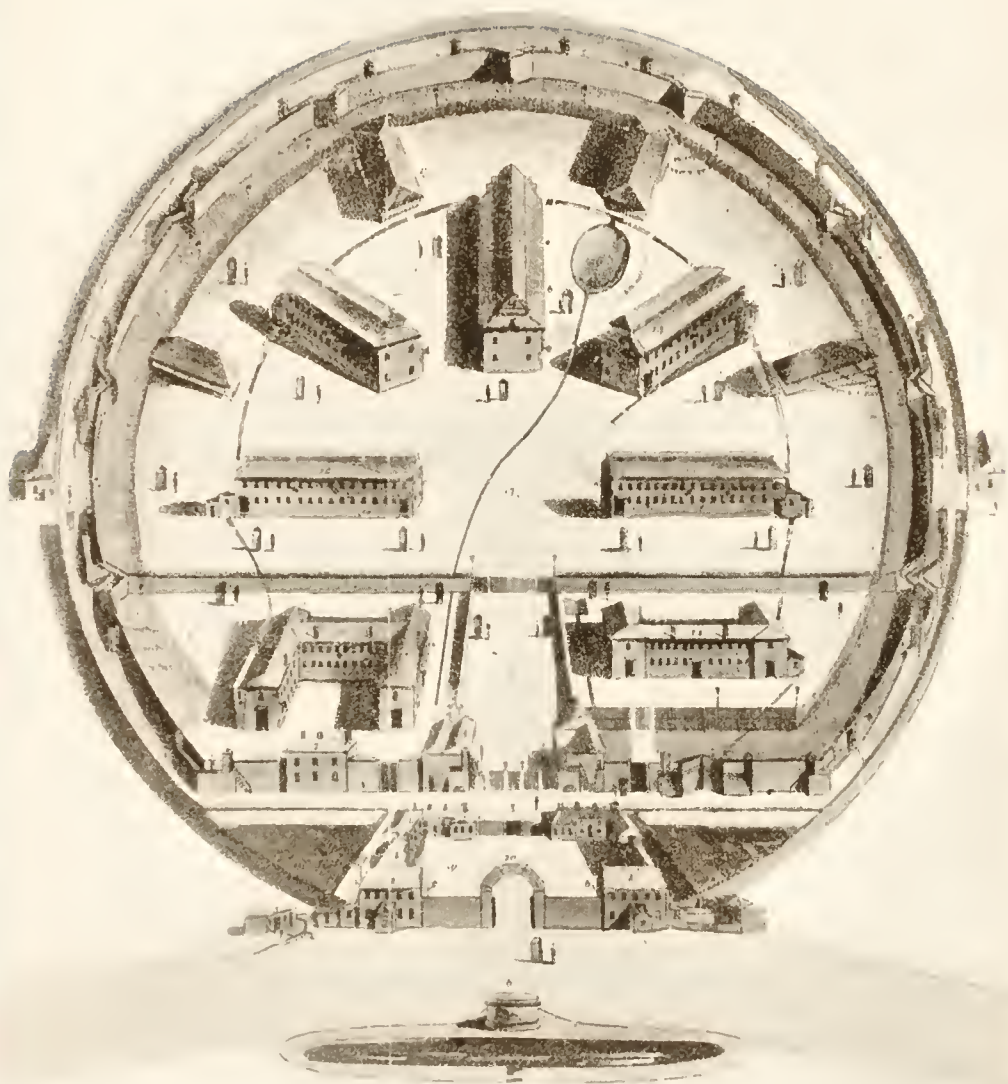
When war was declared, 18 June 1812, the regular army had only 6,700 men, with 130 medical officers; 480,000 militia were called, with 1,429 medical officers, — an average of 3 doctors to each 1,000 men. The volunteer army (militia) was composed of indolent men who could find no other employment. Lack of training made sanitation impossible; dysentery was rife, also measles, rheumatism and pneumonia, the last in the civil population as well as in the army. In 1814 typhus, typhoid, spinal meningitis and spotted fever appeared.

From "A Journal of a Young Man of Massachusetts," a surgeon on board an American privateer out of Salem, published in Boston in 1816, we can follow in large measure the fortunes of Thomas Briggs as a prisoner at Melville Island, Halifax, on the prison ships *Samson* and *Bahama*, at Chatham, England, and finally at Dartmoor Prison. This young surgeon was captured at sea by the British in May 1813.

He stated that 6,250 American seamen had been pressed into British service since 1755, and that politics had much to do with the fact that our prisoners were not exchanged. Many of the prisoners at first believed that Federalism was the politics of a gentleman and that Republicanism was the low cant of the vulgar; and that those who represented the Federalists — Governor Strong, H. G. Otis, John Lowell and Francis Blake — were men of talent, knowledge, piety and virtue; while Thomas Jefferson,

Jim Madison, John Adams and Colonel Munroe were of the vulgar type. But the poor prisoners were disillusioned when the Federalists turned a deaf ear to their appeals!

The writer then goes on to tell of his life at Melville Prison, Halifax, and on board the prison ships. He describes in much detail, and his dates coincide with those of Thomas Briggs, the lack of ventilation; the dirt and filth of the quarters in which the prisoners were confined at Halifax; the severity of the winter months with great lack of fuel; and the custom of mustering and parading them in all sorts of weather, even in snowstorms; and of the poor quality of food served to them. He tells of an attempt at organization among the American prisoners of war to promote a certain amount of law and order among themselves, and for the amelioration of the conditions under which they were forced to exist. If the spirited Americans refused to work they were stripped to the waist and whipped; if they attempted to escape they were whipped; and if a third time any attempted anything so bold he was hanged or shot. Dr. R. Hamilton, in his "Duties as a Regimental Surgeon," Vol. 2, pages 22-82, writes of the "stench" from suppuration that followed after seven or sometimes eight hundred lashes. Sentences of from four hundred to one thousand lashes were given by relays of men and spread over days or weeks, according to the condition of the prisoner or pressed seamen. Men were also punished by being sent to the Black Hole — floating dungeons — at Dartmoor. The allowance on the prison ships per week was oatmeal porridge in the morning, four and one-half pounds of bread, two and one-quarter pounds of beef or pork, one and one-quarter pounds of flour, and a watery soup made of dried peas. The bread usually was full of worms. There were filth and myriads of fleas and often vermin. The prisoners longed for pennyroyal to disperse the fleas. After over a year as a prisoner at Halifax and on the prison ships our surgeon and the other prisoners were ordered on 2 Oct. 1814, to "pick up their duds" and they were taken in the *Leyden* (transport) to Plymouth



DARTMOOR PRISON, ENGLAND, WHERE THOMAS BRIGGS AND OTHER PRISONERS
WERE CONFINED FROM 8 OCT. 1814 TO 15 JUNE 1815

This plan found among the effects of Thomas Briggs

Harbor. After a week in Plymouth Harbor 200 were drafted to be sent to Dartmoor Prison. Our surgeon says:

After we left the streets we found the road extremely dusty — we were surrounded by soldiers. Before we had walked the 15 miles to Dartmoor it began to rain so that when we arrived we looked as if we had been wallowing in the mud. We marched 9 miles before being allowed a rest. We arrived at the Prison after dark. Entering, we found ourselves jammed in with a multitude who were cursing, hallooing and shouting. For a moment I thought I had died and was actually in the regions of the damned. We passed a horrid night sleeping on the cold, damp and mouldy stones. Scotch mist or rain reigns for two-thirds of the year. Rabbits cannot live on these moors and birds fly from them. Captain Shortland, a brutal officer, was in charge. Hammocks were swung, but the roof leaked so badly our beds were generally wet.

Lights were ordered out at 8 o'clock, and if a light was discovered later the guard would fire amongst us. Several of our men were thus shot.

In December 1814, there were 350 American prisoners of war in Dartmoor Prison, besides French and negroes. There was no small degree of intoxication, and generally carousing and rioting among the prisoners, for which men were sent to the Black Hole for ten days or flogged.

It was Captain Shortland who ordered his soldiers to fire among our unarmed Americans during and after a riot, which had followed their unavailing remonstrance against the poor food and terrible conditions. Thirty-five were killed or wounded. The British government, on investigation, declared it to be a slaughter and unwarranted, but that did not bring back the men who were killed and who to this day lie with many others who died during their incarceration and are buried at Dartmoor.

Dartmoor Prison is located near the small town of Princetown in Devonshire. The prison was built about 1810, at an expense of £20,000, to hold French prisoners of war. Although Princetown is 1,400 feet above the sea, and is said to be the highest town in England, perhaps a more healthy spot might have been selected. Dartmoor, originally a

forest, is now one of the wildest and most barren wastes in England, about 20 miles long and 14 broad. The Prison is 15 miles from Plymouth and 7 from Tavistock. The structure is of stone from the neighboring fields, very little timber being used in the buildings. The prisoners of war were universally clothed and fed at the expense of the government. They wore a yellow uniform, occasionally striped with blue, to render their escape impracticable. They elected a president from their own body, through whom all complaints were made and grievances redressed. The president inspected the meat, bread, vegetables and other necessities furnished by contractors, and represented to the agent should any be unfit for use. He also kept peace within the prison and promulgated the agent's regulations. At the termination of hostilities, the prisoners of war who survived were restored to their countries and families, and Dartmoor Prison was used for the incarceration of the most desperate convicts. This arrangement was of great pecuniary advantage to the nation, not only on account of the convicts' work, but also in the saving of the cost of transporting the convicts abroad. The foundation was laid in 1806. The motto over the massive gate, which was erected for the original building, reads, "Parcere subjectis."

I have visited the prison twice, once in 1900, in company with Edward Bowditch of Albany and Boston, and later with my wife and son. On the first visit we stopped at the Duchy Hotel at Princeton, where one portly English servant, with a long white apron and a red face, did all the honors. On the sideboard was a great roast of beef and a carving knife; on each side of the roast were vegetables in covered Sheffield silver dishes, kept warm by hot water placed beneath them. We served ourselves, and also helped ourselves to beer from a little keg placed beneath the sideboard; anything stronger was served by the waiter. The beds were featherbeds, and the house was anything but clean. Before leaving London I had called on the Home Secretary and represented to him that I wished to visit the prison where my great-great-uncle was confined as prisoner-

of-war in 1812. He gave me a card to the Governor, which I presented at the Governor's House, opposite the entrance to Dartmoor Prison. The Governor sent for an officer to show us about and to look up the records, and learn in just what building Thomas Briggs was confined. All this took time. The officer took us to the different parts of the Prison, and on the way to the building where Thomas Briggs lived we passed through other buildings in one of which were some men waiting to receive the eat-o'-nine-tails. They had been sentenced to Dartmoor, and were to receive so many lashes according to the offence for which they had been convicted. There were three steel bars set up like stacked guns, spread at the bottom, and meeting at the top. The legs of the prisoners were spread out on two of these bars, to which they were bound, and their hands reached round those two and over the third, where they were also bound. The officer designated to whip these prisoners was hard at work when we went through, whipping one while the others looked on. It was not pleasant to see the knotted lash of buckthorn (sometimes they use a knotted rope) descend upon the man's back, immediately bringing great welts — and from the appearance of some of the men already whipped, some of the strokes had brought blood.

It was in this place that Thomas Briggs was confined from 8 Oct. 1814 to 15 June 1815, when peace was signed between England and the United States of America, and the war was ended. He was on the prison ships and in prisons from 12 May 1813 to 15 June 1815, when he was finally released, although peace had been declared six months earlier.

The military history of this war is disappointing. It recounts a series of defeats for the Americans during the first year, especially in their invasions of Canada, but Generals Scott and Jackson, at Niagara in 1814 and at New Orleans in 1815, gallantly repulsed the British forces just before peace was signed. The brilliant naval victories of Captain Hull, Commodore Decatur and Commodore Perry more than retrieved the honor of the country in the early

stages of the war. Its unwritten history consists of the activities of the many privateers sent out along the coast to prey upon English commerce. Boston, Salem, Newburyport, Marblehead and Nantucket sent out many privateers. It has been said that "certain stately old mansions in Marblehead, Salem and Newburyport rose suddenly in 1815. The wealth of Bristol prizes is in their oaken frames." Salem was the port that led in the privateering. A sea chest of old records, labelled "Prize Records, 1812," uncarthed from the dim attic of a certain public building in 1909, yielded material for an article in the "Boston Transcript" of March 6 of that year, which was full of interesting and amusing anecdotes of successful prize taking. Not all of them were successful, as we see in the histories of Thomas Briggs and his brother Charles.

In 1793 Washington issued his proclamation of neutrality in the war between France and England. Such a number of privateers had been fitted out, especially from Massachusetts, that Gen. Henry Knox wrote from the War Department 16 Aug. 1793 to Governor Hancock that it was directed by the President that no vessel fitted out as a cruiser or privateer was to have asylum in any part of the United States, and that Governor Hancock was to secure any prizes brought in by these vessels for the purpose of restoring them to their former owners. (See "History of Cabot Family.")

DEBORAH C. BRIGGS, the only *daughter* of Thomas Barker Briggs and Lucy Otis Briggs, never married. Dr. Cushing Otis' wife was Abigail Cushing, a daughter of Judge Nathan Cushing, whose service to his country during the Revolution and the reconstruction days that followed was almost as distinguished as that of his cousin William, the Chief Justice. As Judge of Admiralty in 1776, Nathan Cushing condemned the captured British vessels, and thereby became especially noted as a patriot. In 1789 he was appointed Judge of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, which office he resigned in 1801.

About the time of Dr. Otis' death, Deborah C. Briggs was teaching in the district school, which stood near her



COLORED DRAWING BY THOMAS BRIGGS OF HIS CAPTURE IN MAY, 1813

(See page 363)



DEBORAH C. BRIGGS, DAUGHTER OF
THOMAS BARKER AND LUCY OTIS BRIGGS



ABIGAIL T. OTIS, DAUGHTER OF
DR. CUSHING AND ABIGAIL C. OTIS

uncle's house, beside the large elm tree in the field east of "The May Elms" (the residence of Mrs. Arthur L. Power in 1936), and was living in her uncle's family, as shown by a letter of Dr. Otis to his daughter Abigail. (See Otis.) The Rev. Samuel J. May, whose interest in the schools of the town was becoming manifest at that period, was then occupying "The May Elms," which received its name from the beautiful trees which he planted about it. The sudden death of Dr. Cushing Otis in 1837 left Mrs. Otis and her only child, Abigail Tilden Otis, quite alone and in need of the companionship of Deborah, Abigail's cousin, who went to live with them.

Mrs. Otis died in 1852, and from that time Deborah became actually the head of the household, directing its movements and largely its policies until her death in 1875. Miss Abigail T. Otis had considerable property, and at her death in 1884, having no nearer relatives than second cousins, she made generous bequests to the town of South Scituate, the First Parish Church, and the James Library, and apportioned the rest of her property among her "next of kin," — Cushings, Otises and Briggses. The following correspondence of Deborah C. Briggs and Abigail T. Otis mentions many of their friends.

LETTER ADDRESSED TO MISS DEBBY BRIGGS, SCITUATE, MASS.

MIDDLETOWN Nov. 30th '23. Sunday eve 9.

We are quite alone this eve^s My dear Debby, I have been walking the room pondering on the past, present, & Future & faneying you seated in the little back room at home or mayhap at the good Dr's reading a sermon or some moral essay 'till I am determined to interrupt you with a little of my chat — cousin Henry* leaves us to-morrow & so good an opportunity must not pass tho' I've nothing of great interest to communicate save that I'm well but methinks I've heard you say, trifles are interesting from a friend so trifles you shall have. Our ride from Scituate was as pleasant as it could be in the Commodore's† vehiele — as far as Cohasset. We were almost jolted to death in his pleasure waggon or whatever you please to call it tho' he wondered

* Capt. Henry Bowers.

† Commodore Ezekiel Jones.

we should not prefer it to the stage as it was by far the genteelst — about 3 we reached President Adams' — next morning after breakfast took the stage and got to Boston at 11 — staid at Mrs. Codman's. I was quite disappointed not to see the Dr. & Caroline in the eveg. but was very willing to believe the rain prevented. Sunday morning I attended St. Paul's and in the afternoon, Brattle St., in the eveng. met a number of our friends. Monday took tea with Mrs. Sheafe,* it seemed strange indeed not to see the girls about as usual. Tuesday we dined at Mrs. Aylwin's† & that seemed stranger still however she did the honours of her table &c. extremely well, the week before had the bridal party there to dine & everything they told me was in complete order — Wednesday eve^s we were at a larger & very pleasant party at Mrs. Cary's — their houses are furnished elegantly — their prospects bright & apparently enjoying all the happiness allotted to mortals — not that I would insinuate a fine house and splendid apartments designate happiness — far from it — my opinion is — but you know my opinion and it were useless to repeat it. The following Saturday proved a fine sunshiny day & at 9 in the morning we bade adieu for Providence that place of all others I am most attached to — among the passengers was a Mr. Newman who was very polite & attentive to us — indeed one need not dread riding in the stage alone for a day for generally if not always there is at least *one* gentleman who will attend to you — there was also a Miss Livermore who said she was a public exhorter & teacher & felt greatly interested in the salvation of her fellow mortals — said while in Boston she met with one Dr. Otis‡ & considering him rather a worldly man fond of money &c. thought it her duty to converse with him & afterwards heard that he said “how crazy that woman is — why, she is just like my sister Betsey” — she laughed & I need not tell you it set me a *giggling* — had another crazy passenger, a Frenchman, who insisted upon it I was his wife's sister & I was fearful before we got to our journey's end he would take me for his *wife* — when we reached the hotel in Providence he had no idea of leaving the stage but finally consented to provided Mr. Newman would let him know if I *was* his wife's sister — found all well at cousin Hoppin's§ — after tea had two

* Mrs. Henry Sheafe (Mary Cushing).

† Mother of William Aylwin.

‡ Dr. Cushing Otis.

§ Hannah (Cushing) Hoppin.

youths to see me — Mr Smith & Thompson — the next evening my two cousin Wetmores, Susan Miles, Mary Ann Hoppin, Miss Carrington from here took tea with us together with a few beaux by way of variety — Monday I was at a party, Tuesday Mrs. Lloyd Bowers gave a large party Wednesday we dined at Mr. Wetmore's and took tea at Mr. Carrington's Thursday cousin Esther gave a party — among the other gents was Mr. Potter just from N. York who told me he shook hands with Mama the day before at noon — that she was well & returned from Cayuga on Tuesday. Friday we spent the day at Mr. Carringtons — at 7 Miss Miles & Hoppin left for N. York. I went with others on board the steamboat with them. Saturday were at a delightful party at Mrs. Thompson's; Sunday morning Miss Smith, Miss Carrington Mr. S. & myself went to Quaker meeting — we were not much edified however, for the spirit moved but one man & he had better have *set still* — in the eve^s had numerous farewell calls & Monday morn^s about 8 took leave of our dear friends at Providence and dined at Mr. Thompson's at Pomfret; staid till the next afternoon & left highly gratified with our visit — came to Coventry to lodge 16 miles beyond Hartford — next morning came to H. dined at Mr. Wadsworth's in company with Mr. & Mrs. Hudson & a Mr. & Mrs. Clerc both deaf & dumb but a most intelligent interesting couple. Mr. C. is principal of the Asylum at Hartford — if your unele [Thomas Otis] is still at S. tell him I had the pleasure of seeing *Miss Terry* — she was quite well & looked charmingly — we came from there in 2 hours & $\frac{1}{4}$ & I can truly say I regretted when our journey ended for we had an excellent driver, horses & carriage & came along delightfully — found Aunt Bowers' cousin Henry, Wm. and my friend Miss Miles here to welcome us. The next eve^s I was at a party at Mrs. McDonough's — sat near some candles & unfortunately caught my hair & flowers afire — it felt rather *hot* but whether my *brains suffered materially* I leave you to determine — last Wednesday we dined at Mr. Walcott's. Thursday was Thanksgiving Mrs. Cooper & family dined here. Friday we pass'd at Mrs. Severs had a pleasant little party in the eve^s — yesterday took tea at Mrs. Cooper's — thus you see we keep it up — in a fortnight or less I leave for N. York to spend the winter — expect Abby will meet me there in the spring — have heard from her several times since I saw you — she writes she is quite well. Make my love acceptable to your good Mother, Aunt Betsey, Aunt Otis & Aunt Foster & Charlotte — also to Mrs. Lucy Cushing, Hannah Caroline &

Ruth*, I hope you will all pass a pleasant winter & that we shall meet in the spring in good health & spirits — I thought of you & *Mr. Fogg's hall* Thanksgiving eve^s — did you attend — what kind of a time had you? & who was the belle & beau? Do write me by first opportunity for be assured it will gratify & give great pleasure to

Your affectionate

ANN (HAMMETT).†

Aunt Cushing & Bowers desire to be remembered to your Mother. Wm. says "give my love to Debby"

I find in a letter of earlier date, from Mary L. Smith of Weston, Mass., to Miss Caroline Foster, Scituate, Mass., a reference to the mode of travel in those days.

DECEMBER 28th 1820.

DEAR CAROLINE: — . . . I expect ere this you have learn't an account of my tour from Hanover here [Weston]. *I was on board the Packet from half past 8 A.M. till the late hour of 5 P.M.* then I was disappointed the next day in taking the stage and I was obliged to pass the Sabbath in Boston. Monday Eve. I again met the embraces of my friends and enjoy their company with much delight, but often wish for an opportunity of exchanging a few words with you or some other friend from Scituate; but my hours do not pass tedious, neither are they engrossed in parties but moderately employed in domestic concerns. I have attended two parties. . . . I am reading Scotts family Bible which I think is superior to any thing I ever read. . . .

ABBY T. OTIS TO MISS DEBORAH C. BRIGGS, SOUTH SCITUATE

JANUARY 18th 1839

MY DEAR COUSIN: — I wish you a happy New Year. We heard from you by the way of *Mr. Henry Wood*; *he is a good looking young man*. I hope you enjoyed yourself at Kingston and Middleborough. *Mrs. Paine, Mrs. Aylwin Mrs. Bacon Mrs. Humphrey, Mrs. Sumner Mrs. Galen James Mrs. Livingston Mrs. Lindsey Mrs. Hurlburt Mrs. Dr. Otis Miss I. H. Barnes Mrs. Leland Miss Sarah Phillips two of the Misses Otis Miss Sarah Doll Miss Ann Bacon*. We have passed a pleasant day at Aunt Dolls

* Mrs. Christopher Cushing, Hannah Barker Briggs, Caroline and Ruth Cushing (daughters of Deacon Thomas C.).

† Daughter of William Hammett who at one time lived in the Judge Cushing home and was a neighbor of the Briggs family.

drank tea at Mrs. Phillips's I drank tea at Deacon Loring's Christmas day. *Mr. C. Nash Mr. Chase Mr. Isaac Cushing.* Christmas Eve we went into Church. Christmas day we went to Trinity, the Churches were dressed prettily. I have been to a wedding at the Trinity *Miss Sarah Tilden was the bride and Mr. Burroughs the bridegroom.* There have been 5 fairs this Winter I have been to 3. *Mr. Joseph Tilden and Mr. Dana Tilden* have called here *Mr. and Mrs. Odiorne* also *Mary Stetson* called at the door the other day. *Catherine* has been very sick this Winter she is better now *Sally Otis* and I rode over to call on *Mrs. Walter Robbins* day before yesterday she lives on Charlestown Neck a few doors from *Mr. Francis Turner's* I called to see Mrs. Turner. We went over in the 3 o'clock hourly and came back in the 5 o'clock. *Miss Emily Kidder* is going to Virginia in the Spring to be a private teacher she is to be boarded and have a salary of 300 hundred dollars if she has 12 or less than that number of scholars but if she has a greater number 400. *What enterprising girls those Kidders are.* I am sorry to hear such bad news from Mr. Sewall bu(t) rejoiced at Mrs Brooks good fortune. I am glad to hear good news from Mrs. Sarah Nash. I hope she will meet with no mishap. Mr. Silas Brooks has rather hot work has he not? We dined at Aunt Otis's yesterday they are well. James and Theodore are engaged to a party next Thursday night at a Mr. Curtis's in Summer street the billet came yesterday while we were there.

29th Mr. James called yesterday and left your letter I am glad you had pleasant visits I supposed you had returned when I commenced this letter but I understand you did not return till last Saturday. I went to the Antislavery meetings at the Marlborough Mother went to one of them there was one at Faneuil Hall, I did not attend that I was quite amused at the Meetings there were two parties one in favour of political action the other not, it was a debate. *Sally Otis and I called at Mrs. David Stetson's* a week ago last Saturday they are all well and at Mrs. Josiah Stetson's also. Mr. Swett preached for Mr. Barrett last Sunday afternoon he preaches very well. Mr. Walcott preached a week go last Sunday afternoon. Mr. Sewall I hear thinks he shall be able by exchanging and preaching old sermons to remain in Scituate and resume writing again in 3 or four months. It is a delightful evening. Mother and I have been in to Sarah Ann Cushing's this evening. 30. It snows so I cannot go to the Temperance Meeting to-day. *Mrs. Robert G. Shaw had a party three weeks ago*

of 550 she gave out 700 hundred invitations she was dressed in a black velvet trimmed with white lace and a silver lace turban. Dr. Otis and his wife were at one of Mrs. Barrymore's Cotillion Parties a short time since. The Misses Otis are well and so is Mrs. Goodrieh. Mother called to see her the other day. There was a wedding at Graee Church the other morning Were a good many there I was one of the number I saw the lady(s) sister married in 1827. I should like to see you very much but such cold I cannot go down. Mother sends her love to you. Caroline sends her love says she wants to see you very much and wishes you a happy New Year. I send love also.

Your affectionate cousin

ABBY T. OTIS

59. ENOS⁵ BRIGGS (36. Seth⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹), born in Pembroke 29 July 1746, was baptized in the Second Church of Scituate by the Rev. Nathaniel Eells 7 Sept. 1746. He served his apprenticeship at the Brick Kiln shipyard with his father and brothers, and built there until 1789, when he went to Salem, and removed his family to that place in July 1791. His shipyard was located at South Salem, where, between 1791 and 1818, he built over fifty vessels, the largest being 850 tons, the smallest, 96 tons.

On 3 May 1789 Enos Briggs launched a vessel sideways from Derby's Wharf, Salem, and on 18 May 1791, at Salem, he launched the ship *Grand Turk*, of which he was the principal architect. The most noted vessel built by him was the frigate *Essex*, 32 guns, built in 1798-99. There were no good iron workers nearer than the North River, and Enos Briggs sent for his brother, Alden Briggs, to do the iron work on her, he being considered one of the best iron workers of his day. Enos' brother, Elisha Briggs, also worked on the *Essex*, and while she was building, George Washington, then in Salem, visited the yard. General Washington took a treenail from Elisha and helped build the vessel by driving it into its place. ("Shipbuilding on North River.")

The "American Merchant Marine," by Marvin, gives a very interesting account of the building of the Frigate

Essex. It is too long to quote in full, but I extract the following:

. . . She was the fastest and handsomest vessel in the United States Navy and a dozen years after she first flew the flag of her country she won immortal renown under Captain David Porter. There is hardly a full-rigged ship afloat today as small as the *Essex*, and in tonnage many modern three-masted schooners can equal or surpass her. Yet her name is one of the most illustrious in the list of a navy which bears also those of the *Constitution*, the *Hartford*, the *Kearsarge* and the *Olympia*.

It was the maritime war with France at the end of the eighteenth century which caused the building of the *Essex*. When American commerce was being harried unto death by the frigates and privateers — men of “the Terrible Republic,” as our sailors called France, our shadow of a navy was wholly helpless to resist, or to protect its nation’s shipping. At length, in 1797, Congress authorized the construction of the three famous frigates, *Constitution*, *Constellation* and *United States*, to fight for American seamen’s rights. . . . But when John Adams preached the necessity of resorting to arms, the country was too poor to create a navy adequate for defense. Forthwith the merchants whose ships were being destroyed in squadrons by French piracy offered to contribute their private fund to build a fleet of frigates that should reinforce the few naval vessels in commission or authorized. . . . At Salem, Elias Haskett Derby and William Gray, the two foremost shipping merchants of the town, led the subscription list with the sum of ten thousand dollars each, and in a few weeks \$74,700 had been raised in contributions. . . . Captain Joseph Waters was appointed General Agent, and Enos Briggs, a shipbuilder of Salem, was selected as master builder.

The “Master Builder” inserted this advertisement in the “Essex Gazette”:

THE SALEM FRIGATE

Take Notice

To the Sons of Freedom! All true lovers of Liberty of your Country. Step forward and give your assistance in building the frigate to oppose French insolence and piracy. Let every man in possession of a white oak tree be ambitious to be foremost in hurrying down the timber to Salem, where the noble structure is to be fabricated to maintain your rights upon the seas and make

the name of America respected among the nations of the world. Your largest and longest trees are wanted, and the arms of them for knees and rising timber. Four trees are wanted for the keel, which altogether will measure 146 feet in length, and hew 16 inches square. Please to call on the subscriber, who wants to make contracts for large or small quantities as may best suit and will pay the ready cash.

ENOS BRIGGS.

SALEM, November 23, 1798.

So enthusiastic was the response to the call for material that Master Builder Enos Briggs was obliged to have this advertisement printed:

THE SALEM FRIGATE

Through the medium of the "Gazette" the subscriber pays his acknowledgements to the good people of the county of Essex for their spirited exertions in bringing down the trees of the forest for building the Frigate. In the short space of four weeks the complement of timber has been furnished. Those who have contributed to their country's defense are invited to come forward and receive the reward of their patriotism. They are informed that with permission of a kind Providence who hath hitherto favored the undertaking —

Next September is the time
When we shall launch her from the strand
And our cannon load and prime
With tribute due to Tallyrand.

ENOS BRIGGS.

SALEM, Jan. 1, 1799.

The great timbers of the ship's hull were cut in the wood lots of Danvers, Peabody, Beverly and other near-by towns of Essex County and hauled through the snowy streets of Salem on sleds drawn by slow-moving oxen, while the people cheered them as they passed. The keel of the frigate was laid on the 13th of Apr. 1799, and she was launched five months and seventeen days later, on the 30th of Sept., Master Builder Briggs saving his reputation as a prophet by the narrowest possible margin.

The *Essex* was a Salem ship from keel to truck. Her cordage was made in three rope walks. Capt. Jonathan Haraden, the most famous Salem privateersman of the Revolution, made the mainmast at his factory in Brown Street. Joseph Vincent fitted out the foremast, and Thomas Briggs, brother of Enos, Elisha and Daniel, the mizzenmast in their rigging lofts at the foot of the Common. When the huge hemp cables were ready to be carried to the frigate, the workmen who had made them conveyed them to the shipyard on their shoulders, the procession led by a fife and drum. Her sails were cut from duck woven for the purpose at Daniel Rust's factory in Broad Street, and her iron work was forged by the Salem shipsmiths. Six months before she slid into the harbor her white oak timbers were standing in the woodlands of Massachusetts. . . .

. . . In describing the launching, the "Salem Gazette" is quoted as saying:

. . . The unremitting zeal of Mr. Briggs, the architect of this beautiful ship, cannot be too highly applauded. His assiduity in bringing her into a state of such perfection in so short a time entitles him to the grateful thanks of his Country, and we fondly hope his labors have not been spent in vain, for we may truly say that he has not "given rest to the sole of his foot" since her keel was first laid. At least he will have the consolation of reflecting on the important service that he had rendered to his country in this notable undertaking.

The guns of the frigate had been planted on a near-by hill, and as she took the water they thundered a salute which was echoed by the cannon of the merchant vessels in the harbor. This famous frigate, literally built by the American people, their prayers and hopes wrought into every timber of her with the labor of their own hands, cost a trifle less than \$75,000 when turned over to the government. The *Essex* was a large vessel for her time, measuring 850 tons. She was 146 feet in length "over all," while her keel was 118 feet long. Her beam was 37 feet and her depth of hold 12 feet 3 inches. The height between her gun deck and lower deck was only 5 feet 9 inches. Her mainmast was 85 feet long, with a head of 12 feet. Above this was a

topmast 55 feet long with a head of $7\frac{1}{2}$ feet, and towering skyward from her topmast, her topgallant mast of 40 feet, with a head of 15 feet. Her mainyard was 80 feet long.

Rigged as a three-masted ship, with an unusual spread of canvas, the *Essex* must have been a beautiful marine picture when under weigh.

Capt. Richard Derby of Salem had been selected to command her, but he was abroad in one of his own ships and could not return home in time to equip the frigate for active service; therefore Capt. Edward Preble of the navy was offered the command, which he accepted, and hastened to Salem to put his battery and stores aboard and recruit a crew. The battery of the *Essex* consisted of 26 12-pounders on the gun decks; 6 6-pounders on the quarterdeck, — 32 guns in all. During the first cruise at sea Captain Preble recommended to the Secretary of the Navy that 9-pounders replace the 6-pound guns on the quarterdeck which he thought strong enough to bear them, a tribute to honest construction by *Master Builder Enos Briggs*.

In a letter to the Secretary of the Navy, Captain Preble wrote:

I beg leave to recommend Mr. Rufus Low of Cape Ann for Sailing Master of the *Essex*. He has served as captain of a merchant ship for several years and has made several voyages to India and sustains a good reputation. His principal inducement for soliciting this appointment is the injuries he has sustained by the French.

The crew of the *Essex*, officers and men, numbered two hundred and fifty when she went to sea. It was a ship's company of Americans of the English strain who had become native to the soil and cherished at heart a hatred for the mother country as they did the most patriotic ardor for their new republic. In a letter of instruction to Captain Preble, the Secretary of the Navy, Benjamin Stoddard, wrote of the proposed complement of the *Essex*:

Sixty able-bodied seamen, seventy-three ordinary seamen, thirty boys, fifty marines, including officers. Able seamen, \$17 per month, ordinary seamen and boys, \$5 to \$17.

Captain Preble was greatly pleased with the behavior of the frigate on her first trying-out run from Salem to Newport; he wrote from sea to Joseph Waters:

The *Essex* is a good sea boat and sails remarkably fast. She went eleven miles per hour with topgallant sails set and within six points of the wind.

He also wrote the Secretary of the Navy after leaving Newport:

I have the honor to acquaint you that the *Essex* in coming out of the harbor sailed much faster than the *Congress*, and is, I think, in every respect a fine frigate.

From the Cape of Good Hope, on her first deep water cruise, Captain Preble wrote home:

The *Essex* is much admired for the beauty of her construction by the officers of the British Navy.

“Ships and Sailors of Old Salem,” by Ralph D. Paine, tells of the achievements of the *Essex*:

. . . In company with the *Congress*, the *Essex* sailed in January 1800 for Batavia to convoy home a fleet of American merchantmen. Six days out the *Congress* was dismasted in a storm which the *Essex* weathered without damage and proceeded alone as the *first American war vessel to double the Cape of Good Hope*. Ten months later she reached the United States with her merchantmen. The *Essex* had not the good fortune to engage the enemy, for a treaty of peace was signed with France in February 1801.

Captain Preble left the ship because of ill health, and in command of Capt. William Bainbridge, she joined the Mediterranean squadron of Commander Richard Dale. She made two cruises in this service until 1805 and played a peaceful part on the naval list until the coming of the War of 1812. At that time the eighteen-gun ship *Wasp* was the only American war vessel on a foreign station. A small squadron was assembled at New York under Commodore Rodgers, comprising the *President*, *Hornet* and *Essex*. Captain David Porter had been given command of the *Essex*, and he sailed with this squadron, which was later reinforced by the ships assembled with the pennant of Commodore Decatur.

The *Essex* took several prizes, and fought a fierce single-ship action with H. B. M. ship *Alert* of twenty guns and 100 men, which she captured.

The immortal cruise of the *Essex* under David Porter began when he was ordered to meet Bainbridge's ships, the *Constellation* and *Hornet*, in South American waters. Failing to find the squadron at the rendezvous in the South Atlantic, in April David Porter headed for Cape Horn and the Pacific, in search of British commerce. Early in 1813 he was able to report:

I have completely broke up British navigation in the Pacific; the vessels which have not been captured by me were laid up and dare not venture out. I have afforded the most ample protection to our own vessels which were on my arrival very numerous and unprotected. The valuable whale fishery there is entirely destroyed, and the actual injury we have done them may be estimated at two and a half million dollars independent of the vessels in search of me.

They have furnished me amply with sails, cordage, cables, anchors, provisions, medicines and stores of every description; and the slops on board have furnished clothing for my seamen. I have in fact lived on the enemy since I have been in that sea, every prize having proved a well-found store ship for me.

This author gives a long and very interesting description of the final encounter of the *Essex* with the British squadron, commanded by Captain Hillyer, comprising the frigate *Phoebe* of thirty-six guns, the *Raccoon* and *Cherub*, sloops of war, and a store ship of twenty guns, which he learned was seeking him. After putting his ship in order Captain Porter went in search of the British squadron. In his words: "I had done all the injury that could be done the British commerce in the Pacific, and still hoped to signalize my cruise by something more splendid before leaving that sea." Agreeably to his expectation, the *Phoebe* appeared at Valparaiso shortly after the arrival of the *Essex* at that port. But instead of offering a duel on even terms between the two frigates, the British Commodore brought with him the *Cherub* sloop of war. These two British vessels had a combined force of eighty-one guns and 500 men, as compared with the thirty-six guns and fewer than 300 men of the *Essex*. "Both ships had picked crews," said Captain Porter, "and were sent into the Pacific in company with the *Rac-*



L. CABOT BRIGGS IN DOG SLED AT QUEBEC, CANADA, 1923

(See page 1101)



ARROW POINTS TO RESIDENCE OF DR. AND MRS. L. VERNON BRIGGS, 64 BEACON STREET, BOSTON, BOUGHT IN 1909, BUILT PRIOR TO 1811
(VIEW FROM BOSTON COMMON)

(See Chapter XXVI)

coon of 32 guns and a store ship of 20 guns for the express purpose of seeking the *Essex*. . . .”

A terrible battle ensued, and after being practically shot to pieces the *Essex* was obliged to surrender; of a crew of 255 men who went into action the *Essex* lost in killed, wounded and missing no fewer than 153 officers, seamen and marines, including among the list of “slightly wounded” no less name than that of David G. Farragut, “midshipman,” who was destined to serve his country a full half century longer on the sea before his great chance should come to him on the quarterdeck of the *Hartford* in the Civil War.

“Capt. David Porter had been overmatched, fighting his crippled ship against hopeless odds until his decks were such an appalling scene of slaughter as has been recorded of few naval actions in history. But the Salem-built frigate *Essex* had fulfilled her destiny in a manner to make her nation proud unto this day of the men who sailed and fought her in the harbor of Valparaiso. . . .”

The Cabots of Salem probably had more ships afloat in different parts of the world at one time, on every sea, than any other merchants (see “History of the Cabot Family,” by Briggs).

For two hundred years after the first settlement of Massachusetts the ketch rig was the favorite one for small boats used as coasters and in the West Indian trade, the utility boat, so to speak, seldom making long voyages. This rig practically disappeared as a commercial vessel in the early nineteenth century. It was seldom used for trans-oceanic voyages, but in 1793 Elias Haskett Derby, merchant of Salem who had lately opened his trade with India and China around the Cape of Good Hope, conceived the idea of building small ketch-rigged vessels for this trade. He had Enos Briggs build for him at his yard in South Salem three fine ketches, the *Eliza*, the *John* and *The Brothers*, or *Three Brothers*, all of whom made voyages beyond the Cape of Good Hope. The *Eliza*, 184 tons, built in 1794, made some remarkably swift voyages to Calcutta and the Ile de France. It is said that she crossed the equator seventeen

days out of Salem, and made the entire voyage out and back in seven and a half months, under the command of Capt. Stephen Phillips, who was one of Mr. Derby's most prominent captains. A model of the ketch *Eliza* was made by Capt. H. Percy Ashley of New York, and has been presented to the Peabody Museum of Salem by Stephen W. Phillips, a great-grandson of Captain Stephen, who commanded her for Mr. Derby.

Thacher Magoun, later of Medford, was found an apt pupil in the art of shipbuilding by Enos Briggs. Thacher Magoun was born in Pembroke, Mass., 17 June 1775, and served his time with Mr. Briggs at Salem, where he worked five years. (See "Life of Thacher Magoun," published in 1935.)

Enos Briggs. 2d Lieutenant, Capt. Joseph Soper's co.; enlisted July 14, 1775; service to last of Dec. 1775, 6 mos. 3 days on the sea coast, under direction of field officers of 1st Plymouth Co. regt.; also, 1st Lieutenant, Capt. John Turner Jr's 9th (Marshfield) co. 2d Plymouth Co. regt.; list of officers of Mass. militia; commissioned May 10, 1776.

Enos Briggs. Private, Capt. Freedom Chamberlain's co.; Col. Cary's regt. return dated Cortland's Manor, Nov. 22, 1776. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 504.)

27 March 1782, Enos Briggs of Pembroke gentleman, in consideration of £225 paid by Elisha Briggs of same shipwright, deeds one half part of a farm that he bought of Elezer Taylor. Buildings etc. thereon. Also signed by Sarah Briggs, wife of Enos. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 61, p. 83.)

5 March 1793. Enos Briggs of Salem shipwright, in consideration of £215 paid by Elisha Briggs of Pembroke shipwright, deeds one half of a farm he bought from Elizeas Taylor of same yeoman, housings etc. Also signed by Sarah Briggs, wife of said Enos Briggs. (Vol. 76, p. 158.)

3 April 1793, Enos Briggs of Salem & Sarah his wife, in consideration of £34 paid by Elisha Briggs shipwright, and Alden Briggs, gent. both of Pembroke, deeds land in same. Several parcels once owned by David Standish. (Vol. 76, p. 151.)

Enos⁵ Briggs married 16 Oct. 1777 Sarah Thomas, born in Pembroke 6 Feb. 1755, daughter of Edward and Rachel

(Cushing) Thomas. She died at Salem 9 Dec. 1833. He died at Salem 10 Oct. 1819.

Children of Enos⁵ Briggs and Sarah Thomas:

- i. SALLY, b. 25 Oct. 1778; m. (1) David Smith; (2) John Bott; d. 1856.
- 104. ii. ENOS, b. 25 Mar. 1781; m. Lucy A. Morse.
- 105. iii. SAMUEL, b. 10 Dec. 1783; m. (1) Susan Whittemore; (2) Mary S. Bowles.
- iv. JUDITH, b. 26 Aug. 1786; m. George Deane; d. 1836.
- v. POLLY, b. 1 Mar. 1789; m. Nathan Cook; d. 1834.
- vi. BETSEY, b. 19 Mar. 1792; m. John Burley (Burleigh); d. 1836.

60. SETH⁵ BRIGGS, JR. (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 8 Nov. 1748 in Pembroke; was a shipbuilder at Salem and at Milton, Mass. He died 17 June 1781, at Milton, in his 34th year, and was buried in the Briggs cemetery at North Pembroke.

He married 31 July 1777 Deborah Barker, born 29 Jan. 1753, daughter of Prince and Abigail (Keen) Barker, a descendant of Robert Barker and wife Lucy Williams, whose son Isaac Barker married Judith, daughter of Governor Thomas and Mary (Collier) Prence. Isaac, Jr., father of Prince Barker, was a Quaker, as were many of the third generation of the Barker family. His wife was Elizabeth Slocum. Deborah (Barker) Briggs died 4 Nov. 1800. (Briggs cemetery records.)

Children of Seth⁵ Briggs, Jr., and Deborah Barker:

- 106. i. SETH, 3d, b. 24 May 1778; m. Sarah Colwell Peterson.
- 107. ii. DEBORAH, b. abt. 1780; m. Nehemiah Cushing.

61. ELISHA⁵ BRIGGS (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 21 Dec. 1750; was a shipbuilder, and with his brother Alden Briggs succeeded his father at the Brick Kiln yard. Before 1800 Elisha's son Luther was associated with them, and in two yards at that place they built, sometimes in company, and at others on their own account. (For an account of vessels built by them, see "Shipbuilding on the North River," p. 181.) After

1811 Elisha Briggs removed to Newburyport, where he built several vessels. He died Sept. 1836, aged 86.

He was a soldier in the American Revolution.

Elisha Briggs, Pembroke. Corporal, Capt. Thomas Turner's co. of Minute-men, Col. John Bailey's regt.; pay abstract for mileage dated Jan. 10, 1776; reported encamped with Brig. Gen. Thomas's brigade; *also*, Private Capt. John Turner's co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; marched to Rhode Island Dec. 9, 1776, on an alarm; service, 17 days. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 503.)

Elisha Briggs⁵ lived on Washington Street, North Pembroke, until 1811, in the house now (1936) owned by Bryan Leonard. It was known for many years as the Nathaniel Smith place. This was probably the house mentioned in deeds of 27 Mar. 1782 and 5 Mar. 1783 from Enos Briggs to Elisha Briggs. (See 59. Enos.)

Elisha Briggs married 20 Nov. 1777 Lorentia Hall, born 15 May 1756, daughter of Dr. Jeremiah and Elizabeth (Bailey) Hall of Pembroke, who lived on Washington Street in the house which was afterward the residence of his son-in-law, Horace Collamore, 1821 to 1867, and later Francis Arnold's. Lorentia (Hall) Briggs died June 1837, aged 81.

Children of Elisha⁵ and Lorentia Hall Briggs:

- i. RHODA, b. 4 Mar. 1779; m. Calvin Turner, Jr., and moved to Medford. Calvin Turner was a shipbuilder. His yard in Medford was on Riverside Avenue opposite the end of Cross Street and was afterward the Samuel Lapham yard. He was a most skilful draughtsman, and one of the most faithful builders in New England.
108. ii. ELISHA, b. 20 May 1781; m. (1) Sally Webb; (2) Margaret Doyle.
109. iii. LUTHER, b. 20 Oct. 1783; m. (1) Susanna Stetson; (2) Mercy Magoun.
110. iv. LUCINDA, b. 15 Dec. 1789; m. Alden Loring.
111. v. LAURENTIA, b. 20 Sept. 1792; m. Hon. Horace Collamore.
112. vi. ROBERT, b. 30 July 1795; m. Caroline Morton.
113. vii. LUCRETIA, b. 13 Dec. 1798; m. Dion Bryant.

62. DANIEL⁵ BRIGGS (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 14 Apr. 1754 and learned his trade of shipbuilding with his father at the Brick Kilns. By 1782 he was building in Weymouth, on the Fore River. He lived on the Braintree side of the river, as shown by the following deeds:

Daniel Briggs purchased house and land of Ebenezer White, described as follows, — A certain piece of land in the Township of Braintree, containing by estimation twelve acres, with dwelling house and barn on the same, bounded Southwestwardly by the Plymouth Road (so called) as the fence now stands to Smelt brook; Eastwardly on the Salt Marsh of the heirs of Capt. Thomas White deceased, and Capt. Eliot Loud, and from said Loud's salt marsh to low water mark on Smelt brook round to Manatocot river, so called. Northwardly on said river to low water mark. Westwardly on the land belonging to the heirs of Capt. Thomas White deceased. Consideration paid £186. Dated 4 Nov. 1782. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 136, p. 123. Reg. 3 Dec. 1782.)

Daniel Briggs for £21 17s 1d, purchased a certain piece of pasture land from Ebenezer White of Braintree, containing 5 acres and 16 rods. 30 Oct. 1783. (Lib. 156, p. 203.)

In 1785 he purchased a house and land bordering on the Neponset River in Milton, as shown by the following deed. There he launched two vessels in 1786 and 1788, but in 1789 went to Germantown, Quincy, where he built the *Massachusetts*, which was launched that year; after this he returned to Milton, bought the Foye estate in 1805, and continued shipbuilding at the foot of Milton Hill until 1815.

Amos Holbrook of Milton in consideration of £450, conveys to Daniel Briggs of Braintree, shipbuilder, certain land in Milton containing by estimation 17 acres, bounded Easterly on land of Ebenezer Swift; Northerly on Neponset River; Westerly on land of heirs of Powers Marriot deceased; Southerly on the County Road as the fence now stands, together with dwelling house and other buildings. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 155, p. 204. Recorded 28 Feb. 1786.) [The house was built by Abel Allyne and eventually became a part of the Forbes estate.]

At the time of his death in 1825 he owned the land on the east side of Milton Hill between Adams Street and the foot of the hill.

For account of the many vessels built by Daniel Briggs at Milton, see "Shipbuilding on North River," pages 186-187. In addition to the list there given was the ship *William and Mary*, built in Oct. 1793 for George Lane of Charleston, of white oak timber and plank; also, in Nov. 1799, the brigantine *Minerva*, which was launched on 29 Apr. 1800.

8 Nov. 1785, Daniel Briggs of Braintree shipwright and Jane his wife, in consideration of £56, 5s, 0d paid by Amasa Howard of Bridgewater yeoman, deeds one half of a certain meadow lying in a place called Cowasset Swamp, lyeth with Edward Alger & Joseph Johnson. (Vol. 65, p. 42.)

22 Nov. 1787, Daniel Briggs of Milton shipwright, in consideration of £60 paid by Edward Lothrop of same, yeoman, deeds lands in Bridgewater near Seth Lothrop's land & also near the Old Cedar Swamp, so called. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 68, p. 26.)

Capt. Amasa Delano of Duxbury, who published an account of his voyages, said of the *Massachusetts*:

The master builder of the *Massachusetts* was Daniel Briggs, . . . He was one of the best men I ever knew to keep a large company of men at work, and to make their labor productive. , , , The family of Briggs in Pembroke, Plymouth County, was celebrated for extraordinary merit. There were five brothers. Elisha continued in his native town, an excellent shipbuilder. Alden was brought up as a blacksmith, was remarkable for the talents he showed in the heavy work of a ship, was the mechanic employed for the *Massachusetts* in this department, and afterwards became a merchant. Enos is a shipbuilder at Salem, and built the *Essex* frigate. Daniel united mercantile speculations with shipbuilding, and has lived many years at Milton. Thomas was educated as a shipbuilder, went to sea afterwards as captain, transacted business as a merchant in Boston for many years, and died in Dorchester in 1809, beloved and respected by all who knew him. The five brothers were employed upon the *Massachusetts*. It would not be proper for me to say here all that I

know and feel in praise of this family. . . . The other mechanics were generally from the North River, County of Plymouth, and were faithful in the performance of their duties. The ship was as well built as any ship could be under the circumstances. The timber was cut, and used immediately while perfectly green. It was white oak, and would have been very durable had it been docked, or properly seasoned. Notwithstanding the unprepared state of the materials, the *Massachusetts* was so well built, that on her arrival at Batavia and Canton the commanders of English, Dutch, and other European ships were continually coming on board to examine her and to admire the handsomest vessel in the two ports. ("Delano's Voyages.")

The following deeds and court records tell something of Daniel Briggs' business transactions unconnected with shipbuilding:

Jany 15, 1789. In Senate on petition of John Brigham and sixty four others (among which appear Elisha Briggs & Daniel Briggs) settlers upon a tract of land lying between Bakerstown and Shepardsfield in the County of Cumberland, and praying a grant and confirmation of said land, etc. to their heirs and assigns all the interest title and claim of the Commonwealth to a tract of land in aforesaid County, containing Twenty Thousand Nine Hundred and Fifty Nine acres as surveyed by Samuel Titcomb in Sept. 1787, boundaries given. Reserving four lots of 300 acres each for public use, viz. one for the first settled minister; one for the use of the Ministry; one for the use of schools within said tract; and one for the future appropriation of the General Court to be laid out near the centre of said tract, and to average in goodness with the other lots. The grantees to pay or cause to be paid two shillings and ninepence in specie for each acre contained in tract excepting reserved lands. (Conditions given.) Read and concurred in House of Representatives, and approved by the Governor. (Court Records, Vol. 48, p. 394.)

List of Settlers on Disclaimed Lands

No. 2 Settlers in Poland Cumberland County 9 Feb. 1798:

Daniel Briggs 200 acres	. . . .	value \$325
William Briggs 85 acres	. . . .	value \$140
Wm. Briggs Jr. 100 acres	. . . .	value \$133.33

(Vol. 52, p. 444.)

Daniel Briggs purchased the Foye estate 24 Sept. 1805 from John Gardner, who had married Mary Cooper, a granddaughter of Mrs. Foye. It was a large, old English mansion, one of the finest in the colony, and was built in 1734. This site on Adams Street, Milton Hill, was a noted spot. In the first house on the site, Catherine Greenaway, wife of William Daniels, used to gather the Indians living on the hill and in other parts of the town for their enlightenment and instruction. She continued this for three years, from 1650 to 1653, when the attention of authorities was drawn to her undertaking, and the Commissioners of the United Colonies allowed her £12 for the endeavor, and another £3 towards another year to encourage her to continue the same course.

The builder of the later house, William Foye, was Provincial Treasurer, and his mother was a sister of Gov. Jonathan Belcher. The deed of the Daniels estate to Foye is recorded with Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 45, Nov. 1733.

Daniel Briggs died in 1825, and his heirs sold the estate in 1829 to Samuel Littlefield, who had occupied it from 1824. After the death of his daughter in 1877 it was sold, and the house taken down in 1879. The residence built by Theodore R. Glover stands on the site (1936). (A picture of the house is to be found on page 116 of the "History of Milton.")

Daniel Briggs served in the Revolutionary War and in the War of 1812.

Daniel Briggs, Pembroke. Corporal, Capt. Joseph Soper's co.; enlisted July 17, 1775; roll made up to last of Dec. 1775; service, 6 mos., on the sea coast, under direction of field officers of 1st Plymouth Co. regt.; *also*, Capt. Freedom Chamberlain's co.; marched on an alarm at the taking of Dorchester Heights March 5, 1776; service, 5 days; *also*, Sergeant, Capt. John Turner's co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; enlisted Sept. 21, 1776; service, 2 mos. at Rhode Island.

Daniel Briggs. Private, Capt. Hayward Peirce's co., Col. John Cushing's (2d Plymouth Co.) regt.; service, 11 days, in Dec. 1776, on an alarm; marched to Bristol, R. I. Roll dated Scituate. ("Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors," Vol. II, p. 500.)

In the *War of 1812*, Daniel Briggs was a Lieutenant in Capt. John Lillie's Milton Company; ordered to march to Cohasset, where enemy's troops were expected to land. They marched as far as Hingham, and there learned that their services were not needed.

He was known as Capt. Daniel Briggs, and the "History of Milton" says of him: "Capt. Briggs is described as a man of large frame, stately and commanding in person, also genial and benevolent in like degree He was a useful and excellent citizen, honored and respected by all."

Daniel Briggs married, first, 1782 Jane Lothrop, born 1765, and died 1791. He married, second, 1797 Alice (Street) Tisdale, born 1766, and died 1806, aged 40. He married, 3d, 1813 Elizabeth Charnock, who died 1823. Daniel Briggs died in Milton 11 Aug. 1825.

Children of Daniel Briggs and Jane Lothrop:

- i. NABBY LOTHROP, b. 1783; m. 1807, Thomas Oakes; d. 1817.
- ii. JANE (Jennie), b. 1785; d. 1863; m. Capt. Nathaniel Thomas from Pembroke, who was commander of the *Kenawah* and of the *Milton*, both built by his father-in-law at Milton. In 1889 the *Milton*, then a New Bedford whaler, was still afloat. They lived in the Daniel Briggs house on Milton Hill.
- iii. SOPHIA, b. 1787; d. 1796.
- iv. DANIEL, b. 1789; d. 1814.
- v. MARTIN, b. 1791; d. 1803.

Children of Daniel Briggs and Alice (Street) Tisdale:

- vi. THOMAS STREET, b. 1798; d. 1875; m. 1829, Hester E. G. Pierce. In 1830 he built a house on the site of the later house of Capt. O. W. Peabody on Milton Hill.
- vii. BENJAMIN CHURCH, b. 1799; d. 1825.
- viii. ALICE COPELAND, b. 1802; m. 1833 Capt. Charles Taylor. She d. East Milton in 1888, ae. 86.
- ix. MARTIN, b. 1804; m. Julia Nefres.
- x. SOPHIA SUSANNA BLAKE, b. 1806; d. 1823.

63. ABIGAIL⁵ BRIGGS (36. Seth⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born 1 July 1756 in Pembroke. She married

29 Nov. 1787 her cousin William⁵ Briggs, Jr. (40. William⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹), who died about 1812, and she married, second, — Sproat. She died 3 Dec. 1815. (See 71. William⁵ Briggs, Jr.)

64. THOMAS⁵ BRIGGS (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 22 Aug. 1758. He learned his trade as a shipbuilder in his father's yard at the Brick Kilns, and in 1789 was a shipwright at Braintree, probably with his brother 62. Daniel Briggs. He afterwards went to sea as a captain, but left the sea and became a merchant in Boston, conducting a business there for many years. He lived in Dorchester, where he died in 1809 "beloved and respected by all who knew him."

Joseph Peakes of Weymouth in the County of Suffolk & State of Massachusetts in New England, Blacksmith, in Consideration of £18 6s 9d paid by Thomas & William Briggs of Braintree, Shipwrights, conveys to them a certain piece of land lying in the North Precinct of Weymouth, containing about two and one half acres, with dwelling house and barn, bounded northward and eastward on land of Asa White; southerly on the County Road; westerly on land of the heirs of Caleb Loud deceased. Dated 27 Feb. 1787. (Mortgage deed, discharged as below.) (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 161, p. 207. Reg. Nov. 27, 1787.)

William Briggs & Thomas Briggs of Braintree, Shipwrights, in consideration of £20 paid by Joseph Peakes of Weymouth, Blacksmith, conveys to him a piece of land in the North Precinct of Weymouth, containing about three acres, boundaries as above, with house and barn, being the house in which Joseph Peakes now lives. Dated 24 Feb. 1789. Signed by Thomas Briggs, William Briggs and Nabby Briggs, wife of William. (Suffolk Deeds, Lib. 164, p. 258. Reg. 1 April 1789.)

Thomas Briggs of Roxbury, Alden Briggs of Pembroke (his brother) and others were the owners of the ship *Canowa*, built at the Brick Kiln yard in Pembroke by Elisha Briggs, brother of Thomas and Alden, in 1805.

Thomas Briggs married in 1795 Susanna Blake of Dorchester. They had no children.



BARK "AMY TURNER" IN A GALE OFF CAPE HORN, OCTOBER, 1880
THE SHIP ON WHICH L. VERNON BRIGGS SAILED AROUND CAPE HORN TO HONOLULU IN 1880

65. ALDEN⁵ BRIGGS (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 17 Mar. 1763. (Pembroke Vital Records.) (Family Bible says 14 Mar.) He was a farmer, a shipbuilder and an expert iron worker, and as such was especially in demand by his brothers Enos and Daniel at Salem and Milton. He built vessels at the Brick Kiln yard, at first in company with his brother Elisha, who later removed to Newburyport. Alden then conducted building at the Brick Kiln yard for himself, when not employed by his brothers elsewhere, and built in company with others at the yard in Pembroke as late as 1832. He was then getting on in years, and probably gave up active business about this time, although even later he was a large owner in many vessels built on the river. Besides carrying on his farm, he established a brick yard, getting the clay from huge pits back of his house on Brick Kiln Lane near the shipyard.

He was an interesting man, and some amusing incidents are told of him. One of his peculiarities was that of adding compound interest, from year to year, to the original cost of his possessions, so that, instead of depreciating, their value became increased. By this reckoning, he valued his watch at one time at over \$2,000, and his anvil at about \$1,500.

Enos Briggs of Salem & Sarah his wife in consideration of £34 paid by Elisha Briggs shipwright & Alden Briggs gent. both of Pembroke, deed land in same. Several pareels once owned by David Standish. April 3, 1793. (Plymouth Co. Deeds, Vol. 76, p. 151.)

Alden Briggs of Pembroke shipwright, deeds fresh meadow in same at Booth's Landing. Also signed by Marcy Briggs, wife of Alden. Jan. 18, 1797. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 81, p. 178.)

Levi Mann, Ezra Briggs Jr. both of Hanover yeomen, in consideration of \$90 paid by Alden Briggs of Pembroke gentleman, deed a piece of meadow at the Brickils landing Place in Scituate bought of Joshua Barstow. Also signed by wives of grantors Patience S. Mann & Lydia Briggs. Jan. 30, 1798. (Plym. Co. Deeds, Vol. 84, p. 103.)

Alden Briggs married 9 Oct. 1788 Mercy Hatch, born in Pembroke 14 Dec. 1761. (Pembroke Vital Records.) The family Bible, which is probably correct, gives the date of her birth as 14 Dec. 1762, while the cemetery records say 1763. She died 20 June 1843. Alden Briggs died May 1849 (cemetery records).

Children of Alden⁵ Briggs and Mercy Hatch (Pembroke Vital Records):

- i. SOPHIA⁶, b. 22 Aug. 1789; d. 2 Apr. 1820, ae. 30.
- ii. ALDEN, b. 15 Oct. 1792; d. 4 Oct. 1794.
- iii. HARRIOT, b. 5 July 1795; d. 28 Mar. 1796.
- 114. iv. ALDEN, b. 20 Feb. 1797; m. Elizabeth Crosby Robinson; d. 30 Apr. 1861.
- v. CLEMENT, b. 21 Dec. 1799; d. 6 Jan. 1800.
- 115. vi. HARRIOT, b. 3 Oct. 1801; m. (1) William Thacher of Boston; (2) James H. Whitman. She d. 23 Aug. 1886.
- 116. vii. THOMAS, b. 24 Nov. 1803; m. Eliza Ann Sturtevant; d. 1 Oct. 1876.

66. JUDITH⁵ BRIGGS (36. *Seth*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Pembroke 7 May 1765. She married, first, 7 Oct. 1792 Capt. Clement Drew of Kingston, who was born in Kingston 6 Mar. 1763, son of James Drew of Kingston and his wife, Deborah Nye of Dartmouth. Capt. Clement Drew was a master mariner. He died 6 Nov. 1798. His widow, Judith (Briggs) Drew, married, second, 1800 William ("Bill") Vose of Boston, earlier of Milton. "Bill" Vose owned a wharf in Boston on the site of the present South Station, and his house was opposite the wharf, on what was then Sea Street, now Atlantic Avenue. Bill Vose died in 1828 insolvent. (For record of administration of his estate, see Suffolk Probate Records 28660.)

Judith (Briggs) Vose died in May 1829. Seth Briggs Vose was administrator of her estate. (See Suffolk Probate Records 29020.)

Children of Judith Briggs and Capt. Clement Drew:

- i. JAMES DREW, b. 24 July 1793 in Pembroke; d. before 1829.

- ii. SABA DREW, b. 6 Mar. 1796; m. 1826 Capt. Joshua Smith, son of Joseph and Bathsheba (Torrey) Smith of Hanson. After the death of her mother, Captain Smith and his wife removed from Boston to Hanson.
- iii. ABIGAIL CHURCH DREW, b. 2 May 1798; d. 8 Feb. 1799.

Children of Judith Briggs and William Vose:

- iv. SETH BRIGGS VOSE, b. abt. 1802/3; was, like his father, a wharfinger.
- v. SARAH R. VOSE, m. William H. Cunningham before 1829.

67. CORNELIUS⁵ BRIGGS (39. *Cornelius*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 5 Oct. 1757. His wife was Mary Lovell. They had a daughter Mary Briggs, born in 1800, who married in 1820 Charles H. Houghton. James Franklin Houghton, son of Charles H. and Mary (Briggs) Houghton, married Caroline Sparhawk, and they had a daughter, Fennie Briggs Houghton, who married George Gardner Bulkley (elsewhere given Morgan Gardner Bulkley) of Hartford, Conn.

68. JERUSHA⁵ BRIGGS (39. *Cornelius*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 29 June 1764 in Scituate; married 13 June 1784 Samuel Nash; baptized in Second Church, Scituate, 23 July 1757, son of Simeon and Lydia (Church) Nash.

Simeon Nash was a soldier in the French War, and died at Ticonderoga in 1759 of smallpox. He was the tenth child of Joseph Nash, who settled at Stony Cove Brook in 1700, and married Hannah Curtis, daughter of John (son of Richard) and Miriam (Brooks) Curtis. Miriam Brooks' mother, was widow Susanna Dunham, a niece of Timothy Hatherley, as shown by his will.

Samuel Nash was a housewright, and resided in Hanover. Deane says that he afterward removed to Worcester.

Dec. 26, 1791. Samuel Nash of Hanover housewright, and Jerusha his wife in her right, & Mary Briggs of Scituate spinster, in consideration of £100 paid by Noah Nichols of latter place,

deed land in same with a dwelling house thereon, near land of Judge Cushing & Jesse Turner. (Plymouth County Deeds, Vol. 72, p. 73.)

Mary Briggs⁵ was the eldest child of Cornelius and Jerusha Church, and a sister of Jerusha Nash.⁵ The property may have been the homestead of their father 39. Cornelius. Noah Nichols lived above Hobart's Landing, where Elmer E. Carr now (1936) resides. Judge William Cushing and Jesse Turner had meadowland near by.

Child of Jerusha⁵ Briggs and Samuel Nash:

- i. —NASH, born 1787 (infant dau.); d. 30 Mar. 1789, aged 18 months; "Tho't to be consumption."

69. RACHEL⁵ BRIGGS (40. *William*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born in Scituate 19 Aug. 1755; married 25 Oct. 1781 Asa Copeland of Norton, born 8 May 1752 and died 14 Dec. 1829 in Norton, in his 78th year. He was a son of Benjamin and Sarah Copeland, and probably a descendant of Lawrence Copeland, an early settler in Braintree.

Rachel (Briggs) Copeland died in Norton 23 Dec. 1800 in her 46th year.

Children of Rachel⁵ Briggs and Asa Copeland:

- i. ASA⁶ COPELAND (Assa), b. 21 Sept. 1782; m. Abigail Newcomb 1801.
- ii. JOSEPH COPELAND, b. 29 July 1784; m. Betsey Britton of Raynham.
- iii. LEMUEL COPELAND, b. 14 Aug. 1786.
- iv. THOMAS COPELAND, b. 9 June 1789; m. Eliza Hodges, 1821.
- v. DAVID COPELAND, b. 25 Dec. 1792; d. 1798.
- vi. ELIZABETH COPELAND, b. 5 Feb. 1794; m. William Rich of Enfield 1816.
- vii. RACHEL COPELAND, b. 2 Apr. 1796.
- viii. SARAH COPELAND, b. 14 Nov. 1798; m. Samuel King Hart of Brewer, Me., 1819.

70. RUTH⁵ BRIGGS (40. *William*⁴, *James*³, *Cornelius*², *Walter*¹) was born 13 Aug. 1757 in Scituate; married

13 Nov. 1796 William Cushing of Pembroke, born 2 Oct. 1751, a son of Nehemiah and Sarah (Humphreys) Cushing. She was William Cushing's second wife, his first having been Abigail Turner, daughter of John, Esq., and Abigail ——. They were married in 1777, their son William Cushing, born in 1780, went away from home, and was never heard from again.

Nehemiah Cushing, grandfather of William, was born in Hingham in 1689, the eldest son of Theophilus Cushing. He married Sarah, daughter of Nathaniel Nichols, who, in 1714, moved to Pembroke, and bought from Samuel Barker the estate afterwards of the late Edwin P. Litchfield. Nehemiah Cushing soon followed. He built and operated a tannery near the brook, dealt largely in real estate, and served his adopted town in many public offices: as Representative in 1720 and 1721; treasurer, 1719–38; selectman, 1734–38; and moderator from 1734 to 1755.

As Capt. Nehemiah Cushing he commanded Pembroke's military company for many years. Nehemiah Cushing, Jr., the father of William, *was in the French War*, and died "in his Majesty's service, at Crown Point" 12 Jan. 1762, leaving wife, Sarah Humphreys, and several small children to the care of their grandfather, Captain Nehemiah.

William Cushing was a shipwright, and after 1805 built vessels in Hanover in company with Calvin Turner, Jr., who later went to Medford. He was spoken of as William Cushing, "gentleman," and lived in an old house, now demolished, which stood on Washington Street, North Pembroke, near the corner of Church Street. Ruth (Briggs) Cushing survived her husband and died in South Scituate (Church Hill) 30 Apr. 1852, aged 94 years, at the home of Major Elias Pratt, whose wife was Ruth Briggs, a niece of Mrs. Ruth (Briggs) Cushing.

71. WILLIAM⁵ BRIGGS (40. William⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born 15 May 1760 in Scituate; married 29 Nov. 1787 a Nabby⁵ Briggs (63. Abigail), born 1 July 1756, daughter of 36. Seth.

In 1789 they resided in Braintree, and later in Milton.

He died before 1800, and his widow married, second, — Sproat. She died 3 Dec. 1815. (See 63. Abigail⁵ Briggs.)

Son of William⁵ Briggs, Jr., and Nabby⁵ Briggs:

117. i. GEORGE⁶, b. 1794; m. Hannah Perkins.

72. CHARLES⁵ BRIGGS (40. William⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born 8 Feb. 1773 in Scituate, lived in Pembroke, and married 7 June 1795 Elizabeth Smith, born in Pembroke 9 May 1771, daughter of Josiah and Mary (Barker) Smith, and granddaughter of Rev. Thomas Smith, pastor of the First Church of Pembroke from 1754 to 1788. She died 16 Nov. 1798 in Pembroke.

Children of Charles⁵ Briggs and Elizabeth Smith:

i. JOSIAH⁶, b. 14 Nov. 1795; went to Illinois and married, but his sister never heard from him after that time.

118. ii. RUTH, b. 14 July 1797; m. Maj. Elias W. Pratt.

73. ELIJAH⁵ BRIGGS (40. William⁴, James³, Cornelius², Walter¹) was born 17 July 1762 in Scituate; was a shipbuilder, and lived for a few years after his marriage in Scituate, where he had purchased a house. After about seven years' residence in Scituate he removed to Salem, and after the death of his cousin, Enos Briggs (59), he took over the latter's shipyard at South Salem, and built several vessels there. (For account of his vessels, see Historical Collection, Essex Institute, Vol. 6, pp. 174–175.)

Elijah Briggs married 6 Aug. 1789 Hannah Buffington, born in Salem 30 Jan. 1767, daughter of James and Prudence (Proctor) Buffington of Salem. She was baptized in the Second Church of Scituate (First Church, Norwell) in 1796, and died in Salem 29 May 1847. Elijah Briggs died in Salem 24 Aug. 1838.

Children of Elijah⁵ Briggs and Hannah Buffington:

i. JAMES BUFFINGTON⁶, b. Scituate; bpt. Second Church 4 Sept. 1796; m. Mary Hosmer.

ii. WILLIAM, b. Scituate.

iii. ELIZABETH, b. Scituate; bpt. Second Church 1796; m. Richard Wheatland.

